

**SEEKING SOCIAL GOOD:
A LIFE
WORTH LIVING**

An Autobiography in 6 Volumes



JOHN LAWRENCE

Volume 2

**A CAREER
UNDER WAY**

A CAREER UNDER WAY

A CAREER UNDER WAY

Volume 2 of an Autobiography

JOHN LAWRENCE

SEEKING SOCIAL GOOD: A LIFE WORTH LIVING

An Autobiography in 6 Volumes

- Vol. 1 Getting Educated
- Vol. 2 A Career Under Way
- Vol. 3 Working in Australia
- Vol. 4 Living and Working Overseas
- Vol. 5 Working with International Organisations
- Vol. 6 Disengaging from Work and Later Life

First published 2017

Copyright © 2017 John Lawrence. All rights reserved

Published by John Lawrence

This ebook is copyright. Apart from fair dealing for the purpose of private study, research, criticism or review, or under Copyright Agency Ltd rules of recording, no part may be reproduced by any means without the written consent of the author.

ISBN 978-0-9953948-7-2

Cover photograph: John Lawrence

Cover and text design: Paul Taylder – Xigrafix Media and Design

Index: Caroline Colton – Indexat

National Library of Australia Cataloguing-in-Publication entry (ebook):

Creator: Lawrence, R. J. (Robert John), 1931– author.

Title: Seeking Social Good: A Life Worth Living. Volume 2. A Career Under Way / John Lawrence.

ISBN: 9780995394872 (ebook: volume 2)

Notes: Includes index.

Subjects: Lawrence, R. J. (Robert John), 1931–
Social workers—Australia—Biography.
Social work—Australia—History.
Social work education—Australia.
Social work education—United States.
Social policy.
Social sciences—Philosophy.
Community organization—Australia.
Australian National University. History Department.
University of Sydney. Social Work Department.

*Dedicated to all who seek and achieve social good,
and to Trish and the many others who
have made my own life worthwhile.*

Comments on the Autobiography

'A monumental achievement! Not only the effort put into pulling it all together now, but the meticulous record keeping throughout the years that it reflects, is just so impressive. This is an extraordinary record of a life, a life certainly worth living, and an invaluable resource for the social work profession and for a morally grounded social policy perspective.'

Bruce Lagay (former Prof. Fellow & former Head, Social Work Dept., Univ. of Melb.; former Assoc. Dean, Rutgers Univ., and Dean, Syracuse Univ., Schools of Social Work, USA)

'This personal and professional record is testament to the necessity of considering the interactions of someone's personal background, formative and institutional influences and exposure to educative and attitude shaping experiences, if a rounded picture is to be gained of what they stand for and why. The author's constant engagement with history and ethics, not as side issues but disciplines that are of great importance to social work, is evident from Seeking Social Good. It is my fervent hope that others will readily gain access to this work and learn from it, as I have.'

Tony Vinson (Em. Prof. of Social Work, former Head of School, UNSW; former Head, NSW Corrective Services; social scientist, prominent public intellectual)

'I thoroughly enjoyed reading this autobiography, which I think is a really significant work. The author had a wonderful opportunity to shape the direction of social work education in Australia, and internationally and seized the opportunity. So many different groups of people will be interested in this work – historians of the twentieth century, people interested in Australian academic life, anyone researching the history of the University of New South Wales, social work historians of course, whether interested in Australia, the USA or Europe, the many people interested in the Whitlam era and social scientists or historians interested in the development of the teaching of social policy.'

Jane Miller (social work historian; former Head, Social Work Dept., Royal Children's Hospital; AASW Life Member; President, Melb. Univ. Social Work Alumni)

Comments to the Author about his history of the SWRC/SPRC

'Your history of the SWRC/SPRC is, it goes without saying, well and thoroughly researched, clearly and expressively written, and passionately argued! I thought you handled one of the trickiest aspects – your own centrality in the story – with excellent taste and balance. There is, overall, a rich appreciation of the leadership and working researchers without losing sight of the larger argument you want to make.'

Sheila Shaver (former Deputy Director, SPRC; later - Pro-Vice-Chancellor (Res.), Univ. of Western Sydney; Conjoint Professor, SPRC)

'You tell the story well, and there is a great deal of scholarship and perception in the way you assemble and analyse the material. It is an excellent and worthwhile read.'

Adam Graycar (1st Director, SWRC; later - Head, Ausn. Institute of Criminology; Head; Cabinet Office, S.A. Govt.; Prof. of Public Policy & Director, Res. School of Social Sciences, ANU)

Contents

Preface	1
Chapter 1 Starting a Professional Career and a Family	9
Chapter 2 Researching Australian Social Work History	45
Chapter 3 Completing the Research Project	127
Chapter 4 Living and Working in Sydney	187
Chapter 5 A Year to Remember	281
Index	377

Preface

This preface provides a bridge from the first volume which takes the story up to my return to Australia from abroad in August, 1956. It will serve both as a summary of some of the main features in that account, and as a starting point for the current volume.

Both of my parents came from families that had migrated from Britain in the nineteenth century and had settled in Victoria. My mother, Lucy Butlin, was born in the Gippsland town of Warragul in 1903, and my father, Robert Lawrence, in South Melbourne in 1902. Lucy's family shifted to South Melbourne after the death of her musical father in 1912. My parents first met in primary school in South Melbourne. After schooling at Melbourne High School, my mother taught at her former primary school, but was then expected to teach in the country for a period. Because she wanted to stay in Melbourne to pursue her singing career, she took a job in the Melbourne office of the National Trustees who dealt with deceased estates, and worked there until her marriage in 1928. My father was sent off to a business college, rather than Caulfield Grammar, because he was so fond of sport. The college qualified him for entry into the Commonwealth Public Service. He joined the Post Office in Sydney, but hankered after the Australian Rules football in Melbourne. In 1919, he returned to Melbourne to join the Commonwealth Bank, which became his life-long employer – and to play good quality football. In 1921 and again in 1925, he played a few games with the senior South Melbourne football team, and in 1926 had a few games with Melbourne, the VFL premiers that year.

My parents became good friends in about 1922. My father was transferred by the Commonwealth Bank to Mount Gambier early in 1927. My parents were engaged in March, 1927, and were married about a year later when my mother joined my father to live in Mount Gambier. My father's banking and his sporting activities – in cricket as well as football, and my mother's musical interests, helped them to be well integrated into the Mount Gambier and surrounding community. They lived there happily despite the recession until moving to Adelaide at the beginning of 1935, with two young sons – my brother Jim, born in 1930, and me, born in 1931.

From 1935 to 1942, we lived in a rented house at Glen Avenue, Unley Park, a southern suburb of Adelaide. In 1937, my sister Margaret was born,

completing the family. From 1943, we moved to a purchased home at Sussex Terrace, Westbourne Park, a couple miles further south, but still within walking distance for my last year of primary schooling at Westbourne Park School. My brother excelled at this school and won an open scholarship to St Peter's College, a very well-endowed Anglican private school, which celebrated its centenary in 1947. From a very early age, Jim had decided he wanted to be a doctor. He did very well at St Peter's both academically and in sport. In 1948, he began his medical course at the University of Adelaide on a government bursary.

I was unable to gain entry to St Peter's in my first-year of secondary schooling in 1944, and was very lucky to be admitted in the second-year. I was the only new boy in the class, but was quickly accepted because I was good at sport – football, athletics and cricket, and also had reasonable academic results at the Unley High School, the local high school which I had attended. My experience at St Peter's from 1945 to 1949, was obviously formative for me and especially the later years when I represented the school in football, cricket and athletics, and was captain of the school's football team; was a prefect and then captain of the school in 1949; and played the organ for the school chapel services once a week. My school reports continued to please my parents and they were very happy with their experience of the school. My academic results were generally satisfactory without being outstanding. I was therefore agreeably surprised when I topped the state in ancient history in 1948, and in my final year topped the state in modern history, came second in ancient history, and was placed sixth in the state in the general honours list for Leaving Honours, giving me a bursary to the university.

In my final year at school, I still had no idea of where I should be heading vocationally. By extreme good fortune, I then received invaluable professional vocational guidance from Trevor Jones, who had joined the School staff full-time in 1947, a pioneering development in a private school achieved by the headmaster Colin Gordon. In a prescient report to the headmaster, he said my educational achievements, mental abilities and natural inclinations pointed to a career in the field of 'human technology'. Combining an arts degree and a diploma in social science in four years, or five years if I did an honours arts degree, would open four avenues of employment – careers open to arts degree graduates, social work, personnel work in industry, and psychological practice. Colin Gordon, who knew me well, endorsed the report, observing that I must follow my bent towards dealing with human beings, and that my particular interest and the vocational future would become clearer while I was at the University. The example, support, encouragement and interest of this impressive headmaster was clearly a shaping influence in my life.

At the University of Adelaide, I managed to complete in four years, 1950–53, an honours arts degree, majoring in history and political science, and a diploma in social science, a social work qualification. The latter required 160 days of practical work. I had four placements, each under the supervision of a qualified social worker – at the Australian Red Cross Society, the State Children's Welfare and Public Relief Department, the Catholic Welfare Bureau and the Repatriation General Hospital. In addition, my work in a small CMF Psychology Unit, headed by Trevor Jones, was also counted, and served as my

'national service'. In my first year at the University, I enjoyed further organ lessons at the Conservatorium, with the irrepressible John Horner whom my mother knew well from her singing activities.

My keen interest in sport continued – in the summer playing cricket for university teams in C and then B grades, and in the winter playing my especially beloved football in the University's A grade team in the South Australian Amateur Football League. I was chosen in the SAAFL state team three times, 1951–53, and received my university blue for football in 1952. We had a particularly strong University team in my four years with them, reaching the finals each year, and winning in 1951 and 1952. Also we beat Melbourne University in the intervarsity competition in 1952, the year I was secretary of the Club.

Early in 1950, I began a deep abiding relationship with Patricia Berry. Both of her parents came from pioneering colonial families in South Australia. Her father, Dean Berry, was a prominent architect and citizen. The Berrys lived at Wingfield which had been the historical Barker family home. Trish Berry completed a science degree in maths and physics in 1951. For six months in 1952, the Berry family went by ship and toured in Britain and Europe. Trish and I tried to cope with the separation by a detailed, intensive correspondence. She was keen to share with me her travel experiences and hoped it might be possible for us to go to Britain and Europe together. She had had a most enthusiastic reaction to Oxford and wrote in June, 'You really must do all you can to get a Rhodes and come here. It is far too good to be missed ... perhaps I could come over here again and work.'

1952 proved to be a pivotal year for my future. From only passing grades in first year, I lifted to credits in second year, and to top credits in 1952, my third year, and was selected as the 1953 South Australian Rhodes scholar. Early in 1952, Colin Gordon had told me I must apply for the Rhodes Scholarship, and before going on leave to Britain had left a reference with the greatly admired acting headmaster Mr Cameron, who said it was a 'humdinger'. I still, however, had a year of honours work to complete before going to Oxford. The honours year under Douglas Pike in history (he also supervised my thesis on Australia-wide old-age pensions), and Professor W. G. K. Duncan in political theory, earned me a first-class degree. Douglas Pike in particular was a stimulating university teacher with an unusual background and interest in the Asian and Pacific countries, and later was the foundation editor of the Australian Dictionary of Biography at the Australian National University. The early 1950s was a time of much-needed reform at the University of Adelaide under the controversial vice-chancellor A. P. Rowe and I benefited from this in my subjects for the arts degree.

In the subjects for the social science diploma, an excessive burden was still being carried by just the one person, Amy Wheaton. She was approaching her retirement and her course was being threatened by unsympathetic, young professors appointed by Rowe. Yet many years before, she had been recognised as an exceptionally able scholar by the remarkable Professor William Mitchell, who had dominated the University's life for so long; she had had extensive pre-war overseas experience in Europe and particularly in the social sciences at the London School of Economics; and she had pioneered social work education from its inception in South Australia. Her lectures to us in

sociology and in social psychology were remarkable for that time in Australia. For me they made me aware that these disciplines in the social sciences were still struggling to get any university recognition in Australia and also at the traditional universities of Britain. Because of her sociological understanding, she saw social work not just at the individual casework level, but also at the community and societal levels.

Well ahead of her time, Mrs Wheaton had combined having a husband and a family, and a notable professional career. She was delighted by my academic success at the University of Adelaide and hoped that on her retirement, I might succeed her as head of the social work school which by then might have a social work degree program. While at Oxford, she was to raise this with me as a possibility, but the timing for me was much too soon even if I were interested, and in any case her plans for a degree course were not eventuating. I had rather mixed feelings about Mrs Wheaton as a person, but came to see the potential importance and relevance of much of her academic and social concerns for my emerging vocational life.

In July 1953, Trish Berry and I were engaged, but we would have to wait for three years before we could be married, because the rules of the Rhodes Scholarship at that time precluded it. Trish left her job at the Long-Range Weapons Establishment and came to England with me on the *Orontes* in December, 1953. I had a free return passage under a university scheme just reintroduced after the war by the Australian and New Zealand Passenger Conference. It was my first experience of sea travel and of getting a glimpse of a few other countries. We were most fortunate that Johnny and Helen Thwaites who were on the ship were also headed for Oxford and they suggested Trish might like to share a flat with them there. I knew Johnny from intervarsity football. He was going to spend a couple of years at the Dragon School, before returning to teach history at Melbourne Grammar. Trish's Aunt, Margaret Berry, was in the British army. She took leave, so she could meet us, take us to Oxford and help Trish to settle in at a well-located flat in Walton Street with the Thwaites.

I entered Magdalen College on 14 January, but even though I had come up a term late, very quickly settled into college life. After helpful discussions with various people, I decided to read PPE (philosophy, politics and economics), rather than tackle a post-graduate qualification studying politics. I was well-advised that I would get far more from doing this since the university was still basically an undergraduate university, with the traditional weekly tutorial system as its main educational vehicle. Additional to the six required papers, two in each of the three subject areas, I could choose a couple of electives which concentrated on particular areas of interest. Also, I could attend whatever university lecture series were of interest or especially recommended by my tutors. When the time came, I chose as my electives British social and economic history from 1760, and the political structure of the British Commonwealth.

The academic year at Oxford was only three eight-week terms, with extensive reading being expected in non-term time.

Magdalen had impressive tutors in PPE in that period – the senior tutor Harry Weldon (philosophy), Ken Tite (politics), and David Worswick (economics). Although I also had two or three other tutors at different times,

my tutorial teaching was mainly in the hands of this triumvirate. Writing two essays a week for men of this intellectual quality was a continuing challenge, particularly when there were many other claims on one's time. I, in fact, enjoyed their company as well as their teaching. Ken Tite and his family actually became good friends of Trish and me. Ken shared my interests in cricket, photography and music. The College president, Tom Boase, took a genuine interest in the members of the College and had us to dinner a number of times.

Bill Williams, the warden of Rhodes House, had a distinguished war record in intelligence work with General Montgomery. Early in each term, he would see each Rhodes scholar to review his progress. Rhodes House was the venue of regular social functions for Rhodes scholars and special friends like Trish, providing a great meeting place for people of a wide variety of backgrounds at the dinners, the dances and the beer-parties. It also had an excellent relevant library for my elective on the British Commonwealth, and my tutorials with Dr Madden for that subject were held at Rhodes House. The often interesting meetings of the Raleigh Club, whose object was to discuss the politics of the British Commonwealth, were held at Rhodes House. I was nominated by South Australians Robin Ashwin and Jim Forbes for membership of this Club of 36 undergraduates representative of the British Commonwealth and some more senior members. In 1955, I served as its secretary and then its president.

I lived in Magdalen College during term-time for my first five terms, but then moved to digs in Beech Croft Road in North Oxford for my final three terms, starting after the summer break in 1955. Trish had a room in the same digs. She had moved there in April, after Helen Thwaites was expecting a child. During the first Easter vacation of six weeks in 1954, we went to Cornwall to stay with the Richards and the Tancock families, relatives of Mrs Berry, and then through the Dominions Fellowship Trust stayed in two English homes. The Ackers family lived in Huntley Manor near Gloucester, and Mrs Townsend Rose lived on the edge of the New Forest in Hampshire.

For about 10 weeks of our summer vacation of 1954, sometimes in very wet weather, we toured Europe in a 1936 Morris 12, covering just over 5,000 miles. We started in Bergen in Norway, drove all the way south to Rome, and returned north along the Italian and French Rivas, then up the Rhone valley and on to Paris for a week, before returning to England. I kept a daily diary, sending copies of it back to the family in Adelaide so they could get some appreciation of what we were seeing. We stayed in youth hostels wherever we could, and any other cheap accommodation we could find. Trish's grandmother, NanNan Barker had not only provided us with the money to buy a fairly reliable second-hand car, but also had given us tinned food to take in the car. My tutors were enthusiastic about our 'grand tour', and genuinely enjoyed hearing about our travels and seeing our coloured slides. I had bought my first camera in Germany, beginning my lifetime interest in good photography.

From September 1954 until June 1956, Trish very successfully taught maths at Tudor Hall School, a private girls' school near Banbury, reasonably accessible from Oxford by train. In the Christmas break of 1954, the Dominions Fellowship Trust again organised for us to stay with an English family – the Theobalds near Westerham in Kent. This was followed by a stay with the Civils

near Farnborough. These were my relatives who had been helpful to us ever since we had arrived in England. During the easter break in 1955, we revisited the Tancocks and the Richards in Cornwall, receiving yet another warm welcome. In the summer of 1955, I was given permission to continue to live in College until about the third week in July, when Trish was on holiday and we could again take to the road for about a month. We travelled north to Scotland, staying with friends on the way. In Scotland in wonderful weather, we travelled to the far north, then back along the remote west coast, down through the Lake District, into Wales, and home to Oxford through the Cotswolds. The scenery in Scotland in fine weather was truly memorable, and camping in this environment was a joy. In early September, 1955, we stayed a couple of weeks with Doug and Jean Giles at Whilton, about 40 miles from Oxford. Doug was an engineer, a friend from school and university football days in Adelaide.

At the end of 1955, we paid a brief return visit to the Ackers in Gloucestershire, at their urging. (Mrs Ackers had tragically died.) We then drove to London to meet Trish's sister Anne Gordon and her husband who were arriving from Australia, and stayed with them in Croydon for a few days at the spacious flat of mutual friends.

Magdalen was one of the most beautiful of the Oxford colleges, and it was a privilege to have been able to live there and be part of the college life. I had a continuous stream of mainly Australian visitors, and was only too happy to show them the College – the different quadrangles, the cloisters, the chapel, the hall, the library, New Building, the deer park, Addison's water walk around Magdalen meadow, the sports ground, punting on the river Cherwell, and Magdalen tower which provided splendid views of the city. I would also take them for a tour of other colleges if they so desired. Sometimes, we could go to chapel and hear the singing of the College choir, which could be incredibly moving. The mix would vary depending on the interest and time of my visitors. Almost always it would include providing tea in my room. My mother kept me well supplied with fruitcake and shortbread from home for these occasions – and for the many times I provided tea for my friends in the College. Trish was a regular visitor and often shared these social occasions with me.

As at school and the University of Adelaide, my sporting life at Oxford was important for both its intrinsic and social satisfaction. I played in the annual Australian rules football match between Oxford and Cambridge, captaining the winning 1955 Oxford side, but this was my only opportunity for my favourite sporting activity. I did play in the College rugby team in both my first and fourth terms, although it was only in a limited number of games because of bad weather in my first term, and an injured left shoulder in my fourth term. Playing cricket in England was most enjoyable, but it also was sometimes interrupted or cancelled by bad weather. I was a regular member of the College team in 1954 and 1955, and was elected to the Authentics Club for which I played the occasional game, sometimes with Bob Hawke. As team captain in 1955, I was generally pleased with the team's performances and, apart from a brief lapse, enjoyed some success with my batting. The team captain in 1954 was John Orton. He became a good friend and we visited him and his family in Yorkshire on our way north in the summer of 1955. John was the president

of the junior common room in that year. Squash at the College courts became a regular feature of my life, especially when I needed a healthy break from study that was not too time-consuming. Some of my College friends were athletes, and I was lucky enough to see Roger Bannister run the first four-minute mile at the Iffley road athletics track on 6 May, 1954.

My tutors indicated that I had a good chance of getting a first if I did the requisite work, but they realised also that I wanted to make the most of my time taking advantage of being able to see and experience so many things that were not easily accessible where I came from, and that I had current as well as future responsibilities to my fiancée. In the event, I achieved a good second, with assurances from the senior tutor that this would not affect a job reference he was willing to write when the time came. I had worked very hard towards the end of my course, but I had left my run a bit late and perhaps did not get the best of luck in some of the examination questions asked. On reflection, however, I had no regrets about how much time I had spent on non-academic activities, which were enjoyable and educative in their own right.

Trish and I went to the Magdalen Commem Ball, and various other festivities, before paying a final visit to the Tancocks and the Richards in Cornwall. They and so many others had made our time away so memorable. We had been the beneficiaries of so much generosity and good-will. After a sea voyage of a month on the *Orion*, we arrived back in Adelaide. At 25 years of age, we were more than ready for the next stages of our lives, starting with getting married and me finding paid employment.

Throughout the period of being away, my mother had kept up a weekly correspondence, and my brother Jim and sister Marg, and various friends had also written occasionally, so I had not felt cut off from my social roots in Adelaide. Most of my male contemporaries were well on the way in their chosen field of work and were married and producing children. Most of my female contemporaries were also married but, in accordance with the conventions of the time, many of them had given up paid work to devote their time to rearing children and home-making for the family. The male was expected to be the bread-winner; the female the home-maker. This gender division of labour between couples, supposedly based on biological differences between the sexes but in fact massively influenced by culture, tradition and prejudice, was to radically change in the course of my adult life. By 2012, Australian women were working as the prime minister, the governor-general, the premiers of two of the states, the governors of two of the states, and three were members of the Australian High Court. They are increasingly in evidence in senior university appointments, in the practice of law, in politics, in medicine, in journalism, and in many other areas of working life traditionally dominated by men, although inevitably the change is uneven.

As it turned out, I was to enter a professional field historically dominated by women, and ironically it has stayed that way, despite all the talk about the need for equality of opportunity of employment for all. It will be evident that I never regretted the career path which I chose, the work experiences it offered, and the quality of the people with whom I associated, but the gender composition of my professional group has continued to be a matter of professional concern not sufficiently shared by most of my female colleagues, or by society at large.

Chapter 1

Starting a Professional Career and a Family

Married at Last

On 25 August, 1956, just a week after our return by boat from England, Patricia Berry and I were married in St Peter's Cathedral in Adelaide. The Reverend Brian MacDonald, chaplain of St Peter's College, took the service and administered communion to us. We had greatly appreciated receiving a visit from him in Oxford during his short visit to Britain in January, and were very happy to have chosen him. We seemed to have many similar values and attitudes. One piece of personal advice to us which I recall he passed on was – never go to sleep at night before resolving any quarrels which might have occurred during the day. Though we were not prone to quarrelling, this seemed good advice. Murray Gordon, Trish's brother-in-law, played the Cathedral organ. Trish had Anne Fullerton as bridesmaid, and I had my brother Jim as best-man, with Leigh Wilson and Dick Bennett acting as ushers.

A newspaper report described Trish's 'white pure silk organza wedding gown':

Classically simple, the bridal gown had a closely moulded, low-waisted bodice, accented by a white satin sash, with minute satin cuffs on the bishop sleeves. Mellowed orange blossom held her wedding veil, worn over a little cap of Brussels lace.

This gown and the primrose frock for the bridesmaid had come from England.¹ Needless to say, I thought Trish looked stunning, but so too did others.

In the light of my subsequent career, our choice of psalm was interesting, and rather curious. 'Put thou thy trust in the Lord, and be doing good ... He shall make thy righteousness as clear as the light; and thy just dealing as the noon-day.' (Psalm 37) As already indicated, I was developing concerns about social justice and doing something about them. But this had not come primarily from putting my trust in a benevolent deity, but rather from an emerging

1 'The Advertiser', 27/8/56.

understanding of moral reasoning enlightened by social science. I certainly did not think that what was socially good and right was 'as clear as the light' to anyone who thought seriously about these matters.

The reception after the wedding was held in a marquee on the front lawn of Wingfield, the Berry home. The floral decorations there, and also in the Cathedral, reflected Trish's favourite colour, yellow. The guests were a good mix of both families and their close friends, and of our friends. Included were Colin Gordon, Trevor Jones, and Mr Cameron, who had had significant roles in my educational life. Some guests, like the Stoniers, the Rowland Butlins, and the Thwaites, came from Melbourne. The main absentees were new friends we had made in England, and relatives and friends who were interstate or overseas. Some of these insisted on giving us wedding presents all the same – the Tites, the Jeffries, John Orton and Joyce Alinson, Ken North, Robin and Marie Ames, the Richards, Jean and David Prest, Margaret Berry, Barry and Joyce Rowland, Erica and Peter Reade, and the staff, two of the mistresses, the headmistress and girls at Tudor Hall School.

According to a record we kept at the time so we could write thank-you letters, we received 122 presents, and nine cheques to use as we wanted.² We had had the great benefit of being able to buy in London a 'Green Sheaf' Denby dinner and tea set from Trish's parents, a best dinner set of white Rosenthal china from my parents, and sets of modern cutlery and thin-stemmed French crystal glasses, from NanNan Barker. Others from whom we received gifts at the time of the wedding were:

From those connected with the Berrys – Uncle Edgar Brown, Anne and Murray Gordon, Deb and Jack Cane, Grannie Berry, Maudie Berry, Tim Potts, the MacDonalds, the Birches, Sister Hay, Noel and Brian Stonier, Vic and Bob, Amy Brown, Val and Max Esau, Ken and Janet Stonier, Gilbert Browns, Elspeth and Peter Wells, R. John Barker, Mary Dean Berry, the Claude Gordons, Norah Godlee, the Lauries, John and Mary Barker and the girls, Nanette and Peter Cudmore, Canon and Mrs Loan, the Dawsons, Ron and Sylvia Brown, Steve and Necia Gilbert, the Browns, Whitlock and Jean Jones, the Wiadrowskis, Miss Walker, Tom, Audrey and Elaine Reed, Kath and Matthew Tiddy, Yvonne Wait, Edgar and Eileen Barker, the Lidgetts, the Walkleys, Miss Hooper, Muriel Barker, the Hornabrooks, and Auntie Wyn Seppelt.

From those connected with the Lawrences – Chris Dawes, the Hamiltons, Nancy Hunt, Kath and Shirley Boundy, Evelyn Capper, Addie and Ralph Civil, , the Alan Dicks & Pauline, Jim and Sheila Lawrence, Brian and Win Sarre, the Claude Sarres, Kathleen and Eric Russell, Kate McBain, Dorothy and Brian Lawrence, Jim Moline, W. J. L. Arnott, 'Unc', Mabel, Fay and Geoff Butlin, the Les Butlins, Margie Lawrence, Mrs A. Butlin and family, Joan and Rob Laurie, the Radfords, the Necks, and Mrs Mary Hunt.

From Trish's friends – Anne Fullerton, Gill and Kenneth Rambaut, Sarah Angas,

2 Recorded in a booklet in the family archives. These names give some indication of our social network at the time. (The booklet also records many of our expenses while overseas –the cost of petrol, oil and repairs for the car, and rent and cost of food at Beech Croft Road in Oxford.)

Sue and Peter Morgan, Janet and Alastair Angas, Joan Creswell, Heather and Jim Bonnin, Syd and Madeline Fullerton, Anne and Derek Bolland, Ann and Bruce Marsden, John and Jule Davidson, Ian and Judy Wiadrowski, Bronte and Marie Birch, Anne Magarey, and Mr and Mrs Creswell.

From my friends – Hector Brooks, Rossie and John Grant, Jo and Peter Jeffreys, Neville Reid, the Colin Gordons, the Borlands, Pat Hay and Bob Griggs, Ewen Cameron, Bob Brummitt, Bob Reid, Mrs Amy Wheaton, the Millards, John Twopeny, Elaine and Gerry Martin, Trevor and Pat Jones, the Seedsmans, Mary Mellish and Allister McLeod, Dick and Enid Bennett, Ron Corney, Rosemary Baker, Chris Ketley, Gus and Pat Elix, Diana Cornish and Dick Hancock, and Ian and Val Broadbent.

From our mutual friends – Judy and Peter Slack, Noel and David Hayman, John Hopton, Jean and John Tregenza, John Reid, Jean and Doug Giles, Rev. and Mrs Brian MacDonald, and Rod Linklater.

With all these gifts, together with the other things we had bought abroad, we were now very well set up for our domestic future together. We could now begin entertaining at a much more adequate level. Forty telegrams wishing us well were read out at the reception. Amongst these were ones from Trish's aunt, Margaret Berry, now a lieutenant-colonel in charge of the women in the British army in Cyprus; from the Wheareats, very good friends of the Berrys, whom we had visited in England; from Duncan Anderson, on his way home to Melbourne from Oxford; from Margie and Jim Forbes, who were now back in Adelaide after their time at Oxford; and Bob Porter who had also now returned.

We had been very conscious that it might have proved difficult to organise our marriage so soon after our arrival home. However, thanks to long-term planning by letter and the wonderful cooperation of everyone involved, we could not have wished for a more successful start to our married life together. Again, we were recipients of great generosity and good-will. Amongst all of the expressions of love and support, NanNan Barker's stuck in my mind, 'May the world be a better place for you both having been in it'. Amen, I thought, but it was easier said than done. We, and many others, had certainly benefited from her own generosity. As I have described in the first volume, having a reasonable car enabled us to see and do so much more during our time overseas.

Our Honeymoon

It was not difficult to guess where we wanted to spend our honeymoon. NanNan Barker's house at Encounter Bay, Victor Harbour, was available. Trish had very fond memories of holidays there as she grew up, and from 1950, these became shared memories when I was a frequent holiday guest until we left for England in December, 1953. A borrowed car gave us flexibility to go to places like Waitpinga. The wattle and many other wild-flowers were coming out. It was bliss being back in such familiar surroundings and finally we were sleeping together, learning to express our love for each other in a way which could lead to having children of our own.

13 East Terrace, Blackwood

After the honeymoon, we moved into our first home – at 13 East Terrace, Blackwood. It was in the Adelaide Hills, but readily accessible by train to the city. The house was owned by the Berrys and had been occupied at one stage by three of Trish's great aunts. We rented one of the two flats it had been divided into. The occupants of the other flat were Flexmore ('Wilf') and Myrle Hudson, and their son. He was senior English master at Scotch College and was a recognised Australian poet.³ The verandah running around the front and side of the top floor of the two-storey house was embellished with a very old climbing rose. The garden had potential but had been badly neglected. My first major task was to try to get rid of the kikuyu grass from the main garden bed which ran the length of the drive. A short walk at the back of the house led to the Blackwood railway station, and a little beyond that were the Blackwood shops. Fairly soon after moving in, NanNan Barker enabled us to buy a second-hand Morris Minor, which gave us great mobility. We would have had to wait a long time before I could have afforded it out of my earnings. We positively enjoyed the hills environment. The most direct route to the flat plain was via the Old Belair road which overlooked Brown Hill Creek, down past Scotch College, to Unley Road. My parents lived not far from Unley Road. Nothing in Adelaide took very long to reach by car.

Work

I recall visiting Jim Forbes soon after returning to Adelaide. He was then a lecturer in political science in the University and was headed for a career in the federal Liberal Party, ending up as a minister in the Menzies Government. Given my academic interest in politics, he asked a fairly obvious question. Was I headed for a career in politics? My answer was that I thought I valued my independence too much to be aligned with either side of politics.

Just five days after our wedding, Amy Wheaton wrote: 'Yours was the nicest wedding I have ever attended', and commented on the good weather we were fortunate enough to have for our honeymoon. Her main reason for writing, however, was to draw my attention to an advertisement for a lectureship in comparative social administration in the School of Social Science, Victoria University College, Wellington. This was the sort of course Amy had been unable as yet to get accepted and that she had hoped I might teach. She wondered if I would like to apply for the NZ position. It 'would give you experience in academic teaching and practical experience of investigating the field as well as the teaching'.⁴ Obviously I needed work – and soon.

My letter to Harry Weldon in June, 1957, requesting a reference for a particular university position, gives an account of what was developing on the work front. I suggested that he might get the comments of Ken (Tite) and David (Worswick). (Harry was my senior PPE tutor at Magdalen and I could

3 See John Dally, 'Hudson, Wilfred Frank Flexmore (1913–1988)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Vol. 17, Melbourne University Press, 2007.

4 Amy Wheaton to John Lawrence, 30/8/56.

only nominate one of them.) The letter provides a brief work history since September, 1956:

I spent a short time labouring while collecting my thoughts and those of others as regards my future. I found that there was a little substance in the talk about my having a chance of succeeding the present head of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Adelaide. This Department trains professional social workers of whom there is a considerable shortage in Australia. At present it is small – 3 full-time lecturers – but the trend is towards expansion. ... I decided that if I could fluke this job it would give me what I had been vaguely groping after for many years. In fact, my previous training seemed well geared to its requirements except in one important respect, and that was that apart from field work requirements while doing the Diploma (which I completed concurrently with an Honours Arts Degree) I had had no practical experience working as a social worker. Setting my sights on the University position, I therefore obtained a job for two months in the Family Welfare Bureau (which attempts to help exservicemen and their families), and then entered the Social Work Branch of the Commonwealth Department of Social Services, where I have been ever since. The work is stimulating, challenging, and worth-while, but poorly paid for the training needed to do it well.

About a week ago, the University advertised the job I am interested in. ... The successful candidate ... will act as Head of the Department during 1958 and will become Head in 1959. ... It is a pity (this job) has turned up now and not in three or four years' time, but if I scored it, I would try to get study leave as soon as I could and go to the States, where this work is, of necessity, more advanced than elsewhere. ...

I am Secretary of the local branch of the Australian Association of Social Workers and the national conference is being held here in August, its topic being 'Education for Social Work'. I am Secretary of the Planning Committee, so life is busy. ...⁵

Harry replied:⁶

Nice to hear from you. I hope you will get it. Certainly I will testify if they ask me to. I've asked David and Ken to send me any thoughts they have for inclusion.

Well, Ken isn't dead, and I think he is less nearly dead than he was 3 months ago. That is something anyway. He doesn't *want* to die and is very tough – so perhaps he will get better in time. I'm afraid one can't say better than that. David's son has just been made a chorister.

No time for more now. Term is just over and I am clearing up the mess. Only one more Party to do and the Gaudy on Saturday. 22 boys starting PPE next Term! But that's a long way off.

Love to Trish

I had also written to Tom Boase, president of Magdalen, for a testimonial. His reply gave us more news of Ken Tite:

Ken Tite seems very much better, though still on a very strict diet and having to

⁵ Letter, John Lawrence to Harry Weldon, undated.

⁶ Letter, T. D. Weldon to John Lawrence, 25/6/57.

take things pretty easily. ... at the critical moment they found some new treatment to which he seems to have reacted favourably ... He has, as one would expect, remained wonderfully cheerful and courageous throughout.

Mr Boase had written his testimonial and hoped I would get the post, though he expected there would be a fairly strong field for it. His letter to me concluded with: 'All best wishes to you and Trish. We miss you both a great deal.'⁷

The position was advertised at a reader or senior lecturer level. The current senior lecturer-in-charge of the Department of Social Studies (Mrs Amy Wheaton) would be on leave during 1958, and would retire at the end of the year. In my application for the position, 26 July 1957, I indicated that closed testimonials on my behalf had been sent from Mr Boase, and Mr C. E. S. Gordon, the headmaster of St Peter's College. The following had also agreed to act as referees if called upon – on the academic side, Mr T. D. Weldon (obtaining comments from Ken Tite and G. D. N. Worswick); on the practical side, Miss Shirley Lean, senior social worker, Family Welfare Bureau, ... and Miss Madge Forsyth, formerly senior social worker, Commonwealth Department of Social Services (now in France); for the opinion of a representative of the local social work field, Miss Joy MacLennan, Church of England Welfare Bureau (obtaining the comments of Miss Helen James, and Dr D. M. Williamson of the Rehabilitation Branch of the Commonwealth Department of Social Services). The only teaching experience I could refer to was the giving of four lectures at the commencement of the 'social organisation' course of the Department of Social Studies earlier in 1957.

The Family Welfare Bureau

This was the name of the agency set up in Adelaide by the World War II Services Welfare Fund, 'to look after the welfare of ex-servicemen and their families'.⁸ It provided a social casework service, a home-maker (visiting house-keeper) service, a playroom for children, and an advisory health clinic. Financial aid could be given where it appeared money would enable a person to overcome their problem. Shirley Lean who headed the service, had completed the Adelaide University diploma in social science and also a psychiatric social work qualification from the University of London. Two of my other colleagues at the bureau were Pat Sandford (née Pieterek), and Helen Good (later, Plush). They had:

respectful memories of Shirley Lean, who managed a well organised agency and was a formidable person. She was also a part-time lecturer in the course at Adelaide University, bringing case studies for students to discuss and consider. ... she was one of the founders of the Supporting Mothers's Association, a desperately-needed

7 Letter, T. S. R. Boase to John Lawrence, 10/7/57.

8 *Directory of Social Agencies: South Australia*, South Australian Council of Social Service, 1956, p. 49. (This was the first edition of the directory.)

service for women who had nowhere to go to escape terrible domestic situations.⁹

The Family Welfare Bureau was located on the ground floor of the Churchill Building, 61 Gawler Place. Getting to work was easy for me, for this was within easy walking distance of the Adelaide railway station, and the train from Blackwood took less than 20 minutes. Home visits to clients were done by an agency car. One such visit was to Renmark, where Shirley Lean had asked me to visit a very troubling family situation involving possible sexual interference with the children by the father. I was obviously very inexperienced and greatly appreciated all the help I could get from Shirley Lean.

The Social Work Section of the Commonwealth Department of Social Security

When I went to work in the Commonwealth Department of Social Security in November, 1956, it was also in the Churchill Building – in the upper floors. My professional colleagues in the social work section were: the senior social worker Madge Forsyth, Pam Perrins, Margaret Turner, Alison Edwards, and Marjorie Kennedy. They were a cooperative serious-minded bunch under considerable work pressure. When Madge Forsyth went overseas early in 1957, Pam Perrins acted as the senior social worker.

General Casework

I had a general casework load drawn from the various beneficiary categories of the Department, with a geographic division of labour. My area was the north-west part of Adelaide, and took in working-class areas in and near Port Adelaide. As I came to know some of the families, on home visits as well in the city office, I can remember thinking how rich and complex were many of their stories – certainly often more interesting and complicated than anything I had encountered in fiction writing. I was also impressed by the dignity and ego-strengths many of them demonstrated in the face of adversity. Social class stereotypes and prejudices had no place in trying to provide social casework assistance. Creative fiction was no substitute for the real thing – the lived experience of actual human beings. I developed scepticism about some of the knowledge claims made about creative writing, enjoyable though it may be for the writers and the readers.

Rehabilitation work

In addition, to my general casework, I was also the social worker in the remedial

9 Elizabeth Bleby, 'Conversations with social workers – a snapshot', *The South Australian Social Worker*, Vol. 24, September/October 2008, p. 4. After completing the Adelaide University diploma in 1945, Pat Pieterek went interstate on a Red Cross scholarship to qualify as an almoner (medical social worker), worked in Sydney, and was employed by the Royal Adelaide Hospital, taking leave to work in three London hospitals. When she was married, she had to leave RAH. On her return to work she went to the Family Welfare Bureau. Later she worked for Adelaide and then Flinders Universities. Helen Good was a new graduate in 1956. Later she worked at the Radcliffe Infirmary in Oxford, while her husband was doing further study. Back in Adelaide, for some years she was at the Family Planning Association, and then was the first social worker appointed by The Wyatt Benevolent Institution.

team of the Department's residential rehabilitation centre at Mount Breckan, Victor Harbour. Rehabilitation was provided to invalid pensioners, unemployment and sickness beneficiaries, and people between the ages of 14 and 16 years who had a disability which was a substantial handicap to engaging in employment and which may become permanently disabling. People in the program had to have a disability which was remediable, with a prospect of getting employment within 3 years after entering the program. St Margaret's at Payneham in Adelaide, provided a day attendance rehabilitation centre.

I spent every Thursday at Mount Breckan. I would drive down from Blackwood to South Road, park my car near there for the day, and travel to and from Victor Harbour in a Commonwealth car. My usual travelling companion was Dr D. M. (Greg) Williamson, with others sometimes joining us – Peter Lovell (CES psychologist), Dave Davies (education and training officer at St Margaret's). Dr Williamson was the non-residential medical officer for Mount Breckan. He headed the rehabilitation team at Mount Breckan, which included nursing staff, physiotherapists, a visiting social worker, sometimes a visiting psychologist, and a liaison person from the Commonwealth Employment Service. Locating a suitable job at the end of the process was seen as the main aim, but along the way the various aspects of people's progress were periodically assessed in weekly case conferences, with everyone contributing when relevant.

Dr Williamson came from England. He was a rehabilitation enthusiast and I arranged for him to tell us about rehabilitation work in England at one of our staff conferences in the social work section of the Department. Rehabilitating servicemen from the two world wars had given great stimulus to the development of civilian schemes. Dr Williamson was interested not only in individual cases, but also in taking social action to improve the lot of people with disabilities. He was the first chairman of the Phoenix Society of South Australia, 1958–61. In the course of 1957, I had a lot of fruitful interaction with him – during our weekly car trips, at the Mount Breckan staff conferences, and around individual cases at other times. Our conversations in the car were sometimes far-ranging – on topics like the British and Australian class systems, eugenics, social darwinism, and the British national health system.

I kept a work diary and notice that during my first visit to Mount Breckan, I raised the question of the residents saving from their allowances for when they were ready for employment. At the next meeting, it was agreed I should discuss such a scheme with Dr Male, the senior medical officer, and Mr Atkinson, the administrator at Mount Breckan. In mid-December, I approached Arthur Baker, a medical orderly, and he was keen to run such a scheme, to be instituted in the new year. This proved to be a small, but useful initiative to help a few people get established in the community after living in the very protected residential rehabilitation environment.

The Social Work Service

My work diary consisted mainly of a brief, rough daily record of the interviews with my clients – in the office, at Mount Breckan, and in home visits; my phone calls in and out of the office – to and from other social agencies, other members

of the Department, and potential employers of my clients; my occasional visits to other social agencies on behalf of my clients and to the pensions and the unemployment and sickness benefits branches of the Department; periodic case conferences – with the senior social worker, and at Mount Breckan; and staff conferences where intake procedures, work allocation, recording, writing reports for departmental files, further education and a variety of other matters were discussed. This was a well-organised busy agency, embedded in Australia's national income security program which had been developed since the Second World War. Lyra Taylor was its very experienced national director,¹⁰ with considerable international experience which she shared with her social work staff, and earlier especially with Frank Rowe, the permanent head of the Department.

The National Director

In 1944, Lyra Taylor was appointed director of social work and research in the Commonwealth Department of Social Services (CDSS), directly responsible to F. H. Rowe, its first permanent head.¹¹ In its first report, 1941, the Commonwealth Committee on Social Security mentioned an increasing reliance on trained social workers and research officers as a marked advance in the administration of social services overseas, and recommended their appointment by CDSS. Social workers, however, were not subsequently appointed to administer the national social security program. This was left to people drawn from the general public service pool without any special educational preparation. Instead, social workers were employed in a distinct professional section to provide a casework service to selected beneficiaries. In addition they were expected to make the Department's administration more humane, and to form a useful instrument for social progress by assembling evidence on social questions working in conjunction with social research workers. When Lyra Taylor retired in 1959, her division of social work, welfare and library had remained chronically understaffed. The division had established, in 1948, a *Social Services Journal*, which had had some educational impact on the Department and more generally, but the specific research function had been relocated away from social work.¹² Also no progress had been made towards training for social welfare administration.

At the first national conference of social welfare in 1960, in a major paper, Lyra Taylor identified six 'deficiencies and gaps in social services':¹³

- A program of National Assistance
- An official national advisory body
- Practical social services at the local level in rapidly growing suburbia and in country areas

10 After working as a lawyer in New Zealand, she qualified as a social worker at Johns Hopkins University in Baltimore, USA, worked in family welfare agencies in Baltimore and Montreal, and then with the YWCA in Baltimore and Sydney, returning to North America in 1942. In both Montreal and Sydney, she taught at the school of social work – at Sydney University, in social group work. R. J. Lawrence, *Professional Social Work in Australia*, Australian National University, Canberra, 1965, p. 90.

11 She returned from Canada at the invitation of Mr Rowe.

12 See John Lawrence, *Social Policy Research: 25 Years of a National Research Centre*, Social Policy Research Centre, UNSW, Sydney, pp. 2–3.

13 ACOSS, *First National Conference of Social Welfare (Proceedings)*, Melbourne, May 1960, pp. 29–35.

- The shortage of trained social workers and people trained for social services administration, complicated by the attitude towards women, which persisted in public life
- Much better social service evaluations
- The continuing lack of understanding and cooperation between the small but emerging social work profession and the many people engaged in social welfare work without special training

A Visit to Central Administration in Melbourne

In November, 1955, Amy Wheaton told me Mr Rowe had asked her to sound me out about a job in his department, and commented that social administration was a section of social work which was becoming increasingly important and experience in his department would stand me in good stead should I apply later for her job.¹⁴ As I have indicated, I did join his department, but not as an administrator. All the same, in January, 1957, the South Australian Director of the Department, Mr C. G. Atkinson, discussed with me a two-week visit in March to Central Administration, planned for me by Miss Taylor. It was a rare educational opportunity, especially to someone who had only recently joined the Department. Mr Atkinson recognised the great contribution Lyra Taylor had made to the Department with her extensive national and international social welfare knowledge, but there had been some difficulties with her more recently which some officers attributed to her being menopausal! Colin Atkinson had a bachelor of commerce degree and a diploma in public administration, and he seemed a reasonable man. I had already encountered from other officers jesting about the irrelevance of many social worker reports in departmental files, and found it difficult to disentangle gender prejudice from genuine judgements about the work itself. In the social work section, we kept social casework files which contained material inappropriate for administrative files, but sometimes some of this needed to be included in a social work report in, for example, a special benefit administrative file. Just because most of my social work professional colleagues were female had nothing to do with the handling of this issue. I was becoming aware of gender issues in social work and public administration.

On Saturday, 9 March, I flew to Melbourne, to stay for a fortnight with Unc and Auntie Mabel Butlin at Camberwell, taking the train each day to Flinders Street Station. On one of my trips, Bob Hawke was in the same carriage and we had a good chat. We had both married our respective fiancées, since we had seen each other in Oxford. I recall having a talk with him in one of the Oxford libraries about his BLitt on the Australian arbitration system, saw him and Hazel at functions of the Australian Society and Rhodes House, and I played cricket with him in the Authentics and against him in the Magdalen College team, but he was not a particular friend partly, I suppose, because of his drinking proclivities for which he was notorious.

My Melbourne visit included a day at Coonac, the Department's

¹⁴ See Vol. 1, p. 332.

rehabilitation centre located in an impressive Toorak mansion, and appointments with Miss Shepherdson, the executive officer of the Victorian Council of Social Service, and Mr Randall White, director of the Old People's Welfare Council of Victoria. Most of my time, however, was in Reliance House, the Department's Central Administration building in Flinders Lane. Miss Taylor gave generously of her time and knowledge about the Department and its work. A recent American book by Herb Bisno on social work philosophy was brought to my attention.¹⁵ When Mr Rowe became head of the Department in 1941, it was responsible for only three major benefits, with 609 total staff. By his death in May 1958, it had grown with eight additional benefits, programs of social work and rehabilitation, reciprocity in social benefits with New Zealand, the United Kingdom, Northern Ireland and the Isle of Man, and grants to old people's homes under the Aged Persons Homes Act – with now a total staff of 2,525. The 1947 Social Services Act consolidated over 50 acts of parliament.¹⁶ The development of a national income security system was a major achievement in the immediate post-war period, and, of course, not only in Australia. The need for a positive 'welfare state', with income security being a central feature, was a corner-stone of postwar reconstruction.

My tour of the Central Administration of the Department in March 1957, included interviews with Miss Cheeseman, the librarian-in-charge of the departmental library; Dr George Burniston, the Department's principal medical officer; and Mr N. C. Tritton, head of the Department's separate tiny research section. In the social work section of the Department, we were particularly grateful for the up-to-date flow of social welfare material through the departmental library and the departmental journal produced by Miss Taylor's section, under the editorship of Shirley Horne. The role of social work in the Department's rehabilitation program was the focus in my discussion with smooth-talking Dr Burniston. As a relative newcomer, I could not, of course, appeal to long experience, but I was becoming aware of inter – and intra – professional tensions and rivalries mingled with personality factors.

Departmental Research

Mr Tritton was one of the three Australians who at the time were seen as income-security experts. The other two were Ron Mendelsohn and Tom Kewley. Mendelsohn's *Social Security in the British Commonwealth: Great Britain, Canada, Australia, New Zealand*, London, 1954, was based on his doctoral thesis at the London School of Economics. Tom Kewley had graduated at Sydney University in arts and had a diploma of social studies. He was employed in Professor Spann's department to teach public administration. His major research, the development of Australia's social security system, had resulted in a number of historical articles. The first edition of his comprehensive work on social security in Australia since 1900 was published by the Sydney University Press in 1965. Mr Tritton warned me that I would lose my academic soul if I

15 Many years later Herb came to La Trobe University in Melbourne and I got to know him.

16 'The Late F. H. Rowe, C.B.E., Director-General', *Social Services Journal*, June 1958, p. 3.

worked with him in the research section, because his research topics and what he could say were heavily circumscribed by the government.

Following a staff reorganisation in the Central Administration of the Department at the beginning of 1959, Mr Tritton was appointed Assistant Director-General in charge of policy, research and benefits sections, and Max Wryell became the director-in-charge of the research and public relations branch.¹⁷ I came to know Max well in later years, and he often referred to his 'political masters', not all of whom impressed him.

Building a Professional and Broader Network

In the course of my casework in the Department, I was beginning to build and use an extensive network of relationships – with people in the different sections of the Department and in a wide array of social agencies in the community. Making productive use of the social environment was an essential feature of the social worker's job. I wrote at the back of my pocket diary for 1957, three statements attributed to Charlotte Towle:

The social worker's function is defined as 'a charge to help the individual and his family to make productive use of their environment ... and of themselves in solving problems.'

The coexistence of compassionate feeling with dispassionate thinking.

The distinct attribute of social work is defined as its 'breadth and wholeness of concern with unmet need.'

Some of my interaction was with professionally qualified social work colleagues – for example, Hannah Buckley and Geoff Cuddihy at the Immigration Department, Joy MacLennan at the Church of England Welfare Bureau, Father Roberts at the Catholic Social Service Bureau, Helen Salter and Trudy Travers in the Almoners' Department of the Royal Adelaide Hospital, Margaret McPherson at the Crippled Children's Association, Albie Glastonbury at Adult Probation, Pat Sandford at the Family Welfare Bureau, Miss Stanton at the Child Welfare and Public Relief Department, and Grace Cuthbertson, and Barbara Stacey. Many of the interactions, however, were with people with other training or with no training at all. The first edition of the *Directory of Social Agencies in South Australia*, published just the year before, in 1956, by the South Australian Council of Social Service, provided brief descriptions and contact details of all of the available social agencies, government and non-government.

The Professional Association

In February 1957, I agreed to be the secretary of the South Australian Branch of the Australian Association of Social Workers (AASW), with Geoff Cuddihy the president. It was the branch's turn to be responsible for the national biennial conference in August, and I understood there would be a separate organising secretary for the conference. In the event, no-one was forthcoming so

¹⁷ 'Departmental News and Notes', *Social Services Journal*, February 1959, p. 3.

by default I had the job despite my inexperience in the profession. It proved manageable because the association was still a relatively small body,¹⁸ the planning committee worked hard and well, and our employers were supportive. The experience turned out to be a significant mile-stone in my nascent social work career.

The Sixth National Conference of the AASW – ‘Social Work Education’

The conference, from Friday, 16 August, to Tuesday, 20 August, was largely a residential conference – at Retreat House, owned by the Church of England and used by its clergy, but also available to others. It was at Belair in the Adelaide hills, seven miles south of the city. Sunny early spring weather and continuous wood fires kept the place comfortable. 86 attended – from all states and the ACT, from a variety of government and non-government agencies, and nine came from the four university schools of social work – in Sydney, Melbourne, Adelaide, and Brisbane.

On the Friday, we organised visits of observation to 13 social agencies which employed trained social workers. 70 organisations of social welfare significance contributed material for an information bureau. In a pause, during a sherry party and buffet before the conference opening, we listened to the AASW federal president Alison Player talk nationally on the ABC’s ‘Speaker of the Week’ radio program, about society and the social worker.¹⁹ On the Saturday evening, after a coloured film on the beautiful Flinders Ranges, we saw Jacques Tati’s ‘Monsieur Hulot’s Holiday’.²⁰ On the Sunday morning, transport was arranged to take people to the local Anglican and Catholic churches. Later in the morning, Father John Lewis SSM,²¹ took a corporate service for the conference, and preached a sermon on ‘compassion’. He emphasised Christ’s complete acceptance of all classes and conditions of men, which had provided all subsequent generations of Christians with an example of particular relevance to the social work profession.

The Sunday afternoon was devoted to topics of interest to branches – post-graduate education (NSW), housing for lower-income groups (Victoria), child care (Queensland), and conference planning (SA). On this last topic, on behalf of the planning committee of the current conference, I raised various difficulties that had been experienced – the division of function between federal

18 In 1958, it had 360 members.

19 Trained originally in Melbourne in the British almoner tradition, she had almoner experience in Melbourne, then in Britain and the USA in 1939. 1941–44 she was director of the Family Welfare Bureau in Sydney. After further study and observation in the UK and USA, she lectured in medical social work at Melbourne University in 1949 and worked at the Royal Melbourne Hospital, before appointment as senior almoner at the Alfred Hospital in 1950. In 1957, she was deputy superintendent of Turana, an institution of the Children’s Welfare Department. Her experience had led her to identify with the social work profession as a whole and not only with medical social work. ‘Her personal qualities inspired general confidence, among her colleagues and in the community’. R. J. Lawrence (1965), *Professional Social Work in Australia*, ANU Press, Canberra, pp. 132–3.

20 My choice, but the film had received the Grand Prize of International Film Critics, Cannes Festival, 1953.

21 He was acting provincial at St Michael’s House, a training ground for Anglican clergy.

council and the state-based committee had not been clear in practice; federal council had been late in finalising the program and the speakers, partly because speakers had been slow to respond to invitations to speak; and the general membership had been slack about closing dates and the filling in of questionnaires to help the conference planning. We were not impressed, and commented 'perhaps there needs to be more emphasis at the training level on the need for good administration'. We recommended a conference planning book be prepared for the guidance of future planning committees, and that a detailed file be kept on each conference to be passed on to the next planning committee.²²

At the general membership meeting of the Association on the Sunday evening, federal council suggested that in future it should determine the conference subject and leave all the detailed planning of the program and organisation to the planning committee drawn from the branch. At this meeting, Mrs Chris Thompson, the federal secretary and social worker for Melbourne City Council, gave a resume of the association's activities over the past two years. These included: registration with the Commonwealth Arbitration Court in November 1955; a code of ethics about to go to members for a two-year period for critical comment; the development of the International Federation of Social Workers (IFSW); all members now paying for the professional journal in their membership fee; an inaugural meeting of the association with the schools of social work, planned for next month; concern with anomalies in the Social Services Act concerning deserted and de facto wives; and a special project to raise money to fund a federal secretariat. Apart from the conference, it was my first glimpse of the association operating at a national level. On the Monday evening of the conference, the members met for discussion in the following groups: statutory agencies, voluntary agencies, medical social work, social action and public relations, and branch secretaries.

To publicise the conference, a letter went in June from the president of the branch to each of the 22 agencies employing trained social workers in Adelaide, telling them of the conference and asking them to release their staff to attend it. The local press had advance items about it, and on 14 August, *The Advertiser* published my 1,500 – word article on the work done by social workers in the Adelaide community.²³ We gave 200-word synopses of most of the papers to *The Advertiser* and some use was made of these, although the nature of the papers did not give them high publicity value. The conference did feature in ABC news bulletins and in its 'Speaker of the Week' program already mentioned.

In my secretarial role, I quickly came to know many of the membership and especially the speakers, members of federal council and the national office-bearers. The topic of this sixth national conference, 'Education for Social Work', happened to be of particular relevance for me thinking about a possible

22 Australian Association of Social Workers, *Education for Social Work*, 6th Biennial National Conference, Adelaide, 16–20 August, 1957, pp. 136–7.

23 I had discussed the conference with the Mr McFarling, the editor of *The Advertiser*, on 4/6/57.

future in social work education. As editor and compiler of the proceedings,²⁴ I experienced some difficulty in getting a complete set of the papers for publication, but by December, the task was obviously done for in a letter from Alison Player she wrote: 'I think that the Conference Proceedings are extremely well handled'.²⁵ This task meant that I not only heard but also read all of the papers and recorded the main points raised in discussion after each paper.

The Conference Papers

In her foreword to the proceedings, Alison Player, the federal president, argued that the life and stature of a profession depended largely upon its basic and continuing education. The program had been based on replies to a questionnaire to members for suggestions on what aspects of the subject should be included. The conference had produced 'a valuable contribution to the beginnings of the literature indigenous to Australia'. She described discussion at the conference as 'free, frank and purposeful. It developed in a closely-knit fashion throughout the Conference, during and between sessions, and gave evidence of a true seeking after increased understanding and skill.'

After the opening address on social work education by Amy Wheaton, two speakers provided papers on integration of classroom and field work teaching – one by Kate Ogilvie, the lecturer in medical social work at the University of Sydney, the other by Nell Cameron, the senior social worker for CDSS in Sydney. Three papers focused on supervision in agencies – Peg Norton, lecturer in social studies at the University of Adelaide, described her supervision experience as a student of the Chicago University, and as worker at the United Charities of Chicago, a large family casework agency; Eileen Kelly, a psychiatric social worker in the Public Health Department of Tasmania, considered supervision in an information-giving agency run by the National Association of Mental Health in England; and Kathleen Dawe, deputy head almoner at the Melbourne Royal Children's Hospital, was asked to examine the effects on self-awareness of the supervisor carrying out supervision.

A Thoughtful Paper

Ruth Hoban, the director of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Melbourne, provided a scholarly paper on assessing the progress of students. She had recently been made an associate professor, the highest level of academic appointment yet achieved in Australia. Professor Hoban set down four assumptions basic to the topic:

- That the 'wholeness' of education for social work is of the utmost importance. ('It is the student's response to the whole of his²⁶ course, as well as to

24 Australian Association of Social Workers, *Education for Social Work*, Sixth Biennial National Conference, Adelaide, South Australia, 16–20 August, 1957, 148 pp.. I did not bother to indicate in the proceedings my responsibility for their compilation.

25 Letter, Alison Player to John Lawrence, 19/12/57.

26 The sexist conventions of the time were obviously particularly inappropriate when the great majority of the social work students were female.

its parts, that needs to be studied.')

- That the social work profession has a responsibility at all times to be sensitive and responsive to community needs.
- That our students should be educated *for* rather than trained *in* social work
- That the application of any set of criteria as a measure of students' progress, assumes that all students have an equal opportunity to learn, benefiting from skilful teaching.

She suggested competence as a potential social worker could be shown in eight main ways: acquisition of relevant knowledge; a capacity for critical thinking; a high degree of objectivity; a knowledge of oneself and a capacity for self-discipline; an ability to establish and sustain professionally helpful relationships with individuals and groups of individuals; ability to express ideas about social work clearly and simply; a willingness to accept the broad goals and values of social work, and understanding of the place of the profession in society;²⁷ and a spirit of inquiry and an interest in the discovery of new knowledge. Professor Hoban then discussed the various methods that were needed to assess systematically the extent and use the student made of study and experience. It took time, however, for new learning to become really effective in the mind of the student.

An International Perspective

The next paper moved far beyond Australia to relatively under-developed countries, using Thailand as a case in point, with a discussion of establishing education for social work in communities lacking trained workers. It was provided by Eileen Davidson, executive officer of the Australian Welfare Council. It called for two types of simultaneous training – training of individuals capable of assuming major responsibility to design and direct new programs, and sub-professional training of people competent to render specific services. She then related the discussion to Australian communities beginning schools of social work and lacking social workers.

Professional Development Within Agencies

The two final papers of the conference concentrated on staff development through agency programs, with the focus on the ways the professional development of the individual worker could be achieved. Madeline Keary, acting supervisor of the Red Cross Welfare Service in Sydney, discussed individual supervision, group experiences, library services and psychiatric consultation. Kathleen Crisp, Lyra Taylor's offsider in the central office of the social work and welfare branch of CDSS, looked at the extent to which orientation, supervision, consultation, case discussion, staff meetings, selected readings, and attendance at conferences and refresher courses, might be used as part of an

27 She referred to some values and assumptions that Grace Coyle had suggested social workers held in common: 1. the democratic ideal, 2. the importance of the family and other group relationships in the development of the individual, and 3. the responsibility of society to provide for each member not only the necessities of life, but also opportunity for the development of individual capacities.

agency's program. I certainly had benefited from working in her agency setting that had thought seriously about these matters.

Amy Wheaton's 'Last Hurrah'

The opening address at the conference had special significance for me. It consisted of a memorable large-scale reflection by Amy Wheaton on her 22 years as a social work educator in Adelaide. In effect, it was her 'last hurrah', and this was the person who had hoped that I might succeed her, and in fact, as indicated, I already had submitted a job application for her position. In her address, she conveyed no sense of personal or professional closure, rather a sense of the continuing restless open-minded aspiration of an inquiring mind, frustrated by the historical circumstances she had experienced.

... I leave you, without definitions, without guides to the maintenance of professional boundaries, without delimiting methods, without a framework to confine your teaching and your learning.

With my own work unfinished, I leave you far horizons for *your* creative spirit in the world of tomorrow.

At the outset of the paper, she declared:

We who have been pioneering education for social work in Australia, planning, teaching, developing the field, distressing ourselves at the results of our teaching, replanning and meeting obstacles of time, money, misunderstanding, prejudice, active opposition and academic rigidities, have certainly been learning on the job and perhaps also allowing ideas to out-run opportunity and power to give them expression.

The ... curriculum and the social agencies in the community, teaching within the university and supervision in the field are the means through which education for social work is carried into effect, given content and direction, and parcelled out in time. However worthy the end, ethics forbids us to regard the clients whom students seek to help merely as a means: they are always ends in themselves. This presents the immediate problem of preventing students from committing errors in practice that may have to be paid for in the currency of human suffering. ...

... any stereotyping of content and method – any 'basic eight' or 'basic four', for instance – must surely prevent our keeping pace with the developing concepts of social welfare, human needs and values, social work and education for social work, in a rapidly changing cultural context, in which fresh problems require solution, new theories must constantly be evaluated and methods and tools refined.

Amy Wheaton briefly reflected on the unsatisfactory situations in social work education in both England and the United States when she was requested to establish 'social service training', as it was then called in Adelaide. England, where she had studied, had excellent teaching in the social sciences, social philosophy and history, but it was almost unrelated to practical work that was either apprenticeship training or observation in the various forms of social administration. In the many fragmentary, specialised, vocational training courses outside the university, students lacked the aid of disciplined theory.

In the United States literature, she found 'only a Looking-Glass world of hypothetical, unverified concepts from psycho-analysis or its Rankian derivative'. There appeared to be little appreciation of intellectual independence, but there was much writing about 'emotional elements in supervision', 'acceptance' and 'resistance'. Social workers apparently sought to be 'affectively neutral', as if human warmth were not a factor in the helping relationship. American supervisors were supervised far beyond the time when English social workers were expected to assume complete responsibility. Yet there appeared to be an enviably close integration of class-room teaching and field-work, and vocational training was given in the university rather than under the auspices of an outside body, as were most of the courses in England. However, even after the post-graduate level of education for social work had been established in the United States, there was apparently no guarantee that all students would have an adequate background of social science.

Given that social work had developed no disciplined conceptualisation and certainly no systematic theory, she had to explore the demands of the situation for herself, 'with such aids as she could find from both sides of the Atlantic'.

Amy Wheaton then traced twelve intellectual events which had changed the direction of thought in the twentieth century and provided the intellectual climate in which she was carrying out her experiments in education for social work – relativity theory in physics, which reduced everything to relations and events; probability theory in a system of inter-related variables in place of absolute causal certainty; the return to empirical investigation as a reaction to pre-conceived doctrines and highly speculative theories, but need to recognise that investigation without hypotheses was barren; the movement in philosophy to examine the verbal forms in which the world is represented; interest in the observer, noted in the relativity theory of physics spread to psychology, with the Gestaltists insisting that humans behave towards the world as they selectively experience and interpret it; the reaction against one-sided determinism, with the organism responding as a whole in the unity of its integrated parts, with an element of behaviour being interpreted only in all its inter-relationships; the recent development of 'learning theory' and awareness that what had been learned can be unlearned; a growing interest in social groups, with group dynamics emerging as a new discipline; Lewin's wartime interest in the effectiveness of group decision and group change and his later research on a team approach and interdisciplinary collaboration; a mass of empirical studies in sociology and anthropology which threw new light on society and culture; various disciplines such as medicine and psychiatry tended to extend their boundaries and overlap with others, as they began to deepen and widen their understanding of the human organism in all relevant inter-relationships; and finally, all human decisions are permeated with values – in scientific inquiry as well as where knowledge joins practice and policy.

Amy Wheaton then examined eight implications for social work of this new intellectual outlook – for the development of social work theory; in unashamedly beginning with assumptions of value and deducing logical consequences from which hypotheses could be derived for testing experience; in being concerned with the human observer and the truly human way of perceiving and

responding to the world using the higher mental processes typical of a whole striving, aspiring person; in understanding the individual in relation to the individual's membership and reference groups and the way the person can be changed by modifying their group experience; in collaborating in research and service teams along the merging boundaries of professional disciplines, while retaining their own professional identities; in making much more use of learning theory – supervisors, students, and clients are all in learning situations; in clarifying concepts, avoiding jargon, and seeking to represent reality by at least the beginnings of a theory that is not only logical but meaningful; and finally, now that even the physical sciences began to deal with probabilities rather than absolutes and sociology and its methods could be regarded as respectable, sociology could provide a better basis for social work than a kind of psychiatry oblivious of the social field.

After these orienting scholarly reflections, Amy Wheaton turned to the practical problem of planning a social work curriculum:

Where should we begin to focus attention? On professional status or the requirements for a degree? Let us begin with the clients who are served, and served better, we hope, because social work has developed into a profession. Let us consider how they may interpret their problems and their needs in the situations in which they fail to solve their difficulties unaided, and the kind of help that can be offered. To understand our clients it is necessary also to know something of their social relationships and the sub-section of culture which has entered into their personality, regulated their behaviour and provided definitions of situations and desirable goals. It is necessary to know the values that motivate them. Help may come from personal strengths and potentials mobilized in the course of social interaction between social worker and client; from new knowledge, changing attitudes and a different way of interpreting the stress situation; from social services and other environmental sources of aid; or from the restructuring of the environment.

She then set down questions which a social work curriculum ideally should address:

Why, how, and when do people experience and manifest stress? What are the adequate and inadequate ways of meeting stress in a specific cultural context? What environmental and personal gaps exist between need and expectations, on the one hand, and opportunities on the other? What are the factors impeding expression of the creative spirit? What processes are involved in social interaction? How is the client-worker relationship regulated by ethical norms, and how can we explain the dynamics of this professional relationship through which change may be effected? How can people be enabled to attain security within themselves and in their relationships with others, to regain initiative and develop the motivation to reach out towards what is new and better? How can we enable families, groups and communities to modify their social structure and functioning as a means to more desirable ends? What are the desirable ends? Life itself, health and social welfare, love and fellowship, beauty, truth, the good that we do not explain scientifically? Are all these but steps to more ultimate values that have cosmic perspectives? How do people acquire their values, and what follows when codes conflict?

Amy asserted that some of the relevant data was already available in the findings of the biological, psychological and social sciences, social history, and the normative studies such as ethics and social philosophy – and also from allied professions, and from social work itself. Choice of subjects in a curriculum depended on their availability, but it was essential that biological, psychological, social and cultural representations of reality be included, ‘together with the integrating study of values’. ‘Social work is the most comprehensive of all professions and requires a correspondingly broad basis of knowledge’. All of the professional courses (dealing directly with social work practice) and the ‘background subjects’ continually offer opportunities for enlarging and integrating knowledge.

Amy Wheaton claimed that her social-psychological and sociological frame of reference had enabled her to find a common denominator in social work methods in the various fields and settings of social work. The latter part of the paper was devoted to the contribution of social anthropology to sociology; the relevance of sociological statistical and case study methods for social work; the sociological dimension of other professions, with examples from psychiatry and medicine; and Talcott Parsons’ sociological theory for the analysis of the structure and process of social systems, providing a basis for interdisciplinary cooperation and ultimately for a unified social science.

I listened to and subsequently read Amy Wheaton’s opening address, with particular interest:

- It reminded me of the social work education I had received at the University of Adelaide under Amy Wheaton.
- I remembered how incredibly under-resourced the course had been and her struggle to get academic recognition for it.
- I wondered how social work courses had fared elsewhere in Australia, especially if they had no sociological teaching, because I realised Amy was a pioneer in Australian sociology as well as in social work education.
- I regretted that my recent further education in England had not included more work in sociology and the other social sciences, in addition to politics and economics.
- If I aspired to head a social work course, I would need not only experience in social work practice, but relevant academic experience.

What Now?

At the end of November 1957, I heard from the University of Adelaide that the appointments committee for the position for which I had applied (reader or senior lecturer in social studies), did not expect to make a recommendation until early next year, and that I should feel entirely free of any obligation to the university arising out of my application. They expressed regret they had taken so long in reaching this decision.²⁸ Since I obviously realised the appointment was a long-shot, I had meanwhile been thinking about alternatives anyway. Trish and I were now expecting our first child early in 1958, so I had to give some thought to our financial future as well as my professional career path.

²⁸ Letter, V. A. Edgeloe to R. J. Lawrence, 27/11/57.

A Research Scholarship at the ANU and Other Possibilities

During the conference in August, Alison Player mentioned to me a new administrative job at 'Turana' in the Children's Welfare Department in Victoria where she worked, and she subsequently wrote to me about it. On 21 October, I wrote to her that I was still completely in the dark about the University post, but told her I had just applied for a research scholarship at the Australian National University. I had nominated my field of interest as social work, and my preferred topic for research as: the development of professional social work in the Australian setting, or the effects of social legislation on the development of Australian communities.

I doubt if I will get one of the scholarships because my interests are so unorthodox! If I did score one, I would spend the next 3 years at Canberra trying to make ends meet financially.

An alternative to this is for me to get further experience in the practical field. I will not stay in my present job if I decide to do this. If I stayed in it for five years and became a Senior Social Worker, I would reach the dizzy financial heights of £1,080 per year!

I then asked if she had any further details about the position at 'Turana'.

As you can see ... my present intention and hope is that I will stay in the social work field. I pray that I am right in doing so. My heart tells me that I am, but my head at times tells me that I am being a fool to inflict unnecessary financial limitations upon my wife and our children, as well as upon myself. At the moment I am rather unsettled, a phase which I hope will pass.²⁹

Alison Player responded:

... I would be very sorry to see you go into research or any other entirely academic work at this stage. You will be one of our leaders in Australia in the future in research or teaching or administration in its broadest sense, and we very badly need true leaders in the field of social welfare. My own conviction is that some solid years of practice are essential first.

I do wish you would come to Melbourne as there are jobs available which could lead to promotion and much wider opportunities before too long. In Melbourne there are really intelligent and able men in the field who would both welcome and give stimulation and support and help to bring about improvements in the whole social work scene. Len Tierney at Citizens Welfare Service, Ray Brown just come to the University, Mr Mathew Chief Probation Officer, are just a few people with whom you would enjoy working.

Her letter then told me there was now an unexpected good internal applicant likely to get the Turana job, but there was a vacancy for casework in the senior boys' section. The Child Welfare Department was likely to be reorganised and improved, and she was sure 'it will not be many years before the senior posts go to professionally trained people.' An able man already in the

²⁹ Letter, John Lawrence to Alison Player, 21/10/57.

Department would move upwards quickly, either in the institutional field or departmental administration field. In the former, she described enthusiastically her own work in establishing family group homes. Finally, she told me about vacancies in probation work. Mr Mathew was 'a fine man and would be good to work with'.³⁰ She, however, was strongly in favour of the Child Welfare Department possibilities, and was delighted she had joined the Department at a time of such opportunity.³¹

Subsequently Hamish Mathew wrote to me about a likely opening in his newly developed probation and parole service, and the good prospects for promotion. He would keep me posted if I thought I might be interested. Just the previous week, however, I had been to the National University to be interviewed for the scholarship.

I thanked Mr Mathew for writing and explained my situation:

My long-term aim at the moment is to get into one of the University Schools of Social Work, since ... I can perhaps make there my greatest contribution. At Canberra the appropriate authorities after some discussion gave their approval of my research topic, and ... I have been led to believe that the scholarship will be offered to me. My nominated topic for a PhD is a study of the development of professional social work within Australia.

You know, I think, the decision which faces me. I recognise my need for more experience in the essentially practical social work field, but on the other hand my next three years spent on doing a PhD would be productive from the following points of view:

- (a) The sort of study I am envisaging needs to be done soon while most of the pioneers are with us.
- (b) If it were done well it would be a useful contribution towards more enlightened policies in the future (the need to educate responsible opinion in our State is acute, as it no doubt is in most States).
- (c) A PhD never goes amiss in the academic field, but to get it takes time and financial sacrifice. If one has a family it is better to accept a lesser monetary return early in one's career.
- (d) My supervisors at the University would be Professor Borrie, and either Professor Hancock or his under-study.
- (e) The nature of my topic would require me to read very widely in the social work field (something which we all would like to do but can never find the time when holding down a hopelessly over-burdened field work job), and it would put me in close personal contact with all the leaders in the social work field in Australia, and provide a short-cut to some of their experience.
- (f) I can always get more practical experience in one of the fields of social work after I finish the thesis.

As you will no doubt have gathered, I have almost thought myself into going

30 She married him in 1958, leaving the Department but returning later to child welfare work.

31 Letter, Alison Player to John Lawrence, 27/10/57.

to the National University. We will be worse off financially than if I am in even one of the lower-paid social work jobs, but we both feel that in the long-run it will be worth it. If I do accept the scholarship, Trish and I and tiny baby would go to Canberra at about the end of February. My work will of course involve periods spent in each State. I am looking forward to seeing you again and having a chat.³²

After this letter to Mr Mathew, Alison Player was quite sure that I was making the right decision and hoped very much, for my sake and that of professional social work, that I would be granted the scholarship. Mr Mathew, although 'very disappointed' I would not be considering the position in the Penal department, agreed that I was making the right decision at this stage.³³ These were impressive people genuinely interested in my career, and not just recruiting for their particular neck of the woods. I was grateful to have their interest and sometimes wondered later what a different course my career would have taken if I had gone to Victoria and kept immersed in specific developing social work programs there.

Other social work colleagues also brought possibilities to my attention. At the end of November, I received a letter from Kate Ogilvie. Its main purpose was to send me belatedly a 'correct' version of her paper which she had promised, but she explained why it was delayed. She felt thoroughly ashamed she had not written 'long before this to say thank you personally ... for all the help and inspiration you gave us.' 'By the way I mentioned you to Professor Spann³⁴ and he said he is looking for a likely young man who is interested in administration and has an academic background in one of the social sciences. ... write to him if you are interested and mention my name'.³⁵ Professor Spann was 'quite interested' in the letter I wrote to him, and described the duties of the lecturer in public administration position which they might be advertising again early in the new year. If I was interested he suggested I might mention the names of one or two people who would speak on my behalf. 'It would be worth doing this now, even before we advertise'.³⁶ In early December, Vera Raymer wrote to me from Queensland enclosing press clippings on the likely development of probation work in that State, and suggested I might write to the State Attorney-General if this kind of work was of interest to me.³⁷ Another Queensland letter came in January 1958, from Professor Fred Schonell, Department of Education at the University of Queensland, prompted by Hazel Smith who headed the social work courses in the Department. He wondered whether I would like to take the opportunity of a year's university lecturing with the possibility of permanent appointment in his expanding department.³⁸

32 Letter, John Lawrence to Hamish Mathew, undated.

33 Letter, Alison Player to John Lawrence, 30/12/57.

34 Professor of government at the University of Sydney. Tom Kewley was a senior lecturer in his department.

35 Letter, Katherine Ogilvie to John Lawrence, 25/11/57.

36 Letter, R. N. Spann to Mr Lawrence, 16/12/57.

37 Letter, Vera Raymond to John Lawrence, 2/12/57.

38 Letter, Fred J. Schonell to John Lawrence, 20/12/57.

A Memorable ‘Confidential Reference’ Released to Me

I apologised to Harry Weldon, having to ask him again for a reference so soon, when I decided to apply for the ANU research scholarship in October 1957. He sent his testimonial to Canberra promptly, with the comment to me – ‘I hope you will be successful. After all in this queer world there is something to be said for having a PhD’. He added:

We are submerged here with 135 Freshmen. None of them except the black ones have recognizable faces yet – but I suppose we shall have them sorted out in time. Ken Tite seems very lively and relatively restored at present. We hope he will survive the next few weeks anyway.³⁹

His reference was, of course, confidential to the University, but in view of his subsequent death, the ANU gave me a copy of it, in May 1960. It read:

I consider Mr R. J. Lawrence a very strong candidate for a research scholarship at the Australian National University. Academically, he is a man of first class ability. He failed to get a First in his Final Honour School at Oxford, but, in view of his personal difficulties at the time, this was not very surprising. In fact he got a very good Second. I should certainly be prepared to recommend him strongly for an appointment here which would be equivalent to the one for which he is now applying in Canberra (i.e. a Senior Demyship at Magdalen, Studentship at Nuffield, etc.). I assume that his academic qualifications are known to you from other sources and I shall not go into them further here.

Mr Lawrence works very hard on subjects which arouse his interest, and he is drawn to the field work rather than to the analytical side of social studies. He is concerned more with people than with abstract problems. I have no doubt that he will do scholarly and valuable work on his branch of study if he is given the chance. His personal qualifications are first-rate. In Oxford he had a wide circle of friends, both in the Senior and Junior Common Rooms. He has travelled extensively in Europe and has wide general interests. He would be a most acceptable member of any academic society.

In conclusion, Mr Lawrence has a powerful conscience and can be relied on to do his best in any job he undertakes. He is scrupulously honest and impartial in pursuing his enquiries, and can express his results in a lucid readable form. I am confident that, if he is awarded a Scholarship, he will fully justify his election.

I obviously could not have wished for stronger support, but until I read this I was not aware that his support would have been so strong. Harry’s vague reference to ‘personal difficulties at the time’ could only have been to my involvement with Trish and I certainly had not experienced these as ‘personal difficulties’!

Before applying for the research scholarship, I had been told by the University:

A student is allowed some freedom in the choice of a research topic, but of necessity this freedom lies within the scope of the Department’s objectives, personnel and

³⁹ Letter, Harry Weldon to John Lawrence, 24/10/57.

research tools available. The offer of a scholarship does not imply any commitment as to the subject of research work to be undertaken.⁴⁰

'Australian History' was one of the subjects listed by the Research School of Social Sciences in the advertisement for the PhD scholarships. A pre-eminent historian, Professor Sir Keith Hancock,⁴¹ was now the director of the School which contained departments of demography, economics, history, law, political science and social philosophy. On 11 December 1957, the University invited me to Canberra for an interview on Tuesday, 17 December, paying my airfares and providing a night's accommodation at University House. I was told at the interview that they were interested in my application, but what was this thesis topic that I had nominated? By the time of the interview, I had clarified in my mind that there was only the one topic that I wanted to pursue – the development of professional social work in Australia. If this was considered not suitable, for whatever reason, I would have to re-think my next career step.

By extreme good fortune, the head of the Demography Department, Professor W. D. (Mick) Borrie, had some understanding of my proposed topic. In the war years, he had been teaching social history in the Department of Social Studies at the University of Sydney; it been a new development for a social work school to make such an appointment in one of the so-called 'background' subjects.⁴² After considerable discussion, it was indicated that I would be offered the scholarship and that Borrie and Hancock or someone else in the history department could be my supervisors, although I could obviously not expect supervision with expertise in my topic area.

Although most of the departments of the ANU were still housed in one-storied converted temporary buildings, University House was an impressive place, reflecting confidence in the university's future. Unmarried research students were expected to live in University House, and married students without children could also live there. For those with children, the University had a limited number of furnished flats available. While I was in Canberra for the interview, the housing officer Miss Harvey showed me a suitable flat that would be available if I was offered the scholarship.

Dr Robin Gollan, who in fact was to be my initial supervisor, wrote to me on 22 January, 1958. He had only just learned that I had not yet been offered the scholarship, but assured me that I should hear fairly soon. 'I am very glad that you have decided to accept when offered.' Just the day before, he had mentioned my project to Dr Morven Brown who was in Canberra. 'He is very interested and offered the maximum of assistance'.⁴³ I resigned from my social work position in CDSS as from 24 January. Finally, a letter on 10 February formally offered me the scholarship, conditional to my passing a medical examination. I let Professor Spann know, and also Dr Birch at the Enfield Receiving House

40 Letter, R. A. Hohnen, Registrar, to Mr R. J. Lawrence, 10/10/57.

41 See Vol. 1, p. 85.

42 R. J. Lawrence, *Professional Social Work in Australia*, ANU Press, Canberra, 1965, p. 119.

43 Letter, Robin Gollan to John Lawrence, 22/1/57. Dr Brown had been appointed director of the Social Work School at the University of Sydney in 1955, although he was not a professionally-qualified social worker.

where I had expressed some interest in a social work position. Professor Spann wished me success and hoped that we could keep in touch.

At last an unsettled period of considerable uncertainty was over, and an interesting challenging prospect lay ahead – at least for the next three years. It meant, however, uprooting ourselves from our very comfortable and familiar social existence in Adelaide, and making our way again amongst a group of strangers – and now we were three.

Our First Child

Our first child, David John, was born on 2 February, 1958, in the Blackwood Community Hospital. Starting a family had not proved to be plain sailing. Trish had experienced a miscarriage, and then David was three weeks late and presented bottom-first at birth. Fortunately, Trish coped admirably with the evolving situation. I remember Wilf Hudson saying as we waited for David, melodramatically and rather unhelpfully, 'It's like being on the edge of a precipice'. The local GP, Dr Russell did not want me to be present at the birth, in case of complications with a breech birth, so I waited at my parents' home. I was overjoyed when Trish rang from the labour ward to tell me that all was well with both her and our new son.

More than forty people sent us warm, enthusiastic messages on hearing about David's birth. Many wrote letters, seven sent telegrams, and almost half of them sent gifts for the baby. We even received a letter from Mrs Sowerby, from Marine Cottage at Encounter Bay, enclosing a small gift. She trusted that David would grow up a fine young man and a great comfort to us in our old age. NanNan Barker typically sent a cheque to start David's first bank account, and she also enclosed letters to her from Brian and Noel Stonier who were now in England, and from Janet Stonier, to give us up-to-date family news. Janet wrote a long letter to Trish from Chiton, where we had stayed briefly with her and Ken Stonier at the beginning of 1957, and reported on the progress of their young son Graham. Norah Godlee, a family friend from the Mothers and Babies' Health Association, sent congratulations and offered to send us a copy of the new edition of Benjamin Spock's *Infant and Child Care*. That proved to be a particularly helpful gift. Many of the letters wished us well for our time in Canberra. A letter from the Tregenza family, living in an ANU flat in Dominion Circuit, Forrest, Manuka, in Canberra, said how much they were looking forward to our arrival in Canberra. In the letters from the Gordons, the Butlins and Janet Stonier, they hoped that despite the delay in the birth we would still be able to see them in Melbourne on our way to Canberra. David was christened on Sunday 23 February, 1958.

Our Social Network

From 1956, we kept a record of the Christmas cards we sent overseas and locally. It was the standard way of maintaining contact, especially with the people we had got to know while overseas or were friends overseas. In 1956, our overseas cards, sometimes with a wedding photo (marked by an asterisk), went to:

People from Magdalen – the president Tom Boase, my tutors Harry Weldon, David Worswick, and Ken Tite, and fellow students Ken North*, John Orton and Joyce*, Jack Love*, Graham and Elizabeth Jeffries*, Norman Blake*, Frank Goodman, Guido Calabresi, Ivan Feltham, Bill Miller, Charlie Perlitz, Poss Parham, Paul Remmy, Tom Skidmore, Keith Tunstall, David Stout, and Joachim Classen.

Others in Oxford – the Grays, Bill Williams, John Silvester, Gus Sinclair, Dorothy Jefferson, Robin and Marie Ames*, and Astra .

People from our touring – Mrs Plum, Vic Miller, Sam Amarasuriya, the Ackers, the Van Steenis family, John English, and the Rowlands.*

Family friends – the Richards*, the Tancocks*, and the Whereats.*

Adelaide friends overseas – John and Dymphna Laurie, Dave and Jean Prest, and Beth and Rod Davies.

People from the staff of Tudor Hall where Trish taught for 2 years – Miss Inglis, Chris Dawes*, Miss Allerton, 'Hartie', Nergus Barucha, Carol, Miss Davy, Miss West, Lou Dorbar, Miss Sims and Lucienne.

Letters

In mid-December 1956, I also managed to get letters off to John Feltham, John Orton and the Jeffries. In November 1957, we received a letter from Lindsay Cleland, thanking us for a wedding present a couple of months earlier. His wife Sylvia was teaching at a local private school, and he was at a Victorian Education Department high school 'down the Bay a bit' in Melbourne. His first news on returning from his honeymoon was that the school had burnt down and it had been rather chaotic since. His postgraduate thesis was still being completed.

Norman Blake wrote on 13 December. His year in Denmark had gone very well. He had made a couple of short trips to Sweden and had a month in south Norway in the summer, but ended up with a month in a Danish hospital with gallstones. On his return to Oxford, he was doing the English-language teaching in Magdalen College, replacing Jack Bennett who had leave of absence for a year. It was very exciting though hard work. He was having to fill up all those gaps from his undergraduate days. Bennett wanted him to apply for a vacancy in Tasmania and go there in March 1959, but Norman was doubtful because of what he knew about the university. Did I know about conditions there? Norman had done a lot of work on his BLitt in Copenhagen preparing an edition of the saga of the Jomsvikings,⁴⁴ but was now finding it rather difficult with the teaching as well as his BLitt.

My views of the English are rather different after my return from Denmark and I'm beginning to think more along your lines, John. I got to be very fond of the Danes by the end of my visit – though I still recognise that they have very many shortcomings.

44 See N. F. Blake, *The Saga of the Jomsvikings*, Thomas Nelson and Sons, London, 1962, which is available on the internet. This a translation from the Icelandic with introduction, notes and appendices.

Norman urged me to try and write once or twice between Christmases.⁴⁵

We received a very lively letter from Madge Forsyth, written on 28 December. She had seen 'Salad Days', which we had told her about:

I still like my musicals slick, fast, American – so at last our musical tie up of tastes, diverges. I agree it's a charming whimsy. You must have been young, in love and nostalgic for Oxford and or England.

She had been introduced to 'an Italian pre-Bach bloke', who delighted her – Albinoni. She and her companion Mary had found some digs in London at 'a convenient location for theatre addicts, and are gradually settling down to a life of dissipation debauchery and dissociation from anyone or anything Australian'. She had not 'done' Oxford yet, but had loved the Cotswolds.⁴⁶

In a packed letter in January 1958, Graham Jeffries brought us up-to-date with his situation. Their first child, David Hamilton, born on 1/7/57, was 'a great delight' to them both. They were sharing a flat in Hampstead in London with an Australian couple, David and Audrey Penington⁴⁷ who had a child of 11 months, a very convenient arrangement. Graham was working at the Hammersmith Hospital, in its postgraduate medical school attached to London University. He had passed the membership of the Royal College of Physicians in July 1957. The atmosphere in the Hospital was 'very academic and stimulating'. In May, however, they were moving to the United States, rather earlier than he had hoped. The department of national service had decided he was no longer in the UK for educational purposes and so was eligible for two years' national service in the British army. He had secured a good job in the New York Hospital, starting on 1 July. After four years there, they might return to the UK for a time or return to New Zealand to see what was doing there. They had been to Oxford for a weekend before Christmas. Finally, Graham gave us news of Jack Love, Poss Parham, Alan Gordon, and Ken North, and asked for news of Duncan Anderson. Their initial New York address would be that of Elizabeth's parents.⁴⁸

In a rather dispirited letter after having 'rather mucked up' a couple of fellowship exams, David Stout wrote to us from Oxford on 8 January 1958, that he was 'itching to get back to a permanent post in Australia. Post-graduate persistent competitiveness in Oxford gets you down'. 'I'm surely tired of exams. I hope I never have to sit another, and can't see any reason why I should'. He hoped to finish his B Litt on disaggregation of investment function by April, and asked me to keep my ears open for any jobs in Eric Russell's economics department at the University of Adelaide. He gave us some news of mutual friends and sent a message of reassurance from their 8-month old Nigel to our about-to-be-born son.⁴⁹

Another letter from Oxford in January 1958 was from Eric Gray, the don at

45 Letter, Norman Blake to John and Trish Lawrence, 13/12/58.

46 Letter, Madge Forsyth to John and Patricia Lawrence, 28/12/57.

47 David Penington was dean of the faculty of medicine at the University of Melbourne 1978–85, and was the University's vice-chancellor 1988–95.

48 G. H. Jeffries to Mr and Mrs John Lawrence, 6/1/58.

49 Letter, David Stout to Mr and Mrs John Lawrence, 8/1/58.

Christ Church who came originally from Adelaide. The Grays were delighted to hear our news and that we were about to be three:

... I hope that you will find being a parent as exciting as we found it (each time!). ... I hope you do get exactly what you want in the line of work you have chosen. It must be a very satisfying thing to be involved in.

I've no doubt you are determined to bring up your family to be better behaved in the presence of visitors than ours was a couple of years ago! For all that we get a lot of fun out of them. ...

I often think nostalgically of the Adelaide hills – my favourite address at home. I hope you do live there if the job is to be in Adelaide ...⁵⁰

On her 21st birthday, Trish's parents gave her a block of land next door to Wingfield at Prospect. After her marriage, she sold this and bought a block at Belair in the Adelaide hills, so we could build there in the event of us settling in Adelaide. Next door to this block lived Andrew and Eleanor Wells, whom we got to know when visiting the block. Andrew was the 1941 South Australian Rhodes Scholar, going to Magdalen after his war service with the 9th Division of the AIF in New Guinea. In 1957, he was Assistant Crown Prosecutor in South Australia. (He was later a justice of the supreme court of South Australia 1970–84.)⁵¹ Eleanor Wells (née Jacobs) was a qualified social worker.

Another January 1958 letter came from John Laurie in Quebec. He and Dymphna were waiting to hear news of our 'very special event'. Nothing seemed to be on the way so far, for them – 'I guess it must be the Montreal air'. They, the Fotheringhams and the Blacks were very well. There was quite a recession in Canada, far worse than the usual winter slump. The same was true of the US, particularly in the massive auto industries, although the Sputnik had meant that scientific research was receiving unusual financial support to catch up with the Ruskiies. Now experiencing the coldest part of the Canadian winter, they often thought of warm sunny Adelaide. 'I was glad to hear that you found that you had not over-glamorised Adelaide during your absence in England'. Dymphna was still social working at the Protestant Family Welfare Bureau and from her co-workers he had heard that they would be very sorry to lose her. 'Of course the winter is just one wild scramble, especially now with widespread unemployment'.⁵²

On 23 February, 1958, Brian MacDonald wrote to congratulate us on David's birth, and urged us to put his name down for St Peter's College in case we wanted him to go there later on. He regretted that we had been unable to meet him since our marriage, despite attempts on both sides to bring this about. He hoped that we could keep in touch, however loosely, by letter and get together at last when we visited from Canberra.⁵³

A March 1958 letter from John Silvester also needs to be mentioned here, because it was a reply to our 1957 Christmas card and letter which he had

50 Letter, Eric Gray to John Lawrence, 25/1/58.

51 Ralph Evans (ed), *Register of Rhodes Scholars*, Rhodes Trust, Oxford, 1996, p. 126.

52 Letter, J. B. Laurie to R. J. Lawrence, 24/1/58.

53 Letter, Brian MacDonald to John and Trish Lawrence, 23/2/58.

only just received in London. We had sent them to his home in Nairobi, but he was back in England again. He hoped the new member of the Lawrence family had arrived without incident and was well and happy. 'Certainly no-one could hope for a nicer pair of parents!'

The social work sounds very interesting indeed. It is good to know that you find that the job suits you so well. What exactly does it involve? I agree that there is an immense field to be opened up in that type of work. We haven't got to that stage at home yet – the vital thing at the moment is to get what I suppose might be called the absolutely basic services going. When we can guarantee every child reasonable health and a chance of getting at least some education we will be able to turn to the other social services. But we are a long way from that at the moment. Do you have anything to do with prison and reformatory work?

John was continuing to enjoy life immensely in his own quiet way, although he was looking forward to getting home to Kenya and starting to earn some money for a change. He would finish eating his dinners at the Inner Temple by June ('what a ridiculous mediaeval survival the system is!'). He had already passed his Bar Exams so would be eligible for call to the Bar straight away and would be able to go home by the first boat he could catch. However, to be eligible for admission to the Kenya Bar he had to be in a firm for a year. A small but up-and-coming firm with pleasant people had offered him a job. He would be doing all the out-of-Court work for a year and so would be reasonably paid. But before he could start this work, he had to do six months of army training. In the meantime, he was attached to his pupil-master in Chambers in the Temple and was gaining valuable experience, mostly in industrial accident work.⁵⁴

Out Local Network

The local social network which we were leaving after about 17 months back in Adelaide, had consisted of family, old friends, and some newer ones. Local phone-calls as well occasional visits to each other for dinner, drinks or tea, had kept these relationships alive and well. It was not a frenetic social life, particularly since many of our younger friends were now married and beginning families, but it was very comfortable. A new feature was the social occasions connected with my work, but most of my social work colleagues were unmarried women and not in developing family situations. A notable absence was sport-related social activities which had been a significant feature of my earlier life.

Family

We maintained numerous family contacts with our respective families – with the Berrys and Mary Berry at Wingfield in Prospect, with Grannie and Maudie Berry at North Adelaide, with NanNan Barker at a nursing home in Fullarton, with Anne and Murray Gordon at 37 Alpha Road, Prospect, and with the John Barkers and their daughters at Glenunga; and with my parents and my sister Marg at their home in Sussex Terrace, Hawthorn, and with my

⁵⁴ Letter, John Silvester to John Lawrence, 27/3/58.

brother Jim, Sheila and Richard Lawrence at North Adelaide. Occasionally I had lunch with Dean Berry at the Adelaide club in the city. He was always good company, with his wide range of interests in contemporary and historical architecture, town planning, and horticulture, as well as family doings. In April 1957, we went to St Peter's Cathedral for the christening of Penny, Anne and Murray Gordon's first child. Murray had returned to his Australian Broadcasting Commission job and had transferred from the music department to the talks department and was doing well after his television training in England. In the beginning of 1958, they moved to Melbourne. We saw their great friends Peter and Erica Reade on 27 December 1957. They were back from London, for Peter to take up a lectureship in periodontia at the University of Adelaide. On 18 April, 1957, Trish's cousin Brian Stonier and his wife Noel, with their first child Simon, flew from Melbourne to stay with us over Easter – our first house guests.

My brother Jim completed his year as a lecturer in pathology at the University of Adelaide in 1956, and then in 1957 had a year as a registrar at the Royal Adelaide Hospital. He was working very hard in preparation for his examinations for membership of the College of Physicians. Our sister Marg was excelling in her economic studies in her Arts degree, and decided to discontinue further studies for the social work diploma. She topped economics 2 and economic statistics 1, and won the Economics Prize for top marks in economics 3 in 1957. She continued playing basketball (now netball) and tennis for the University, was involved in intervarsity competitions, and received a blue in basketball and club letters in tennis. By the end of 1957, she had started going out with Dean Southwood, a medical student. He was a cousin of my friend Dick Southwood. His father was a psychiatrist.

Other Social Contacts

During this period back in Adelaide, our social contacts apart from the family, included: Pauline Dick, Bob Reid,⁵⁵ Anne Fullerton and Peter Linklater, the Hudsons, Dean Rowney, Leigh and Jill Wilson,⁵⁶ the Calders, Geoff and Barbie Sharman, Jack Smart and his fiancée Janet, Miss Capper, Chris Ketley, John Reid, Ken and Judy Inglis, Anne and Derek Bolland, Lindsay Clelland, Don and Patsy Brebner, Ron Corney, John and Mary Cawte,⁵⁷ the Dowdings,⁵⁸ the Williamsons, the Marsdens, the Rambauts, Peter and Susan Morgan, Bruce Tidswell, Dick and Debbie Southwood, and Andrew and Eleanor Wells. In addition were social occasions with work colleagues – with Madge Forsyth before she left for overseas, with Pam Perrins and the other social workers in

55 He had returned from the USA to a lectureship at the University of Adelaide.

56 We attended their wedding at St Peter's College chapel on 8/2/57. I went to Leigh's bucks party on 5/2/57, and saw many old school friends.

57 John Cawte was deputy superintendent of Enfield Receiving House and a lecturer in psychiatry at the University of Adelaide. His case notes of his experience in the early 1950s survived. See John Cawte (1998), *The Last of the Lunatics*, Melbourne University Press, Melbourne. I had got to know him through my work with CDSS. Later, he became a professor of psychiatry at the University of New South Wales, with a special interest in aboriginal mental health.

58 They had returned from England. Alan spoke at a Saints old scholars lunch at Balfours on 3/12/57.

CDSS, including Lyra Taylor when she visited Adelaide, with fellow members of the professional association at its functions, and with departmental colleagues at the annual departmental social held in a ball-room and Christmas functions of departmental sections. Playing volley-ball with other staff of the Department also spread my social life although not at any great depth.

Meetings

My responsibilities with the AASW entailed regular meetings of the executive and of the conference planning committee, as well as attendance at the general meetings. Other work-related activities included attendance: at a meeting of the philosophy club and a lecture at the University when Professor Gilbert Ryle was visiting in October 1956, at end-of-year functions of the social science students' association, at a meeting of the South Australian Council of Social Service addressed by Dr Helen Mayo, at the state conference of the Good Neighbour Council, and at a meeting of the psychological association. On 2 April, 1957, I spoke to an old scholars' luncheon at Balfour's on my impressions of Oxford, and at 5.10pm delivered my first university lecture – to social science students in the subject called 'social organisation'. In September 1956, I had lunch with Dick Blackburn, joined the local branch of the association of Rhodes Scholars in Australia, and attended an association dinner at the Oriental Hotel on 5 August.



Above: Trish and John L outside Cathedral
Left: RJ and PD Lawrence, St Peter's Cathedral,
25 August 1956



Trish and John L, Anne Fullerton and Jim Lawrence
- to wedding reception



Cutting the cake (baked by Lucy L)



Granny Berry, Lucy Lawrence, Catherine & Dean Berry, and
Bob Lawrence - wedding reception



Honeymoon - on Bluff, Encounter Bay



'Pembleton', 13 East Terrace, Blackwood



Brownhill Creek, Adelaide Hills



*1956 Davis Cup - Memorial Drive, Adelaide
Australia (Hoad and Rosewell) v. USA*



Pam Perrins, Margaret Turner, John Lawrence, Madge Forsyth, Marjorie Kennedy, and Alison Edwards (Social Work Section, CDSS) - Madge's farewell, January 1957



Anne Fullerton, Trish and David Lawrence - at David's christening



*David Lawrence & his great-grandmothers
Barker and Berry*

Chapter 2

Researching Australian Social Work History

To Canberra via Melbourne

Very early on Thursday, 28 February, Trish and I with David asleep on the back-seat in a bassinette set off for Melbourne. David was three weeks old. I found that the Morris Minor could cruise quite comfortably at about 50mph, and we arrived at Anne, Murray, and Penny Gordon's home in Balwyn at 5.15pm. Their place was in an attractive area, and already Murray had done a lot of work in the garden.¹ We stayed with them for a week. On Saturday evening Ken and Janet Stonier came for a barbecue, and Johnny Stonier dropped in before going on to a dance. Next morning neighbours had us all in for a drink, and in the afternoon, we called on Unc and Auntie Mabel Butlin. Their garden had been transformed since I saw it shortly after they moved in about a year ago. They were looking forward to seeing my parents soon while in transit to Canberra. At 4pm, we went to a church in Malvern for the christening of Johnny and Helen Thwaites's second son, Richard. Trish was his godmother. We stayed on at their home after all the other guests had gone, and had a meal with them and Johnny's mother, chatting until about 10 pm – a most enjoyable occasion.

Alison Player and Hamish Mathew

On Tuesday, 4 March, Alison Player and her fiancé Hamish Mathew had Trish, David and me for the evening at Alison's home in Malvern.² Alison had just resigned from her job at Turana in the Child Welfare Department, and was being married to Hamish on 22 March. They had both offered their full cooperation in the research I was about to undertake.

Alison Player mentioned various people relevant for my research. Mrs Laurie O'Brien was a social historian doing some work in social work history. Greig Smith, secretary of the Victorian Institute of Almoners, the first training body for social workers in Australia, had knowledge of the beginnings, but was

1 Thanks to my medical friend Greg Williamson, his back was no longer troubling him.

2 See pp. 29–31.

failing somewhat. Betty Dow would know where the records were. Jocelyn Hyslop, an early director of the social work course, was now in a religious order in South Africa. Dorothy Bethune, another former director, was working part-time at the Royal Women's Hospital. Professor Boyce Gibson would know a lot about the early history of the social work course at the University of Melbourne. Marion Urquhart was national director of Red Cross Social Service. The war had given great impetus to its work and there was a lot of material in its national records. The Victorian Council of Social Service (VCOSS) would have information on the participation of social workers in community affairs. The Council was currently investigating the lack of resources for social work agencies. There was plenty of money for family agencies during the war because of the remarkable demands of the Forces. Post-war, social work organisations could hardly exist. The Citizen Welfare Service was struggling.

Hamish Mathew, head of the adult probation service in Victoria, observed that there were now not university-trained men in the New South Wales probation service, although its able head, Mr D. C. Swanson, was one. The NSW Child Welfare Department was providing training outside the university. Mr Mathew's university-trained men were much superior to others not university-trained. The Victorian Public Service Board now saw social workers as equivalent to science graduates.

Ruth Hoban

On Wednesday, 5 March, both Professor Ruth Hoban and Lyra Taylor also offered me the fullest cooperation in the research I was about to undertake. Ruth Hoban, whom I described to my family as 'very good quality',³ had recently married Professor Max Crawford, the professor of history at the University of Melbourne. She was very interested in my historical research and was willing to have me attached to the department when I was working in Melbourne. All of her department's records would be made available; she did not anticipate any limits would be placed by the University on the research material. Social organisation was in the social work course, but was not taught separately – 'what's in a name?', was her comment. Parents' occupations were recorded and there had been a change in the type of student.

After looking at the Beaurepaire Centre and Wilson Hall at the University, we had lunch, joined by two of her departmental colleagues – Dr Ray Brown and Alice Hyde. After schooling in Perth, Ray Brown had been educated in social work at the University of Melbourne and then Bryn Mawr in the US, before doing a doctorate in the UK at the University of Birmingham, where he lectured in the Department of Social Medicine, 1954–57. At our lunch, Ray Brown referred to two issues – the influence English almoning had had on Australian social work, and whether women swallowed psycho-analysis more readily than men. (He was appointed reader-in-charge of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Adelaide in 1959, and in 1965, professor of social administration at the new Flinders University in South Australia.)

3 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 6/3/58.

Lyra Taylor

During a ¾-hour visit to Lyra Taylor in central office of CDSS, she wondered if my task would be big enough! Australians were just not interested in this type of work. She had experienced lack of courtesy. My book would perhaps arouse some comment but would then be forgotten. However, she would give me full-est help. She suggested I write formally to the director-general for cooperation, including use of its departmental library run by Miss Cheeseman. She gave me the address of Ethel McGuire in Canberra, who had two small sons and a recent baby. Ethel had been the senior social worker in the Victorian office of CDSS for many years and had one of the most interesting minds in the social work field. Recently Lyra Taylor had been trying to help Mrs Marjorie Houston who had an 'enormous, hopeless job' in the ACT Department of the Interior. Social work needed broad vision, 'big' people.

Resuming Family Correspondence

On 6 March, I wrote to the family that all of my contacts in Melbourne had been excellent. This was resuming the regular correspondence my mother and I had maintained when we were away previously. 'At least our letters will not take so long to reach us as when we were in England, and altogether ... we won't feel as cut off from you all as we were then.' A new feature in my letters was a bulletin especially requested by my mother on the progress of David, our first child. That day, Uncle George Sutcliffe had rung from Canberra. Our things had arrived and we could move into our flat immediately.

Problems of Recording

A record of these discussions in Melbourne was in fact the first entry I made in my 1958 work diary, given to me as a parting present by CDSS colleagues in Adelaide. That diary with a full page for each day proved to be invaluable in keeping track of my progress. Without the benefit of short-hand or of a tape recorder, however, keeping a full and accurate record of what people told me was difficult. A further major problem was that photo-copying was not yet available, so when there was not a second copy of a document available that I could keep, I had to copy it by hand or settle for copious note-taking. As I spent hours just copying long-hand material I wanted, I thought of medieval monks copying their precious manuscripts! And there was the further problem that little of the material was indexed or organised for ready access – to say nothing of the material that had been lost or thrown out, or just not recorded in the first place.

CANBERRA⁴

When we arrived in Canberra in March 1958, construction on Lake Burley Griffin had not yet begun. 'Regatta point' was in the middle of paddocks of

4 The name is said to have come from the name of the indigenous people of the area.

grazing cattle. The (provisional) Parliament House, the War Memorial, the embassies and University House, completed in 1954, indicated this was more than just a country town, but most of its key cultural and civic landmarks – the completion of the lake (1963), the National Library Building (opened in 1968), the High Court of Australia building (1980), the National Gallery of Australia building (1982), the new Parliament House (1988), the National Museum of Australia building (2001), and the National Portrait Gallery of Australia building (2008) – were still to be built. The Menzies government had just established the National Capital Development Commission to give stimulus to the development of the nation's capital.⁵

The National Capital

The 1901 Constitution Act of the Commonwealth of Australia stated that the home for the national government should be within the State of New South Wales, not less than 100 miles from Sydney – within territory granted to the Commonwealth. The Yass-Canberra area was selected in 1908 as having adequate water supply, climate and landform suitable for a 'garden city', and land was set aside to form the Australian Capital Territory (ACT) in 1910. It was in the foothills of the Australian Alps, about 300km south-west of Sydney, about 670km north-east of Melbourne, and about 1160km east of Adelaide. The city site would be in the broad flood-plain of the Molonglo River with hills on the north side and low undulations in the south. In 1912, the American landscape architect Walter Burley Griffin from Chicago won an international competition for a city plan. A central artificial lake and a 'parliamentary triangle' dominated his plan. The surrounding residential areas had a geometric street pattern, circular and radial in shape. Construction began in 1913. In 1927, the Parliament House was opened and Canberra replaced Melbourne as the national capital and seat of government.

The growth and development of the city were hindered by the world wars and the great depression, and by planning disputes and ineffective planning bodies. Embassies and high commissions began to establish themselves in Canberra from 1936. In 1945, the population was only 13,000. By 1957, the year before we arrived, it had trebled to 39,000. By 1960, it was 50,000, and just six years later with an influx of departments shifted from Melbourne it had almost doubled to 96,000. The ACT was granted full self-government in 1988, when the population had grown to 270,000.

The Australian National University

Land was set aside for a university at the foot of Black Mountain in Griffin's plan for the capital. The Canberra University College (CUC) was established in 1930. It operated in association with the University of Melbourne and its students graduated with University of Melbourne degrees. Plans for a national university emerged as part of the post-war reconstruction. The primary function of the Australian National University (ANU), as laid down in the 1946

⁵ See 'History of Canberra', Wikipedia article on the internet.

Act, was 'to encourage and provide facilities for post-graduate research and study, both generally and in relation to subjects of national importance to Australia'. The idea of a university primarily for research and postgraduate training was pioneered in the United States at Johns Hopkins University, founded in Baltimore in 1876.

The organisation of the ANU was divided into the Institute of Advanced Studies (IAS) and the faculties (in the School of General Studies), but the latter were not established until 1960, when the CUC was amalgamated with the IAS. This amalgamation was being fiercely debated when I was a student in the IAS. It was feared that the essentially national research and graduate training nature of the ANU was being compromised. The School of General Studies would have undergraduate teaching as well as graduate teaching and research responsibilities. Manning Clark was the professor of history at the Canberra University College and attended the work-in-progress seminars of the doctoral students in the History Department of the IAS.

I was enrolled as a doctoral student in the Research School of Social Sciences (RSSS), one of the four foundation schools of the ANU. The other schools were the John Curtin School of Medical Research, the Research School of Physical Sciences, and the Research School of Pacific Studies (RSPS). Each school had a number of departments. RSSS had seven – demography, economics, history, law, political science, social philosophy, and statistics. RSPS had departments of anthropology and sociology, far eastern history, geography, international relations, and Pacific history.

In a general description of the University, reprinted from its 1957 Calendar, the work of each of the University's schools was briefly described. I noted considerable overlap in the work of many of the departments of these two schools, particularly when the focus was on Australia. The only specific references to sociology as such were in the statements of the departments of social philosophy and of anthropology and sociology. The former department was focused on 'modern political and social theory', but intended to 'develop further research into the history of philosophical and sociological theory, especially in the nineteenth century.' The latter, despite its name, was primarily focused on anthropological field-work with just a mention of 'some inquiries ... into sociological problems within European Australia'. The history department was 'concerned with the study of history and the application of historical method especially as these throw light on contemporary problems of the Social Sciences.' Its work at present was 'limited to Australian history, with particular emphasis on the growth of a distinctive Australian society during the last hundred years.' Some expansion of this scope was likely following the arrival of Sir Keith Hancock.⁶ (As already mentioned, Professor Hancock arrived as Director of RSSS and head of the History Department in 1957.)

The permanent laboratories for the Research School of Physical Sciences and the permanent buildings for the John Curtin School of Medical Research were complete, but the other two research schools and the library were still located

6 The Australian National University, *A General Description of the University*, (reprinted from the 1957 Calendar of the University).

in temporary buildings, originally occupied by the Canberra Community Hospital. The University site was 204 acres in the Canberra suburb of Acton at the foot of Black Mountain. The University's academic staff numbered 110 in 1957, and there were about 70 research students.⁷

Conditions of the Research Scholarship

Initially for two years, the scholarship could be renewed for a third year. A living allowance of £793 per annum was paid, with an additional £200 per annum for a married scholar with one child. The allowance was paid fortnightly from when the scholarship was taken up in Canberra. Some assistance was paid for travel and movement expenses. There was an allowance for a scholar for research work away from Canberra, but not for an accompanying wife or family. The scholarship was exempt from Australian income tax. Scholarship holders were exempt from paying an inclusive fee of 50 guineas per annum for admission, tuition and graduation.

The principal work of a research student was the pursuit of an approved piece of research under supervision, and the submission of a thesis based upon that research. There was usually an oral examination. It was stated that a student was given training in the research techniques required for the pursuit of his subject, and opportunities for considering the relationship of his specialized work with a more general background of theory. The nature of my particular subject made this difficult, however. I, in fact, received no specific training in research techniques and my supervisors were not well versed in some of the general background of what might be seen as relevant theory, for example, occupational sociology, or occupational histories. Once I was under way, I discovered, for example, that there was only one other Australian study of a profession – by R. D. Goodman, *Teachers' Status in Australia*, PhD thesis, Australian National University, 1955.

My Supervisors

On 23 May, 1958, the board of graduate studies approved my admission as a research student for the PhD degree in the Department of History under the supervision of Dr Gollan. My course of study would be for nine terms from 7 March. The board approved my proposed topic of research 'The development of professional social work in Australia'. On 8 July, the board approved the appointment of Professor Borrie and Mr Parker as joint supervisors with Dr Gollan. Dr George Zubrzycki was also added when Professor Borrie went on study leave to Princeton in 1959.

7 *The Australian National University: a brief account of the foundation, academic structure and purpose of the University*, August 1957.

Robin Allenby Gollan⁸

Bob Gollan was born in 1917, on the day news reached Australia that General Allenby's Australian Light Horse had taken Jerusalem. Both of his parents were of Scottish descent. Two of his brothers were school teachers, one of them becoming a high school principal despite being a leading member of the Communist Party of Australia. Bob attended a single-teacher bush school. His final two years of high school were at Fort Street in Sydney. From 1936, he did an honours degree in arts at the University of Sydney, helping to form a branch of the Communist Party and sharing the history medal with John Ward. After teacher training, he taught in New South Wales schools for three years. He was a flight lieutenant, a bomber navigator, serving for three years in the Royal Australian Airforce. Early in 1944, he escaped certain death when a friend replaced him on an operation so he could take a few days' leave with his family.⁹ After the war, he lectured at the Sydney Teachers College while completing a masters degree on the development of class relations in Australia. On a scholarship at the London School of Economics and Political Science (LSE), he extended his research in a doctoral thesis supervised by Harold Laski. He resumed teaching at the Sydney Teachers College in 1951. The ANU offered him a research fellowship in Canberra, where he, Daphne, and their two children settled in 1953. The University resisted pressure from ASIO to block his appointment. According to Stuart Macintyre,

Bob flourished in the Research School of Social Sciences, especially after Keith Hancock returned from London to direct it. The two men differed in their politics but shared a common enjoyment of bushwalking and fishing; Hancock valued the younger man as a historian of 'great integrity' and arranged for him to write a history of the Commonwealth Bank.

Gollan was promoted to senior fellow in the Research School in 1960. His first book, *Radical and Working Class Politics*, was also in 1960. He became a senior figure in the study of labour history in Australia. In 1957, he had left the Communist Party after the Soviet invasion of Hungary and Khrushchev's acknowledgement of Stalin's atrocities. 'I joined the party in 1936 because it seemed to me the only party fully committed to a struggle for socialism against fascism. I left it, with regret, in 1957, because this no longer seemed to be the case'. Macintyre commented:

This release from the dogmas of communist orthodoxy made it possible for intellectuals such as Bob to work with others of different ideological temper, and the abandonment of old certainties encouraged them to explore aspects of labour history with a new curiosity.

After Hancock's retirement in 1967, Bob Gollan found the Research School

8 The following account is drawn from Stuart Macintyre, 'Obituary: Robin Gollan (1917–2007)', *Labour History*, Vol. 94. Macintyre wrote this while at Harvard in the chair of Australian Studies. Since 1991, he was the Ernest Scott Professor of History at the University of Melbourne.

9 Alan Ramsay, 'Old warrior falls before final battle', *Sydney Morning Herald*, weekend edition October 20–21, 2007, p. 37.

'uncongenial'. He finished his academic career as Manning Clark Professor of History at the ANU, 1975–81. In his obituary of Bob Gollan in 2007, Macintyre described him as:

... an instinctive internationalist ... He was always pressing new books onto friends and colleagues. His mind was incisive and cut through cant. He was not impressed by academic preening His voice was seldom raised, though instances of bullying or humbug roused him. Above all, his patent decency and sincerity made him a bridge for scholars and activists seeking guidance and support; and through his own scholarship he created the bridge that allows us to understand his generation of activists.

I experienced Bob Gollan as a genuine scholar, and an encouraging, supportive supervisor, although he and other supervisors had little direct knowledge of my topic. He never made direct reference to his own personal history, but his concerns for the well-being of other human beings and for social justice were obvious.

In 2005, at the age of 87, he received a medallion and a letter from John Howard marking the 60th anniversary of the end of the war. He was thanked for his part in protecting 'the Australian way of life in times of conflict' and for helping to build 'our community in times of peace'. Bob Gollan responded with an angry letter to *The Canberra Times*. He wondered how those who had lost their lives defending their country would feel about John Howard's Australia. He acknowledged that most people were materially better off.

We have shared in the bounty of the one-fifth of the world which has become rich. But we have become a country governed by lies and fear.

John Howard has surrendered the self-reliance for which we fought, to curry favour with the most dangerous military power in history. He has stoked the fear of terrorists who may target us because of his fawning subservience to US President George Bush. He boasts he stands for mateship and egalitarianism at the same time he attempts, by industrial relations 'reforms', to destroy the institutions on which those qualities have been nurtured.

Yes, we would not have survived (World War II) without the American alliance. But the Americans I served with believed correctly, we were defending a great democracy. Today the alliance, for which Howard and his coterie are prepared to sell our soul, is a militaristic plutocracy.

I'm sorry, Ivan¹⁰

I was fortunate to have had Bob Gollan as my main supervisor. The other three provided critical comments at times along the way, but it was Bob who carried the main supervision responsibility perhaps because I was enrolled in the Department of History. He seemed genuinely interested to help me find out about the development of professional social work in this country. This would have been difficult if he had not left behind his early radical political views; there was no need for professional social work in radical socialist thinking.

10 Ivan Barber was the West Australian wheat farmer who had died when he had replaced Bob on a fatal flight of his Beaufort Bomber. This letter is contained in Alan Ramsay's article in footnote 9.

W. D. 'Mick' Borrie

As already mentioned,¹¹ by great good fortune, Mick Borrie was on my selection committee for the scholarship, and I suspect that it was he who persuaded the others that my proposed topic was acceptable, despite the obvious difficulty of providing relevant supervision.

Mick Borrie, born in New Zealand in 1913, settled in Australia in 1941, after education in New Zealand and at Cambridge. He then taught social history in the Social Studies (Social Work) Department at the University of Sydney for a number of years until an ANU social science research fellowship enabled him to spend the 1947–48 academic year at LSE. His book *Population Trends and Policies: A Study of Australian and World Demography* was published and he became in 1948 research fellow in demography, the first appointment in the ANU's new School of Social Sciences. In 1952, he founded its Department of Demography, heading it as reader and then as professor in 1957. This was literally the first demography department and demography chair in the world. In due course it became the largest graduate demography program in the world, training hundreds of Asian and African demographers as well as Australians. Borrie himself was a leading member of the International Union for the Scientific Study of Population, and served as chairman of the United Nations Population Commission, 1965–69. In Australia, Borrie served on Australian government bodies concerned with population and immigration. He became widely known as chairman of Australia's National Population Inquiry, 1970–78.

In addition, Borrie played a significant role in the development of the social sciences more generally. He served as foundation president of the Sociological Association of Australian and New Zealand, 1963–64, was a founding member of the Academy of the Social Sciences in Australia and its chairman, 1962–64, founded the Department of Sociology at the ANU in 1962 and was its acting head, 1965–68, was director of the ANU's Research School of Social Sciences, 1968–73, and was president of the Australian and New Zealand Association for the Advancement of Science, 1975–76.¹²

In 1957, the research of the ANU's Demography Department was described as being:

concerned with historical and social studies of population movements as well as with the more formal statistical aspects. In area, the main focus has been upon Australia, New Zealand and the Pacific Islands, but subject to adequate material being available it is not intended that research should be restricted to these zones.¹³

While at LSE, Borrie had got to know 'the group of brilliant students of population whom the then Director of the School, Alexander Carr-Saunders, assembled in the Population Investigation Committee'. David Glass was reader in demography at the time. In a posthumous tribute to Glass, who became a

11 See p. 23.

12 Jack Caldwell, 'Professor Wilfred D. (Mick) Borrie, 1913–1999', International Union for the Scientific Study of Population.

13 The Australian National University, *A General Description of the University*, (reprinted from the 1957 Calendar). See p. 33.

member of the British Academy, Borrie stated:

(Glass) did not set out to test any grand theory or even middle range theory, but was concerned to measure, record and explain. He set down his findings in immaculate prose, with a neat balance of illustrative material and with every significant fact fully documented.

Borrie's own style of work in population studies was modelled on Glass, concentrating on historical and sociological aspects.¹⁴

Jerzy (George) Zubrzycki

When Mick Borrie went on study leave as a visiting professor to Princeton University, 1959–60, George Zubrzycki was appointed a co-supervisor for my thesis. In 1955, Borrie went to LSE to interview candidates for a research fellowship in his department at the ANU. David Glass, then a professor of sociology and secretary of the Population Investigation Committee at LSE, recommended his former graduate student Zubrzycki for the appointment. In 1956, George Zubrzycki and his family settled in Canberra and George started his very long career as an academic at the ANU and his participation in various organisations and government bodies.

Zubrzycki was born in Krakow, Poland, in 1920. He was at school with Karol Wojtila, the future Pope John Paul 11, and was invited by him in 1994 to join the Pontifical Academy of Social Sciences that advised him on various aspects of social doctrine. After a year's compulsory military service, he was sent to the front to fight the invading Germans. Taken prisoner in September 1939, he escaped and served in the Polish underground, being evacuated to Britain in June 1940 after the French surrender. He was assigned to the Polish Parachute Brigade under the Special Operations Executive, which suffered very heavy losses because of the very risky and daring nature of its operations. He received an MBE for his part in a particularly daring operation which smuggled out of German-occupied Poland a German V2 warhead. With the Iron Curtain blocking his return to Poland after the war, he turned to university study at the LSE, completing his BSc and MSc (Econ), followed by a doctorate at the Free Polish University in London. His masters and doctoral dissertations were on migration and population dynamics. His years at the LSE were formative for George:

In the late 1940s and early 50s, the School became a crucible of the most influential ideas that shaped the post-war era. It carried strong traditions of the Fabians' socialism, who founded the School, combined with the liberal philosophy of Friedrich Hayek and Karl Popper. George was most impressed by the libertarian spirit of freedom permeating academic debates, as well as the accompanying commitment to social justice and individual responsibility. This moral-philosophical orientation became a trademark of Zubrzycki's subsequent academic work on migrant experience and social adaptation.¹⁵

14 Jerzy Zubrzycki, 'The Borrie Legacy: a foundation for an Australian Population Policy', the Borrie Lecture, 10th biennial conference of the Australian Population Association, Melbourne, 2000.

15 Jan Pakulski, 'Vale Jerzy Zubrzycki', Academy of the Social Sciences website, 2009.

In 1965, Zubrzycki became a professorial fellow in sociology in the Institute of Advanced Studies at the ANU, and from 1970 until his retirement in 1986 was its foundation professor of sociology. He was president of the Sociological Association of Australia and New Zealand, and editor of *The Australian and New Zealand Journal of Sociology*, 1964–70, but ‘migration and migrant social adaptation remained his major academic preoccupation’. He was chairman of the Australian Ethnic Affairs Council, 1977–81, and on the Council of the Institute for Multicultural Affairs, 1980–86. He played an important part in ‘multiculturalism’ being accepted by all Australian governments since the 1970s, but in a radio broadcast not long before his death in 2009, I heard him regret that he had not insisted on a concept like ‘multiculturalism within a framework of shared values’.

I first became aware of George Zubrzycki from his thoughtful contributions on the ABC ‘Notes on the News’. It is obvious from this brief sketch of his life, that I was fortunate to be having someone with his particular extraordinary experience as a co-supervisor in the later stages of the thesis. As with Borrie, I appreciated the general historical, sociological and demographic insights he could bring to bear on my own writing and in our discussions. Both Borrie and Zubrzycki were active in the Canberra community as well as nationally and internationally. Borrie chaired the board of the Canberra Community Hospital, and Zubrzycki was president of Life-Line in Canberra, 1976–80.

R. S. Parker

Bob Parker was a reader in the Department of Political Science headed by Professor Leicester Webb. Born in Sydney in 1915, he attended Sydney Boys High and the University of Sydney, where he completed a masters degree in economics. He did well in a supplementary option on public administration taught by F. A. Bland, who secured for him a full-time scholarship to do his master’s project on public service recruitment in Australia. He originally wanted to enrol in an arts degree concentrating on languages and literature, but instead used his university exhibition to enrol in economics to further his career in the State Bureau of Statistics and Economics.¹⁶ In 1938, and again in 1946–47, he was a lecturer in public administration at Canberra University College. He was in New Zealand during the war years; he lectured at the Victoria University College, served in the New Zealand airforce, and was a New Zealand Public Service Commissioner 1943–45. The ANU appointed him as a research fellow, 1947–49. He returned to New Zealand 1949–53 as professor of political science and public administration at the Victoria University College. His readershipship at the ANU commenced in 1954. From 1963 to 1978, he was professor of political science in the RASS. In 1957–58, Bob Parker was a member of the committee of inquiry into Commonwealth Public Service Recruitment. 1963–64 he was president of the Australasian Political Studies Association. During the 1960s and early 70s, he had an active interest in the

16 R. L. Wettenhall, ‘Intellectual Stance: R. S. Parker’, *Australian Journal of Public Administration*, Vol. 39, September 1980, p. 269.

development of public administration in Papua New Guinea.¹⁷

Bob Parker was a great lover of music and an enthusiastic supporter of Musica Viva Australia. He helped as a co-supervisor in the early stages of my research, but was away in 1960.

Flat 11, Block 8, Bega Flats, Reid, ACT

We arrived in Canberra in the mid-afternoon on Friday, 7 March, after a 12-hour drive from Melbourne. We collected the flat keys from Rev Cecil Warren at St John's rectory. He and his wife, unknown to us, were in Oxford at the same time as we were. They provided us with a map of Canberra to enable us to find the Sutcliffes' home in Dominion Crescent for dinner the next evening. The Sutcliffes lived in a very comfortable home and George had done a great deal to the garden. We met Wendy, their 18-year old daughter, before she went off to a barbecue. During the evening I played the piano, George sang, and we listened to a few of his long-playing records. David slept peacefully throughout it all. This was the first of many very pleasant evenings with them.

Our removalists, Mitchells, had unpacked our belongings randomly. We had taken the flat unfurnished. By Thursday, 13 March, the curtains had been hung and the chaos had been organised into a comfortable, workable home. The rooms were pleasant. Being on the third floor, each had a reasonable view, with the view from the living room being delightful. In the foreground was a large, flat, park-like area, very green and studded with trees. Just to the left of the windows was a large clump of trees which would lose their leaves revealing a splendid unbroken view of blue mountains in the distance. In the middle distance were gum-studded hills, and city hill planted with clumps of cypruses to give a Mediterranean effect. On the right was Civic Centre, the main shopping centre (there were two others almost as large), whose lights we saw in the evening. Facing west, we got the full benefit of spine-tingling sunsets. We both felt we could be very happy in these surroundings. Many people lived in these huge blocks of flats, but we did not find the communal living intrusive on our lives, except perhaps in the laundry where the availability of line space determined washing times. With a young child who sometimes bellowed, we were thankful that the concrete walls made the flat reasonably sound-proof.

George Sutcliffe

As already mentioned,¹⁸ George Sutcliffe was my father's cousin. He was a man of considerable substance and had been awarded a CBE in 1956. We were grateful for his initial help in Canberra, and Trish and I came to know him and his wife Beatrice (Auntie Trice) very well, although they were of my parents' generation. Born in Melbourne in 1895, George was the son of a prison warder. Educated in state schools, he was employed as a telegraph messenger in the Commonwealth's PMG Department in December 1909. After service in the Australian Army Postal Corps in England and France during the war, he

17 'Parker, Robert Stewart', *Who's Who in Australia 1996*, p. 1238.

18 See Vol. 1, p. 341.

worked in the accounts branch of the PMG Department. With part-time study at the University of Melbourne, he gained his BCom. degree in 1931. He was general president of the Commonwealth Public Service Clerical Association, 1938–43. In 1946, he was promoted to assistant-secretary in the Department of Supply and Shipping. He represented the Commonwealth on the Stevedoring Industry Commission, and served on the Australian Shipping and Australian Shipbuilding boards. Briefly, he was permanent head of the Department of Shipping and Fuel before his appointment in November 1948 as commissioner of the Public Service Board.

In Canberra, George was a 'splendid public speaker with a delicate sense of humour', a leader in the Canberra rostrum club, president of the Royal Canberra Golf Club, 1951–54, a warden at St John's Anglican church, 1955–61, and from 1961 until his death in 1964, a councillor of the diocese of Canberra and Goulburn. In 1950, he represented the Public Service Board at the inaugural meeting of the ACT Good Neighbour Council. He chaired the council, 1951–54. 'His contacts, organizational skill, and calm demeanour proved invaluable in establishing the council and reconciling the competing interests of its constituents.' On his retirement from the public service in 1960, he was appointed commonwealth coordinator of good neighbour councils. According to his biographer, 'Sutcliffe was a sincere, unassuming, conservative and widely respected man.'¹⁹

Down to Work

On Thursday, 13 March, I went to the Department of History, where I was sharing a room with John Tregenza, and had my first session with my supervisor Dr Gollan. It was a pleasure to be sharing with John, but I found I could get more done by mainly working at home and this had the bonus of being at hand if Trish needed any help with David. John and Jean Tregenza were Adelaide friends. Both were keen scholars. John's master's thesis was on Australian little magazines 1923–54. His doctoral research was on Charles Henry Pearson (1830–94), the British-born Australian historian, educationist, politician and journalist, whom he described as 'the outstanding intellectual of the Australian colonies'. In a book just before his death, Pearson made two main predictions: the so-called 'higher races of men, or those who are held to have attained the highest forms of civilisation' would in a few decades find themselves 'elbowed and hustled and perhaps even thrust aside' by people whom they had assumed to be innately servile (China had the potential to become one of the world's most formidable powers), and in English-speaking and European countries the state would increasingly take over the traditional roles of family and church, with most people living out meaningless lives in huge, orderly, dull cities.²⁰

After my session with Dr Gollan, I reported to the family:

-
- 19 Hilary Kent, 'Sutcliffe, George Gribbon (1895–1964)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Melbourne University Press, Volume 16, 2002. My father's second name was also 'Gribbon'.
- 20 John M. Tregenza, 'Pearson, Charles Henry (1830–1894)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Melbourne University Press, Volume 5, 1974. This was based on his book *Professor of Democracy: the Life of Charles Henry Pearson 1830–1894*, Oxford Don and Australian Radical, Melbourne, 1968.

Dr Gollan is a very approachable chap – his interest is mainly political history, particularly left-wing politics. From what I can see, my time will be almost completely my own and I can work wherever I wish to. ... These coming three years promise to be quite different from the last 15 months or so. The quiet, semi-isolation of research is a far cry from the hurly-burly of a practical social work job.²¹

Late afternoon on 13 March, I went to Professor Hancock's house, with two other research scholars, to meet him for the first time – he was laid low with a Canberra bug. He confirmed that Dr Gollan would be my supervisor, and Professor Borrie in demography and Professor Webb in political science, would be consultants. In a few weeks, I would be expected to present a draft of proposed work to a seminar for criticism.

Bob Gollan told me that Morven Brown, now professor of sociology at the University of New South Wales, wished to know whether I would be interested in helping with the findings of a survey of social workers. It might be a convenient starting point for my work, but the material was still in its raw state when Morven Brown had moved from being the head of the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney. I was told there was some urgency in the matter.

Basic Reading in Australian History

My first task, however, was to read in Australian history, which was to provide the context for my own work. As has been indicated, my education to that point had not included a great deal of Australian history, although my honours thesis at the University of Adelaide had been on an Australian topic. Bob Gollan provided me with a reading list: books by W. K. Hancock, Brian Fitzpatrick, A. G. L. Shaw, R. M. Crawford, T. A. Coghlan, and C. M. H. Clark; books edited by Gordon Greenwood and by C. Hartley-Grattan; and PhD theses by J. M. Cairns and Ronald Mendelsohn; and the journals *Journal of Philosophy and Psychology* (Sydney University), *Historical Studies* (Melbourne University), and *Politics and History* (Queensland University). Appropriately I started with reading and noting Hancock's seminal *Australia* – 'a vigorous, confident book', according to my work diary. Being expected to read whole books and having time to do it was one of the joys of my new 'work'.

Social Work Reading

On 10 April, Trish reported to my mother, 'John seems to be getting into his work and feels happier now he's reading books directly on the subject instead of 'background' books.'²² In fact, there were as yet no Australian secondary sources on my subject, and very few on the development of Australian social welfare services in which professional social work was embedded. For Britain, however, I had the benefit of reading Elizabeth Macadam's *The Social Servant in the Making: a review of the provision of training for the Social Services*, George Allen and Unwin, London, 1945. This was an update of her earlier

21 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 15/3/58.

22 Letter, Patricia Lawrence to Mrs Lawrence, 10/4/58.

The Equipment of the Social Worker. Her work was the only survey of the development of the movement for training social work in Britain from about 1890. (As joint honorary secretary of the Joint University Council for Social Studies and Public Administration for 25 years when she wrote in 1944, she was strategically placed to write about the British training movement.) Another book, published in 1950, *Social Case-Work in Great Britain*, edited by Cherry Morris, remarkably was the first British contribution to the social case-work literature. Among the many American social work publications, I found the following helpful at this early stage of my reading: Edith Abbott's *Social Welfare and Professional Education*, published in 1931, with a new edition in 1942; Frank Bruno's *Trends in Social Work 1874–1956 – a History based on the Proceedings of the National Conference of Social Work*, published in New York in 1957; Herb Bisno's *Philosophy of Social Work*, 1952; and David French's *An Approach to Measuring Results in Social Work*, 1952.

Our Early Social Life

Our social life was quickly under way. On Friday, 14 March, we went to David and Noel Hayman's for dinner. They were friends from Adelaide and gave us a very warm welcome. Noel was one of Trish's original friends from the Wilderness School. David had completed his PhD at the University of Adelaide and was working on plant genetics in the CSIRO in Canberra. We had Duncan Anderson and his Swedish fiancée Ruth to dinner on Saturday, 15 March, and Ray Greet spent the evening with us. On his return from Oxford, Duncan had joined the Department of External Affairs. He, Ruth and Ray enjoyed getting out from the hostel environment where they were all living. Trish and I dug into our European trip diaries and read the Swedish bits to Ruth, which pleased her greatly. Ray was a football friend from the University of Adelaide, and had also joined the Department of External Affairs.

On Sunday, 16 March, we had afternoon tea with Jim and Marjorie Houston, a young couple living in the top flat one staircase along. Jim was a teacher at Queanbean High School, and Marjorie was the Department of the Interior social worker mentioned to me by Lyra Taylor. She told me of a group of social workers who met every other month. It was not a body of the AASW, although many of them belonged to branches of the association. Hazel Dobson in the Immigration Department was hardly getting anywhere. Marjorie felt frustrated – by what she called 'the ignorance of 'responsible' people', but she herself did not get a clear idea of social work from the Sydney University course – had kept on being told it was difficult to define. The Houstons were a friendly, likeable couple.

On Tuesday, 18 March, we had dinner at the Tregenzas' flat. Next evening, our neighbours the Houstons, with a friend, viewed some of our slides. Ray Greet dropped in for the evening on Thursday, 20 March, and we hoped that he would always feel at liberty to do so. Listening to our records was a strong mutual interest. I had joined the World Record Club and was slowly building up my collection. On 21 March, Trish and Jean Tregenza spent the evening in a group of university wives.

Migration Literature

I had my first session with Professor Borrie on Friday, 21 March. I should see Miss Ogilvie and Miss Parker in Sydney, and also Tom Kewley, who had written on social services and should be able to help with reading suggestions. Ron Mendelsohn should also be able to help with reading matter. Scarcely any work of a sociological nature had been done in the last 30 years in Australia. Borrie mentioned migration literature and his book *Population Trends and Policies*. Australian post-war policy was contained in Calwell's speeches in Hansard, 1945–49. Child migration had been 'almost a complete wash-out numerically'.²³ Australians were fallacious in thinking that because they had a basically egalitarian society, voluntary societies were not needed. Borrie was trying to get an almoner appointed at the Canberra Hospital. Social workers and nurses were under-paid.

A Family Visitor

We were very pleased to have our first family visitor, my sister Marg, on the weekend 22–23 March. She was on her way back to Adelaide from Sydney, having spent a very productive week in the Commonwealth Bank on her honours economics thesis topic, 'The entry of the private banks into the savings bank field'. She had worked with Mr Menzies, the head of the Savings Bank in Sydney, and with Jack Turnbull, a very bright bank officer whom my father had trained in securities work in Adelaide. My father was delighted when Marg had chosen her thesis topic in the area of banking. In recognition of his long service, the Commonwealth Bank had actually employed her for a period while she was collecting her thesis data. In Sydney, Marg had stayed at the Women's College. After a lively discussion with students at the University, Marg commented that the Sydney social studies students seemed far more advanced and 'scientific' in their work than their counterparts in Adelaide. On Sunday, 23 March, Marg and I attended the annual university service at St John's, and afterwards called in on Uncle George Sutcliffe. In the afternoon, guided by David Hayman, we drove around Canberra. We thought it was an interesting and attractive place and hoped Marg would pass this on to the rest of the family to lure them for a holiday.

Another Family Visitor

Trish's father Dean Berry stayed with us over the Easter period, 3–8 April. He

23 Thankfully, not more children were involved in it. In fact, the British child migration program was disastrous for many of the people involved, and this was eventually exposed in 1987, by a British social worker Margaret Humphreys. Under the program about 7,000 poor British children in institutions were resettled after the war until 1970 in Australia, often without the knowledge of their parents. In 1989, a British Parliamentary Select Committee of inquiry criticised the policy in general, and particularly certain Roman Catholic institutions in Western Australia and Queensland, where child migrants were housed and allegedly abused. The Child Migrants Trust was established to enable child migrants to reclaim their personal identity and reunite them with their parents and relatives. The recent film *Oranges and Sunshine* was based on Margaret Humphreys's story. See Wikipedia article on Margaret Humphreys.

was in fine fettle and we thoroughly enjoyed his company. He was particularly grateful to spend a bit of time with David, his first grandson. David was in fine form experimenting with noises, exercising with gusto in the bath, and very interested in his surroundings, looking at everything that was bright or patterned. Already long, he had grown 3 inches in 6½ weeks, and tipped the scales at 11 pounds. Fair hair was replacing his original brown hair.

Canberra was looking beautiful with its trees cloaked in autumn leaves. Mr Berry was very interested in its lay-out and the local building. A picnic near Red Hill gave us splendid views. On Saturday, 5 April, Mr Berry and I joined a large bunch of visitors to view the Provisional Parliament House. The two chambers were surprisingly small and the office space was hopelessly overcrowded – a far cry from the spacious Parliament House eventually built 1981–88. In the evening, the Tregenzas had us to dinner. On Good Friday and Easter Sunday, we went to services at St John's church, where Uncle George Sutcliffe was the people's warden. (As mentioned, Dean had been a warden at the St Peter's Cathedral in Adelaide for many years, so he and Uncle George were quickly on the same wave length.) We and some other guests ate with the Sutcliffes in the evening of Easter Sunday. It was a most amusing evening. Uncle George's fund of stories, anecdotes and quotations seemed inexhaustible. On Monday, 7 April, we had a picnic lunch near the Cotter Dam and had dinner at the Haymans'. The Tregenzas and the Haymans already knew Mr Berry well from their Adelaide days. Jean Tregenza and Noel Hayman were Trish's school friends from the Wilderness school, and Mr Berry had been centrally involved in the school's governance. On the morning of Tuesday, 8 April, Mr Berry and I spent time at the extensive War Memorial, and in the afternoon with David in a pram we all went for a walk, which included looking at the Olympic Swimming Pool. Mr Berry's plane was delayed until about 7pm. That evening Robin Gollan and his wife spent a very successful evening with us.

On Saturday, 12 April, we took David to his first football match, Manuka against Duntroon. Although Duncan Anderson kicked 5 goals for Manuka, they were soundly beaten in a very scrambly game. Duncan's Swedish fiancée Ruth sat with us and she and Duncan had tea and spent the evening with us afterwards. They came for dinner with Trish on Thursday, 17 April, when I was away in Sydney for a week. Trish dined with the Haymans on the Wednesday and also spent time with Jean Tregenza so was not lonely while I was away.

A Visitor from Western Australia

On Wednesday, 26 March, I had the chance to discuss the social work situation in Western Australia with Ray Vincent, who was a social worker in the Immigration Department, temporarily in Canberra. A chair of psychology had been set up there before the war and many with a degree majoring in psychology were now doing social work jobs, for example, in the Department of Education where some were doing testing as well as social work. There was much discussion on social work training in the University of Western Australia, and it could be established in a couple of years' time as a post-graduate diploma. There were many very experienced, able, 'untrained' people in WA.

It would be well worth me visiting there if I could. (The wild flowers were out in September/October.) Work in WA had many interesting features, including working in isolated areas. The new professor of child health was just about to talk to the AGM of the WA branch (15 members) of the AASW. Ray was willing to help me in any way.

Dr Charles Price, Professor Borrie's colleague in the Demography Department, expressed a great amount of interest in my thesis topic, when I discussed it with him on 27 March. I did not tell him I had been a member of a particularly obnoxious class when he was teaching at St Peter's.

On that same day, Bob Gollan told me Professor Hancock would be away for most of April, so my seminar presentation on my proposed research would be in May. In the meantime, it was agreed I should write to each of the university departments of social work to get some indication of the quantity and quality of their sources, and to the Association of Social Workers in the USA, and the Council of Social Service in Britain, for bibliographies. Also I should survey the Parliamentary Papers in the ANU library from about 1920, and get help from Tom Kewley on sources.

On 1 April, Bob Gollan and I decided I should go to Sydney 13–19 April, to do a quick survey of the material available in Sydney for my research. At 5.30pm, I went to a sherry party in Professor Hancock's room to farewell someone from the department, had dinner at University House, and at 8pm attended a meeting of the historians' group (ANU and CUC), held at University House under the chairmanship of Professor Manning Clark. Hancock read part of a chapter of the biography of Smuts that he was currently working on, and I was deeply moved by the quality of his writing. In my work diary I recorded, 'Hancock shows he is a sensitive, deep yet clear-thinking person – at least when he is handling historical characters and events.' I seem to have been reserving judgement on his current operations.

Work-In-Progress Seminars

Next day was the first work-in-progress seminar in Hancock's room. Pat O'Farrell presented part of his work on H. E. Holland (1868–1933), a figure first in the Australian labour movement and then leader of the parliamentary labour party in New Zealand. It was entitled 'H. E. Holland and the labour movement 1893–1895'. I was surprised when Professor Hancock said it was quite to his liking, for I found it lacked clarity. Discussion did crystallise valuable criticisms, but I doubted that Pat was really amenable to them. I thought his sections on religion and socialism were particularly inadequate. Yet Patrick was to go on to a notable career in his chosen historical fields. Patrick O'Farrell (1933–2003) was born into an Irish Catholic family in New Zealand. With a master's degree in history from the University of Canterbury, he settled in Australia in 1956, doing his PhD at the ANU. This was published as *Harry Holland: Militant Socialist*, in 1964. His 1968 book, *The Catholic Church in Australia*, and subsequent publications, established his reputation as an historian of that church in Australia, of Irish history and of Irish Australian history. In 1994, he was appointed as sole author of the official history of UNSW

1949–1999. He had joined the University of New South Wales as a lecturer in 1959, was appointed professor of history in 1972, and emeritus professor on his retirement in 1990.²⁴ Pat married Deidre in 1956, and their five children all attended UNSW. We had some social contact with both Pat and Deidre before they moved to Sydney in 1959.

At another work-in-progress seminar on Thursday, 10 April, John Robinson, a scholar from Western Australia, presented a paper on his proposed research on the history of a sheep station, 'Warrah' in New South Wales.

Another fellow scholar in the history department was Tim Suttor. Tim was a Roman Catholic convert and later became a professor of theology at Windsor College in Canada. Tim knew Father McKosker in Sydney quite well. McKosker had done the University of Sydney social work course; he had a critical mind and was an able administrator of catholic social services. He had been a great success as an army chaplain during the war. A couple of Tim's friends had gone into social work, but though they liked the work, they had found the pay had forced them elsewhere. Tim thought many of the girls seemed to come to social work training in Sydney only after they were well on the way in the arts course. Social work gave them an alternative to taking up teaching. Tim mentioned Alan Walker's sociological study of Cessnock, a mining town in New South Wales. He knew his brother very well.

Tim Suttor's work-in-progress seminar paper on 14 May promised to be of particular interest, for it was on Caroline Chisholm, whose social work with single female immigrants and immigrant families was well known. In the event, however, I found the paper 'an extravaganza of lavish verbosity and coloured writing. There is only one viewpoint and that is a Roman Catholic one! Who does Tim expect to read his book?'²⁵ Carolyn Chisholm had converted to Catholicism when she married Captain Archibald Chisholm of the East India Company. In 1841, she convinced Governor Gipps she was 'a disinterested philanthopist', when planning for a female immigrants' home in Sydney.²⁶

A Quick Survey of the Research Material in Sydney

On my return from my visit to Sydney, 13–19 April, I reported to the family in Adelaide:

After speaking to numerous people, looking through great numbers of minute books, and measuring filing drawers full of folders in terms of feet not inches, I came away with the impression that NSW alone has enough material to keep me going for years. I do not really feel deterred, however, because everyone I met was positively delighted to know what I was doing, and offered the fullest cooperation. ...

I seem to have unearthed a sordid scandal concerning the first director of the social work training course in Sydney (before it was in a department within the University). Funds of considerable quantity were apparently misappropriated. A

24 O'Farrell, Patrick James, *Who's Who in Australia 2003*, p. 1546.

25 John Lawrence, *Work Diary 1958*, 14th May.

26 See Judith Iltis, 'Chisholm, Caroline (1808–1877)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Melbourne University Press, Vol. 1, 1966.

few years later this same woman was suspected again of getting away with a lot of money given for charitable purposes in connection with an organisation called International Social Service. Unfortunately nothing definite was pinned on her on either occasion, so I will have to handle this one very carefully and perhaps get legal advice – the joys of doing research on people who are still living! ...

It's nose down to the grindstone with a vengeance now, but I don't think anything could have proved of more interest to me than this subject I've chosen.²⁷

The train trip to Sydney was rather tedious – six and half hours in a rather dirty steam train. This was in contrast to a clean fast diesel which took about five hours back to Canberra. I stayed with the Walls at their home at 44, Middle Harbour Road, within easy walking distance of the Lindfield train station on the northern line. During the week I usually travelled with Tim to the University of Sydney. I enjoyed the company of Jean and Tim Wall, and on Thursday evening, 17 April, we had a small but hilarious birthday party for their daughter Philippa.

When I visited the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney, I met Norma Parker for the first time. She was to become a good friend as well as a professional colleague whom I, and many others, held in the highest esteem. With Morven Brown taking up his appointment as Australia's first professor of sociology and head of the School of Humanities and Social Sciences at the New South Wales University of Technology in 1958,²⁸ Norma was again the acting director of the department. She had already served as acting director July 1944 to August 1945, in the interim between Elizabeth Govan's return to Canada and the disastrous appointment of J. A. Cardno, a young inexperienced Scot without a social work qualification. She was again acting director from March 1949, for more than five years while the place of the department in the University was being re-assessed. In 1951–52, she and Kate Ogilvie and seven professors, including the redoubtable John Anderson, reviewed the department. In 1955, the University introduced a post-graduate diploma in social work and appointed another academic director Dr Morven Brown. The former did not attract students, however, and had to be dropped, but Morven Brown's appointment worked because he knew the Sydney community and the University scene, was familiar with social work, and he enjoyed a good personal relationship with the Supervisor of Professional Training, Norma Parker.

Morven Brown

Brown, son of a policeman, was educated at Parramatta High School and the University of Sydney before teaching at three secondary schools. While teaching, he attended courses in anthropology and completed his master's degree in education in 1943. He taught child welfare in the University's Teachers

²⁷ John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 20/4/58.

²⁸ Following the Murray Report, the University was reconstituted as the University of New South Wales (UNSW) in 1959 and established a faculty of arts. Brown became its dean in 1960. In Australia's first department of sociology, service courses for scientists and engineers were taught, a sequence of courses in sociology were provided, and Brown initiated a diploma in social work, a precursor to a school of social work established in 1968.

College 1944–48, before doing his PhD in the Institute of Education at the University of London, on two fellowships. His thesis was a sociological study of a grammar school in a working-class area of London. As a senior lecturer in education at the University of Sydney, 1951–54, he was in charge of a course on child growth and development. He was a skilled debater in his undergraduate days, an amateur actor, and an excellent impromptu speaker. He took a practical interest in the welfare of immigrants and did some work on the sociology of the Australian family, but in fact published very little.²⁹

Norma Parker

Norma was the eldest child of parents who had moved to Perth from Melbourne in the early 1900s. Born in 1906, she had been educated at the Sacred Heart Highgate School in Perth, and had won a state government exhibition to do a BA at the University of Western Australia. The head of the Department of Psychology, Ethel Stoneman, who had a PhD from Stanford University in the USA, wanted social workers for the government child guidance clinic which she also headed. She interested Norma Parker and Constance (Connie) Moffit, to undertake social work training in the USA. The Director of Catholic Education in Western Australia, Dr J. T. McMahon, found them foreign scholarships at the Catholic University of America. In her second year of her social work course, she specialised in psychiatric social work. On her father's death she returned in June 1931, to Australia after working in social agencies in Cleveland and Los Angeles for a year. By chance, Kate Ogilvie was on the same ship and informed her of work possibilities in the Eastern States; the depression had closed Dr Stoneman's clinic. After three months of supervised practical work at the Melbourne Hospital at the beginning of 1932, she was awarded the certificate of the Victorian Institute of Almoners, and was immediately appointed to establish an almoner's department at St Vincent's Hospital in Melbourne, the third such appointment in Australia. In 1935, her memorandum, with Constance Moffit, on professional social work to Dr Mannix, the Archbishop of Melbourne, led to the establishment of the Catholic Social Service Bureau in that city.

In 1936, she moved to Sydney to establish an almoner's department at St Vincent's Hospital in Darlinghurst. Sydney was to remain her home for the rest of her professional life and until shortly before her death when she moved to Melbourne to be close to family in the final stages of her very long life. March 1941–April 1943, she was employed as assistant to Elizabeth Govan, the director of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Sydney, to supervise students' field work and to teach social case work. She then opened the first social work department in a mental hospital in Australia – at Callan Park. June 1944 to July 1945, a Commonwealth Fund of New York fellowship enabled her to study psychiatric social work in the USA, with six months at the University of Chicago and six months visiting other centres. On

29 Connell, W. F., 'Brown, Morven Sydney (1914–1965)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Melbourne University Press, Vol. 13, 1993.

her return, she began her first period as acting director of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Sydney, and she remained in its employment until shortly before her retirement. In September 1951 to April 1952, she studied social research methods and social statistics at the School of Social Service Administration at the University of Chicago, and discussed social work education in Britain on the way home. In 1965, she was invited to a three-year appointment from February 1966 as associate professor and head of the Department of Social Work in the School of Sociology at the University of New South Wales. Social work education at UNSW was foundering and only someone of Norma's professional standing could have retrieved the situation. Unfortunately, however, Morven Brown died suddenly in October, 1965, before Norma had taken up her new appointment. These are matters I will need to revisit later, in my own story.

Norma Parker always saw the importance of professional association, and gave a great deal of her time and talents to first the almoner associations and then the general social work associations. In the early war years, 1940–43, she was a vigorous president of the New South Wales Social Workers' Association, and played an important part in the formation of the Australian Association of Social Workers (AASW). She served as its first president 1946–53. Her presidential address to the First Australian Conference of Social Work was inspirational, like much of her other work. On her eventual retirement in 1969, I produced for the AASW and the schools of social work at the University of Sydney and UNSW, *Norma Parker's Record of Service*. Norma gave me access to all the material she held at her home, but none of it was organised. The result was this 300-page document which consisted of an 11-page statement of her career, and 69 items mainly written in Norma's own inimitable style. Each item was linked to one or more important roles she played in the development of Australian social work over more than three decades.³⁰ In my work for the PhD some ten years earlier, I described her in these terms:

Throughout the post-war period, Norma Parker held the Sydney training body together. ... Her position, experience, warmth, optimism and stamina, combined to give her unparalleled respect and influence among Australian social workers in this period.³¹

In my first meeting with Norma Parker, on Monday, 14 April, 1958, she told me the director's job was still unfilled. There had been 14 applicants, but the one chosen had declined the offer. She was interested in my project and was willing to help. This was also true of Morven Brown, who still lectured in the Department on a Wednesday morning. In 1956, the Department undertook a study of professional social workers in New South Wales, with Helen McFadyen the research assistant responsible for collecting the data. Almost all of the 186 qualified social workers³² had responded, but Norma Parker

30 R. J. Lawrence (editor and compiler), *Norma Parker's Record of Service*, February 1969 – produced on the occasion of her retirement.

31 R. J. Lawrence, *Professional Social Work in Australia*, the Australian National University, Canberra, 1965, p. 130.

32 They had a qualification recognised by the Australian Association of Social Workers.

had been ill and Morven Brown was over-burdened in his present job, so the material had not been written up. (Morven also tended to undertake tasks he did not finish.) Unfortunately Morven had a car accident and this interfered with a plan for Norma Parker, Morven Brown and myself to meet for lunch on the Wednesday to discuss the research material. His tentative idea was that we should in our joint names get out about three short articles on the material, and that I should be left the rest of the material to use as I saw fit. Some of it was historical. Norma Parker introduced me to Toni Geake, a trained social worker who was the qualified librarian in charge of the Department of Social Work library, now a part of Fisher Library.

Later in the day, I went to Katharine Ogilvie's home for a meal and wide-ranging observations and insights. She said by and large, unmarried women were the least successful in their human relationships. Norma Parker's special course for Asian students in the department was viewed either as a waste of time, or very much the opposite. A few individuals stuck to their jobs and illustrated endlessly that they could get places. In a medical setting, social workers with aspirations got into strife. Medical students were often very talented, but they were given authority and responsibility at an early age. The question of final responsibility in a team setting – a point never reached? The patient's prime focus was the illness; he (sic) did not have to take advice. An overseas social work visitor Dorothy Brown had observed that Australians were aggressive in their casework. Kate thought pressure of work contributed to this. At present, students did a first-year arts course, before doing the professional course in their second year when students could be counselled out on personality grounds. This usually could not be done in the third year. It was, however, difficult to predict confidently about 19-year olds.

Kate had a full set of Institute of Almoners reports back to 1935. The early reports of the Rachel Forster Hospital were all about trying to keep people alive on the dole. Kate gave me a copy of the third edition of the New South Wales Directory of Social Service Agencies (1957), produced by NCOSS, of which she was president. In it, she had marked the agencies which employed trained social workers.

I spent the morning of Tuesday, 15 April, in the social work library. Toni Geake was willing to send me requested material and alert me to any other material I might be especially interested in. In the afternoon, at the Mitchell Library in Macquarie Street, I was told no material could be taken away, and anyway discovered it did not have complete series of annual reports of social agencies employing trained social workers, which I had hoped it might have. At the charitable collections section of the Chief Secretary's Department, I learned that they did not keep records on registered agencies for more than two years, and I would need written approval from each agency to get access to its files. 'Not worth the trouble!' was my diary comment. Another possibility for finding sets of annual reports was the New South Wales Council of Social Service (NCOSS), the umbrella social welfare body located in Endeavor House, 33 Macquarie Place. Like its equivalents in other states, it claimed to act as a co-ordinating body between statutory and voluntary organisations. Its executive secretary, Helen Halse Rogers, was a trained social worker who had

been with the council since its inception in 1936. She offered to obtain a full set of annual reports of most of the voluntary agencies, and suggested how I might get hospital reports. The council's existing modest data-base and other resources did not match the functions it claimed to perform.

I saw Tom Kewley in the Department of Government on Wednesday, 16 April. He thought he was the first male to do the social work training in Sydney. Those men who did do the course had scattered. There had been too much fiddling round with the courses. The early director of the course was thought to be a rogue. Professor Bland was the main fighter to get the course out of her control by bringing it into the University. David Drummond the minister of education was also involved. Professor Stout, a newcomer, was made chairman. Right from the early stages, the NSW Child Welfare Department had tried to dictate what was to be in the university course, when a cadetship scheme was introduced after the war, and a rift eventually occurred. The Teachers College now put on a course which placed the Department's officers in higher grades. Tom gave me a few references – an article he had written in about 1951 on social work training in Australia, for a British journal *Social Welfare*; Elizabeth Govan's evidence to the Joint Committee on Social Security in 1941; the June 1948 issue of *The Australian Journal of Public Administration*, and suggested I looked at the recent index to that journal for other possible material, but Australian writing on the social services was sparse.

In the afternoon, I went with Florence Ferguson, from the social welfare branch of the Immigration Department, and with Daphne Huggett, to the Family Welfare Bureau (at the corner of Martin Place and Phillip Street). They showed me two filing cabinet drawers full of the records of the NSW branch of the AASW. The material was being indexed and Florence Ferguson, the state secretary would let me know when it was completed. I had dinner and spent the evening with Joan Lupton at her home which was near the Royal Prince Alfred Hospital where she was head almoner.

Joan Lupton

Joan Lupton was born in 1904. She attended Headington School in Oxford and had a year at the Sorbonne in Paris. At St Anne's College in Oxford she completed a degree in French 1924–27. This was followed by a diploma of social studies at LSE and training as a hospital almoner under the British Institute of Almoners. For six years from 1930, she worked in the almoner's department of the Royal London Ophthalmic Hospital, soon being in charge after the senior lady almoner was forced to resign through ill-health. Her first annual report (1931) commended the policy of seeing all patients, and emphasised the role of the social service department in 'follow-up' and 'the potential value of an Almoner's work in preventive medicine'. Subsequent reports referred to employment and housing as problems of 'appalling magnitude and of national importance', and so much of the work could only be 'palliative'. Individuals could, however, still receive at least some help. Joan's father had been in the Indian civil service and did medicine after he retired. He had wanted her to do medicine.

In 1936, Joan came in an empty ship to Adelaide for six months to see a school friend, with her father paying her fare – and stayed on. In May 1937, she was appointed almoner to inaugurate a social service department at the Adelaide Children's Hospital. Amy Wheaton had 'nabbed her', soon after she had arrived and Joan became heavily involved in local social work activities. Joan was on the executive of the South Australian Board of Social Study and Training and accepted its students for supervision, and became a member of the Board of Social Science when the course moved into the University of Adelaide in 1942. In November 1942, seconded from the Adelaide Children's Hospital for three months, she pioneered the South Australian Family Welfare Bureau – for the Returned Soldiers' League, financed by the Fighting Forces Comforts Fund. In 1941, the six qualified almoners in Adelaide formed a state branch of the Australian Association of Hospital Almoners. Joan was its president until 1944. In 1942, she was the first president of the South Australian Social Workers' Association. Joan told me she had seven years with Amy Wheaton, who was a 'muddler' and enjoyed moaning. It got to the stage of her not listening.

In November 1944, Joan Lupton moved to a part-time job in Sydney, where she was appointed as a University of Sydney practical work tutor of a student unit in the Family Welfare Bureau and the Australian Red Cross.³³ Early in 1947, she went back to the United Kingdom. In March 1948 she returned to Sydney to establish a modern almoner department in place of the existing social service department at the Royal Prince Alfred Hospital, a large teaching hospital for the University of Sydney. Within a decade, despite staffing and accommodation problems, the department became the largest employer of medical social workers in the country. An important milestone was the appointment in 1953 of Kathleen Smith to the unit of the professor of medicine to teach medical-social factors to fifth-year students. Joan's closest friend and social work colleague was Kate Ogilvie, who died in 1983. Her long-standing opera companion, Professor Dick Spann, who lived at St Andrews College, was excellent witty company.³⁴ He died in 1981. Joan herself died in 1995 at the age of 91 after a rather sad and lonely old age.³⁵

In the morning on Thursday, 17 April, 1958, I had a discussion with Frank Hayes in the parole service of the NSW Department of Prisons. He and Dudley Swanson had done the social work course at the University of Sydney as cadets of the Child Welfare Department, but had both left the department dissatisfied. Mr Moroney, deputy controller of prisons, had gone abroad in 1951

33 Alma Hartshorn told me in 1996, that Joan Lupton was her own first supervisor in 1945 at the Family Welfare Bureau in Sydney, and that Mary McLelland was also one of her students at FWB, but in a subsequent year. Letter, Alma Hartshorn to John Lawrence, 1/1/96. Alma and Mary both had distinguished social work careers.

34 Michael Kirby described him as having 'a delightful way of introducing humour into the debates' of the Administrative Review Council, of which they were both members. 'It was as if he had walked straight off the set of "Yes Minister" into our meetings a decade before that program was conceived'. Speech at the Council's 25th Anniversary dinner, December 2001, available on the Internet.

35 John Lawrence, 'In Memorium: Joan Lupton, A British/Australian Pioneer in Medical Social Work', *Australian Social Work*, December 1995, Vol. 48, No. 4. (I was invited to prepare this statement for the Centenary Celebration of Hospital Social Work, held on 20 October, 1995.)

and on his return a parole section was established. In the same year, the NSW adult probation service was also established. Hayes and Swanson headed these parallel services. Initially each service only employed qualified social workers, but already the probation service had had to resort to in-service training and the parole service was under pressure to accept people with less appropriate educational qualifications. The expansion of the services was outstripping the availability of qualified male social workers. The parole officers provided a casework service for prisoners and helped them become re-established in the community after their release. Civil rehabilitation committees assisted their work. Frank Hayes commented on the head in the sand attitude of social workers about salaries. There was a tendency to think of the NSW branch of the AASW as a women's organisation. Frank offered his cooperation in any way with my project, and suggested I write to Mr Moroney for his formal approval.

In 1956, a male social work student at the University of Sydney, Tony Vinson, had a field work placement with Frank Hayes in the parole service. Recently at Frank's funeral, Tony stated:

He showed me a vitality and openness to professional innovation, and a desire to contribute to the professional literature which I had not seen in any of my other practical work attachments. ... I hadn't anticipated a career in corrections but after a few weeks observing Frank, no other career choice seemed possible.

Tony Vinson worked with Hayes for five years as a parole officer in the Department of Prisons 1957–62, and then moved to a tutorship in Professor Morven Brown's pioneering sociology department at the UNSW. Tony's career and my own were to become intertwined as will be described later in this account.

After seeing Frank Hayes in his new premises in the city, I had a discussion with Eileen Davidson, the part-time executive officer of the Australian Social Welfare Council (ASWC) the predecessor of the Australian Council of Social Service (ACOSS) finally formed in 1960. She had a room in the Social Work Department at the University of Sydney. I had already met her when she presented a paper at the AASW conference in Adelaide the previous year.³⁶ Eileen Davidson told me about the key international social welfare and social work bodies – the International Conference of Social Work (ICSW), the International Federation of Social Workers (IFSW), and the International Association of Schools of Social Work (IASSW). The journal *International Social Work* had started in January 1958, a joint venture of the ICSW and the IASSW.³⁷ A major motivation for the establishment of the ASWC had been to have Australia represented at the ICSW, but the organisation had struggled for eight years and was 'very poor'.³⁸

Eileen Davidson came from Perth, and following Norma Parker and Constance Moffit, did a BA at the University of Western Australia, and on

³⁶ See p. 24.

³⁷ In 1960 the IFSW became the Journal's third sponsor. In 1967, the ICSW changed its name to International Council on Social Welfare to signify a distinction between social work and social welfare, but stayed as a joint sponsor of the Journal. See John Lawrence, 'International Social Work: reflections on the Journal and its future', *International Social Work*, Vol. 39, No. 4, October 1996, p. 357.

³⁸ The ASWC was re-constituted as the Australian Council of Social Service (ACOSS) in 1960.

scholarship at the National Catholic School of Social Service in Washington, completed a master's degree in arts and the diploma in social services from the Catholic University of America. After almoner training in London, she was invited by visiting nuns to open an almoner department at Lewisham Hospital in 1937, where she worked for five years. In 1941, with other Catholic social workers she lobbied for the creation of the Catholic Welfare Bureau in Sydney. She moved in 1942 to Adelaide to become deputy director of rehabilitation for the Red Cross. After the war she worked for the International Relief Organisation in Europe to assist in the resettlement of orphaned children. Back in New South Wales, she was active in a number of community organisations such as the Mental Health Association and the Good Neighbour Council. Her Catholic biographer claims that her appointment as executive secretary of the ASWC helped to ease tensions between Catholic and Protestant interests, which had been one of the obstacles in the establishment of a peak social welfare body.³⁹

In the afternoon on Thursday, 17 April, I discussed my research project at a staff meeting called by Norma Parker. All of the staff expressed keen interest and offered their assistance.

On my final day of this Sydney visit, I had a discussion with May Pillinger, director of the Family Welfare Bureau, about material on the history of the Bureau. She would try to get a spare set of annual reports for me and other material and send them through Toni Geake. She observed that social workers had to be careful about vaunting their professionalism. One of the voluntary workers, a doctor's wife, had said no matter what you think is best for a family in strife, the social worker thinks differently. Miss Pillinger was willing to talk at length at some future date. The public did not support the agency well.

I spoke with Mrs Imre Bennett, who had been secretary to the University of Sydney's Department of Social Work and had tried to run the library. She had been to England and was now running the Colombo Plan scheme in the department, with money from the Commonwealth Office of Education. This currently had about 10 Asian students. It arose in 1954 because some Asian students had been failing badly, returning home with serious loss of face.

In a discussion with Mollie Booth, a member of the staff involved with student placements, she thought some girls' schools seemed to supply quite a lot of the students. She did not think there had been any recruiting in boys' schools. Selection of students was a continuous knotty problem. Morven Brown had not been keen on excluding people, nor was the university in general. Sociology had been emphasised when the directorship of the school was recently advertised because for a long time the department had been rather cut off academically from the rest of the University. It was hoped a newcomer could make a positive contribution to other departments. She thought the professional function had been defined very well in the inquiry into the course in about 1952, and Norma Parker had been made responsible for professional training. I queried the wisdom of the arrangement, however, saying since the director had overall responsibility for the department surely it was advisable for the director to

39 Damian Gleeson, 'Obituary: Eileen Davidson (1909–2007), social welfare trailblazer', 29 July, 2007.

have at least the basic professional qualification.

During the week in Sydney, I surveyed the quantity of material of the Australian Association of Almoners (supplied by Joan Lupton), including the annual reports of the NSW Institute of Hospital Almoners; the NSW branch of the AASW; the NSW branch of the AAA (supplied by Beth Ward); the minutes of the Board of Social Studies at the University of Sydney; student files of the Department of Social Work; and the file on the industrial welfare course during the war. A decision on the material from the department's research project on social workers' employment, salary and status, had not been reached because of Professor Brown's car accident.

Back in Canberra, on Sunday afternoon, 20 April, we met Bill and Vera Langshaw at the Houstons'. Bill Langshaw and Marjorie Houston were members of the small social work group in Canberra. Bill was a 30-year old district officer of the NSW Child Welfare Department, based in nearby Queanbeyan. Educated at Canterbury Boys' High School and the University of Sydney, he had a degree majoring in psychology and had completed the diploma of social studies as a cadet from the department. The director of the department, Mr Hicks, had been keen for departmental officers to do the university training, but there had been a rift between him and Miss Parker. In-service training for those drawn from the clerical ranks now supplied the department's wants. The officers did not look upon themselves as social workers. Bill was a member of both the AASW and the Australasian Psychological Society. Having a professional qualification in the department now seemed a positive disadvantage. I recall saying that a modern child welfare department could not afford not to have people like him, particularly in its senior ranks. (In the mid-1960s, when Mr Thomas took over the department from Mr Hicks, Bill was called back to Sydney to be the new director's assistant helping him, for example with the preparation of ministerial answers to parliamentary questions. On Mr Thomas's retirement in 1969, Bill Langshaw became director of the Department of Youth and Community Welfare.)

David and Noel Hayman came for a meal and the evening on that Sunday, with Mrs Hayman who was staying with them babysitting their children. On Tuesday, 22 April, we left David asleep at the Tregenzas' to be minded by their babysitters and went with them to a guest night (dinner, films and dancing) at University House. Duncan Anderson and Ruth came for the evening on the Thursday. Duncan was not now getting a posting before the end of the year, so they were getting married in August. Next evening John and Beatrice Head had us to dinner. They had been in Oxford some of the time we were there. Eva Winter and an almoner friend were staying with the Heads. Beatrice was Eva's sister; their father was the psychiatrist Dr Winter. It was good to see Eva again. On Sunday evening, 27 April, we went to the Tregenzas' for an evening meal and showed our slides afterwards. Jean's parents, Mr and Mrs Walkley were with us. Jean and her two little boys and the Walkleys, had tea with us late afternoon on Wednesday, 30 April. The night before, with David Hayman, we saw a remarkable film, 'The Three Faces of Eve', a true story of multiple personality, which I strongly recommended to my family. (I had read the book written by her two psychiatrists.) In the afternoon, I went to the Manuka oval

with Duncan Anderson for my first football run for about three years.

Without my glasses I'm embarrassingly blind, particularly at the close of the day, but still it was great fun just to get out onto an oval again. The Manuka teams seem to be a pleasant crowd of chaps.⁴⁰

On Saturday, 3 May, I played in a Manuka Club practice match on a sunny afternoon with high visibility, hidden discretely in a forward pocket giving Duncan a perfect, open forward line. In the evening, Duncan and Ruth baby-sat while Trish and I attended St John's loyalty dinner. There was no charge and according to the invitation there was to be no solicitation of funds, yet for an hour and half we listened to speeches about the Church's financial needs. Uncle George's speech, 'full of wit and pith', was the most polished performance. I had attended a 'training evening' for canvassers on Wednesday, 30 April. The Church was employing the American 'Wells Scheme' for money raising, but I strongly disapproved of certain features of the scheme and said so. The Well's catch-cry of 'the need of the giver to give' I thought was rather hypocritical and distracted people's focus away from the real purpose which was to put the Church's finances on a sound, predictable footing so it could do worth-while work. Giving just for the sake of giving, and for getting self-satisfaction from it, did not impress me at all. Also strict anonymity was not observed in the amounts pledged and circumstantial pressure was being put on people. I was willing to act as a canvasser but on the understanding I would put the case for the Church's financial needs, but would not witness the actual figure of any person's pledge. 'The end does not justify the means', I wrote to the family, and added 'Uncle George is in all this up to the hilt and he revels in it'.⁴¹ Once the canvas was under way, I found that many of the canvassers paid only lip-service to the Wells scheme of canvassing. I canvassed without even paying lip-service, and this was apparently acceptable.

After the meeting for canvassers on 30 April, I had a long session playing the organ at St John's. After the loyalty dinner, I played till midnight, with our baby-sitters Duncan and Ruth listening. On Sunday, 4 May, Mr and Mrs Laurie and their son Rob called in. Bill Laurie and Dean Berry were architectural friends. Rob was a cadet in the Department of External affairs with Duncan Anderson. The Lauries invited us to stay with them in Sydney. They now had a grown-up family and had plenty of room. Rob offered to baby-sit for us. We were most fortunate to have now many baby-sitting possibilities – the Haymans and the Tregenzas (at their respective homes), Ray Greet, Rob Laurie, Duncan and Ruth, and the Houstons – all without charge.

Ruth and Duncan came to dinner on Wednesday, 7 May, and took us to the Albert Hall to see 'The Shifting Heart', an Australian play on the assimilation of migrants problem. On 9 May, we had dinner with Ken and Janet Stonier, and Janet's brother John Fisher and his wife at the Canberra Hotel, and the Stoniers called in the next morning before leaving for Sydney. After watching Manuka play Turner in the football, Trish, David and I visited the Sutcliffes.

40 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 4/5/58.

41 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 4/5/58.

We had the Haymans for dinner on their fifth wedding anniversary on Friday, 16 May. Most of my evenings that week were occupied with canvassing. Next day, John Laurie of the Sydney Lauries came to lunch and we went to the football afterwards to see Duncan kick 10 goals. He was in brilliant form. In the evening, Margaret Evers and two of her friends, a Melbourne girl and a chap from Austria, came to see our coloured slides. Margaret was one of the people I had canvassed. She had been in Oxford, at St Hugh's, at the same time as we were there. After refugee work in Austria she came to Australia last August. Recently she had lost her Hungarian fiancé in a motor-cycle accident. She offered to babysit for us, so that was another to add to our very generous list!

On 17 May, we were able to speak to my sister Marg on her birthday on our newly-installed phone. Through her we passed on to my brother Jim our congratulations; he had just passed the written part of his membership for the Royal College of Physicians. On June 4, he stayed with us overnight in Canberra on his way back to Adelaide from Sydney, after successfully completing the interview and clinical part of the membership examination. While working for the college membership, he was Barker Research Fellow in the Department of Medicine at the University of Adelaide, working with Professor Robson in research on haematology, and he was also a visiting medical officer at the Adelaide Hospital. Jim's long-term medical career was beginning to take shape. Jim and Sheila were expecting their second child, so we were especially grateful to be able to celebrate with him his successful membership and the prospective addition to his family. On Monday evening, 17 May, I attended the final canvas report meeting and was pleased it was over.

On Wednesday, 21 May, we had the Tregenzas, Jean's sister Catherine Walkley, Rob Laurie and Ray Greet, for the evening. Next day, three medical social work students from the University of Sydney – Rosemary Nicholls, Lorraine Peart, and Wendy Hearn – had lunch and dinner with us. In the afternoon, I drove them around Canberra sight-seeing. Rosemary was a good friend of the Berry girls, and the other two came from Western Australia. They thought their social work course was very bitty. The wider view did not get through to them. They thought university staff had favourites. They were down on the arrogance of doctors and wanted them taken off their pedestal. The points in my research outline which I had just completed that dealt with older unmarried women certainly needed to be addressed.

In the evening of Sunday, 25 May, we had a meal with Tim and Pat Suttor, who had a flat in a nearby block of flats. Vincent Buckley, a lecturer in English at Melbourne University, and a friend of Tim's was also there. He was a writer and poet whom Tim greatly admired. I can recall discussing with them the feasibility of social progress based on improvements in social knowledge derived from systematic scientific inquiry.

At a meeting of the Canberra Social Workers' Group on Tuesday evening, 27 May, I spoke about Mt Breckan, the residential rehabilitation centre where I had provided a social work service for CDSS. Eight were there – only four were actually employed as social workers and the rest were married with children. Bill Langshaw was the only other male. A number of items were discussed in the lengthy business part of the meeting –

- should the Canberra Relief Society discontinue now the Department of the Interior was allocating money for relief work?
- a new welfare job had been advertised, with no qualifications specified, to coordinate the activities of the child welfare officer and supervise the social workers, and to be the secretary of the Canberra Advisory Council (the AASW should protest to the Public Service Board)
- the group decided not to affiliate with the National Council of Women (it was not an official group and was not a women's organisation)

Margaret Evers had about seven people in her room at Gorman House on Wednesday evening, 28 May. The food was good and the company was interesting. She had a number of excellent records. On Friday evening, 30 May, we and two other couples, and an Adelaide girl, had a wonderful drawn-out meal at Gwen and Graham Wilkinson's. Trish had met Gwen at the Moncrieff's in Blackwood. Graham was a statistician in CSIRO.

We watched Duncan Anderson kick nine goals in Manuka's win over the Royal Military College, Duntroon, on Saturday, 31 May. Johnny Thwaites was there. He was the coach of Melbourne Grammar's first XV111, and they had played against Duntroon a couple of days before. He, and another Grammar master, came back to our flat after the game for a drink, and we saw him again the following afternoon when Grammar played against a combined Canberra team selected from the intermediate grade. After that game we called in on the Sutcliffes, before going to the Haymans for a meal, our last meeting with them before they left for Adelaide for three months. David Hayman was lecturing at the University for a term. If he found it to his liking, he might give up his CSRIO position and seek a university one. In three days' time, Uncle George was going for three weeks to the Philippines.

On Thursday, 5 June, we saw Keith Michell in his first major film 'True as a Turtle'. Cecil Parker and John Gregson were also in the film. 'It was strange seeing someone we knew reasonably well under these circumstances'.⁴² On 7 June, we saw Manuka beat Queanbeyan and went to the Tregenzas for a meal and the evening. Ray Greet and Duncan Anderson came for a meal on Sunday, 8 June. Ruth was in hospital with suspected appendicitis and it was hoped she would have her appendix removed for she and Duncan did not know where they would be living in the next few years.

After football practice on Tuesday, 10 June, Ray Greet had a meal with us and he and I went, with someone from the Agricultural Research Bureau, to a French film put on by the Canberra Film Society in the Albert Hall. Ray had just heard he would be posted to Thailand (formerly Siam) from September. He and Jenny would be married shortly before they leave for the posting. On Wednesday, 11 June, we had dinner with Bill and Vera Langshaw. Bill was a likeable chap – 'not a great deal of drive but quite competent'. After football practice on Thursday, 12 June, Duncan had dinner with us and we all went to the hospital to visit Ruth who had had her appendix removed. Later, Ray and I went to a Charlie Chaplin film, while Trish went to bed.

⁴² Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 8/6/58.

An Adventurous Weekend Viewing the Snowy Mountains Scheme

On Friday, 13 June, Ron Gilbert, an Adelaide economist who worked in the Prime Minister's Department, had a gathering of South Australians for a party in his new home – David and Anne Dunn and John Dunn and his wife, who were staying with Ron, John and Joyce Cooper, John and Jean Tregenza, and a few others. Eight of us left for the Snowy Scheme the next morning on a trip organised by Ron. Two car-loads of us set off for Cooma, 72 miles from Canberra, at about 9am. A third car arrived late at Cooma, but set off with us after lunch. At Cooma, we met the commissioner Sir William Hudson, who mentioned we were likely to meet the first of winter weather. We saw a film on the Snowy Mountains Scheme at the Authority's Headquarters in Cooma, had the main features of the scheme pointed out to us, saw the extensive experimental laboratories (covered with models), and then had a three-course meal for lunch.

After lunch we hired chains for the wheels of the cars and set off for Adaminaby (New Site), 32 miles from Cooma. We had our guide Alan Clark, a public relations officer, in the old Holden in which I was travelling. Its driver was an economist in the Department of Primary Industry. Soon after we left Cooma, it began to snow covering the gums, undulating hills and sheep in a white blanket. From Adaminaby we set off for Adaminaby (Old Site), a township whose site would eventually be submerged by the waters of Lake Eucumbene, which would hold eight times the volume of water contained in Sydney Harbour. The road became progressively more difficult and one of our cars had to be hauled from a ditch by the local policeman in a land-rover with chains. They decided to return to Cooma. We, however, put the chains on each of the remaining two cars and pressed on heading for Cabramurra, forgetting about the sight-seeing itinerary. The road was increasingly treacherous and darkness fell early. A couple of times we slid out of control, but fortunately without mishap. We passed many vehicles stranded beside the road, disappearing beneath the snow. At 6.15pm, we crawled and slithered into Cabramurra, thankful to be in one piece. The roaring log fire of the canteen and central heating of the dining room helped to thaw us out. The sleeping quarters were very warm and we slept well.

When we emerged the next morning, a vicious wind whipped snow into our faces. There had been a fall over-night of two to two and a half feet. Fortunately there were no fresh falls and sky above the whipped-up snow was clear. After breakfast we piled into two SMA vehicles – land-rovers with chains and four-wheel drive. We were to drive through magnificent mountain scenery along a road cleared by a snow plough. Our skilful driver was a Yugoslav concrete expert. The road descended to the Tumut River and to the mouth of the Access Tunnel to the T1 Power Station. We walked some distance into the mountain-side to the Underground Power Station, which was over 1,000 feet below the ground surface. A group of French contractors had been responsible for the excavations which were almost complete. This was the first of the five hydro-electric power stations to be built on the Tumut River, and would be the

second SMA power station to operate. (The first was at Guthega.) The size of the excavations was breath-taking.

Returning to Cabramatta, we set off in our two cars for Cooma. After a very hazardous drive, we arrived for a hot meal at the Monaro Hostel at 3.15pm. We stayed the night at Island Bend, 53 miles away via Jindabyne. On Monday morning, 16 June, the weather was bright and sunny, and the mountains looked magnificent. We viewed Guthega Dam, then Guthega Power Station, built by a Norwegian firm. Well below the higher mountain area, we saw Adaminaby Dam (Lake Eucumbene), an earth-and-rock-fill dam built by American contractors. We were back at Cooma for lunch at 1.30pm, and home at 5pm. It had been quite a week-end.

For the trip, the SMA had only charged us £5/5/6, and in view of the excellent food and warm, comfortable accommodation provided (it was staff accommodation), it was very reasonable. I commented to the family:

The Snowy scheme is an enormous undertaking. It must be an engineer's dream. I am certainly the richer for having seen it – certainly also under such conditions.⁴³

In my work diary, I noted the 'great breadth of vision and long-term planning' of the SMA – 'a striking contrast with ventures in the field of social welfare'. I now had a set of Australian snow photographs, as well as my English ones, but unfortunately I had only 12 photos in the camera.

Another Family Visitor

Trish's Aunt Margaret Berry came to stay with us for a few days on Tuesday, 17 June. She had retired from her senior job in the British Army, which had included being in charge of all the army women in the Canal Zone and then in Cyprus. Back in Adelaide she had been living with her mother and Maudie Berry in their flat in North Adelaide. She seemed well but we thought would be more settled when she had found a suitable job which got her away from their constant company. Her present life was such a contrast to the life she had been living in the army. We, of course, both knew her well from when we were in Oxford and she had been so helpful to us when we were settling in there.

On Wednesday afternoon, 18 June, we took Auntie Margie for a drive. In the evening we had Cecil Warren a clergyman from St John's for dinner. His wife was away for a few days. Cecil had been in Oxford at about the same time as we were there, and we showed him our coloured slides. On Thursday morning, Trish and Margaret went through the Houses of Parliament, and we went for another drive in the afternoon. In the evening we finished showing our slides to Margaret. On Friday we drove to the Cotter Dam area for a chop picnic. On Saturday morning, Margaret wandered in the War Memorial. In the afternoon she, Trish and David had afternoon tea at the 'Tregenzas', while I saw Manuka beaten by Eastlake, the top team, in a vigorous game. On Sunday, Margaret minded David while Trish and I went to 8am communion. In the afternoon we went for another drive, and in the evening, she left to stay with

43 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 17/6/58

Anne and Murray Gordon in Melbourne. We had thoroughly enjoyed her stay. Like her brother Dean, she was always very good company. On Monday evening, 23 June, Bishop Arthur had the canvassers at his home to discuss what they had found about the laity's attitude to the church. When I wrote to the family the next evening, I sent love from 'we three to you seven' (My parents, my sister Marg, and Jim, Sheila, Richard, and now Christopher, who had just arrived in this world.)

Because her room in Gorman House was too small, Margaret Evers asked Peter and Heather Henderson (the Prime Minister's daughter), and Jessie, an English stenographer for the Country Party, to spend the evening with us in our flat on Wednesday, 25 June. We looked at a few slides. Peter had been at Merton College in Oxford and was now in the External Affairs Department. It was hard to tell whether he was a bit standoffish or shy. Duncan Anderson, who knew him fairly well, felt the same way about him. Heather, on the other hand, was very easy and unaffected. We had come to like Margaret Evers a lot. Duncan and Ruth came to dinner on Saturday, 28 June. The Houstons joined us afterwards when we looked at slides, mostly Duncan's. We had dinner the next day with Professor and Mrs Moran and another young couple. Professor Moran was Head of the Department of Statistics and his wife was an English social worker. The Morans had just had staying with them Professor Robinson, a Canadian mathematician, who was very enthusiastic about a university settlement in Toronto. He was now staying with the Walls in Sydney. After football practice on Tuesday, 1 July, Ray Greet came for a meal and listening to records. His arrangements for going to his first placement in Siam seemed well under way.

Sad News

I received a letter from Mr Boase, thanking me for my donation to the Quincentenary Building Fund of the College, and telling me of Harry Weldon's death. 'There were men in his room the evening before and he seemed in his usual form and died through the night from a cerebral haemorrhage of which he can have known hardly anything. A splendid way to go but much too soon.' I wrote to the family:

It's hard to get used to the idea that Harry isn't there any longer. He was a very likeable chap. I also feel that I've lost one of my strongest supporters. We got on very well together.

The President mentioned that Ken (Tite) was busy examining PPE, so I presumed he was 'back on deck again'.⁴⁴

Organising My Research Files

During the period after my Sydney trip, apart from these various social and other occasions, I concentrated on reading, sorting and indexing material I had already collected. I wrote to the family on 26 April: 'A large factor in the

⁴⁴ Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 2/7/58.

successful handling of this great bulk of material will I'm certain be a carefully kept index.⁴⁵ By 9 May, I had completed the process and had developed a very usable system. For each social work training body, and each social work professional association, I had files alphabetically organised on significant aspects of the organisation, such as constitution, membership and meetings, relationship with other organisations, course content, social action, and so on. Within each file was recorded chronologically extracts from minutes of the organisation's governing group which related to the topic. Often this had to be done by hand from the original minutes, for there was only one copy which I did not possess anyway. Making photocopies of the minutes which I could have then cut up and pasted in the relevant files would have been so much quicker, but the photocopying was not yet available. I told Dr Gollan of my work in Sydney, on 22 April. He thought a similar week in Melbourne fairly soon would perhaps be a good idea, and requested a diagram showing the relationships between the various social work organisations. On 9 May, I checked the Australian Annex of the National Library for relevant holdings. All published material was supposed to be sent to the Library, but I was told there were in fact great gaps which they were filling slowly. As yet, reports from social service agencies had not been followed up, but staff would begin to do so straight away. A couple of work-in-progress seminars at the History Department – Stan Vining, an American, spoke on wage policy in the coal mining unions in the USA and Australia, and Tim Suttor on Caroline Chisholm – kept me involved with other members of the department during this period. It was to be my turn to present at a work-in-progress seminar on Wednesday, 18 June.

My Work-in-Progress Seminar

May 11–21, I prepared a draft thesis outline, cautiously calling it 'First Thoughts'. On 23 May, I discussed this with my supervisor Bob Gollan. He had spoken to Professor Hancock and it was agreed that about 50 copies would be run off for the seminar on June 18, and to send to selected people for their general comment and for help with sources. A short section on sources was still to be added and I needed to make a rough estimate of the time needed to be spent in each state. Bob said he was 'satisfied' with the outline. On 26 May, the research outline plus a section on sources met with his approval. ('It's coming along nicely.') On 27 May, I wrote to him proposing:

- 1958 - 3 weeks in Sydney in July and 2 and a half months in September, October and November
- 1959 - 3 months in Melbourne in February, March and April. 3 months in Adelaide in July, August and September. 3 weeks each in Perth and Brisbane Perth to follow Adelaide?

The outline, with a brief section on sources, was 25 pages.⁴⁶ It began with a general introduction to the nature and scope of professional social work as

⁴⁵ Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 26/4/58.

⁴⁶ R. J. Lawrence, 'First thoughts on a thesis on: "The Development of Professional Social Work in Australia"', typescript, May 1958.

it had developed overseas and in Australia, and gave reasons for my choice of topic. The outline provided an overview of what I thought to be 'a necessary coverage if the job is to be done thoroughly', but 'it is fully realised that some sections, for purely practical reasons, may have to be cut down or even eliminated in the eventual study'. How best to present the material would be a continuing headache. Three possible alternatives were mentioned –

- descriptive chapters giving the bare bones of the development from the 1920s to the present day, followed by detailed analytic chapters on various aspects of the development, and a final chapter pulling together the threads of the analysis
- break the whole period up into pre-war, war, immediate post-war, and recent, with the above pattern being followed for each of these shorter periods
- for each of the shorter periods the writing could move slowly drawing the threads together as it moved forward, analysis and description intermingled, year after year, with a summing up at the end of each period

However the final presentation emerged, the initial intention was that it would consider –

- Australian communities pre-1929 and the charitable work in them
- International developments in social work pre-1929 – the beginnings of training in the UK in the 1890s, university training at Birmingham in 1908, the first International Conference on Social Work (ICSW), Paris, 1928
- The beginnings of training for social work in Australia – the NSW Board of Social Study and Training in 1929, and the NSW Institute of Almoners in 1936; the Victorian Institute of Almoners in 1929, and the Victorian Council on Social Training in 1933; and the South Australian Board of Social Training in 1936 (Initiators, boards, directors, courses, lecturers, students)
- The beginnings of professional social work in Australia – when, where and why in each state; social work – women's work?; professional associations
- International developments 1929–39 – ICSW Frankfurt 1932, London 1938; increased numbers of training schools
- An assessment of the development of professional social work in Australia pre-war
- Professional social work during the war 1940–45 – when and where did the trained social workers fit in the wartime community?; the nature of the Australian war-time community; social and economic thinking and social work thought 1940–45; social work – women's work?; professional associations
- International developments – use of trained social workers in UK during war-time; the awaking social conscience in under-developed countries; and so on ...
- An assessment of the war-time development of professional social work
- Social work training during the immediate post-war period 1946–50 – in NSW, Victoria and South Australia (boards, directors, courses, lecturers, students)

- Professional social work in the post-war community 1946–50 – when and where did the trained social workers fit in the post-war community?; Commonwealth Government departments employing social workers; the post-war community (full employment, greater educational opportunities, social security, the role of voluntary social services? councils of social service, unsatisfied wants? awareness of world obligations and of immediate Asian neighbours, immigration schemes, UN agencies, attempts to help under-developed countries, displaced persons, cold war, atomic possibilities, and so on ...); social and economic thinking and social work thought 1946–50; social work – women’s work?; professional associations (the establishment of the Australian Association of Social Workers, the first national conference in 1947, the beginning of a professional journal)
- International developments – international social work conferences at The Hague 1947, Atlantic City 1948, Paris 1950; Australian social workers overseas; the International Federation of Social Workers (IFSW), the International Association of Schools of Social Work (IASSW); the rapid growth of schools of social work, a beginning in New Zealand 1949.
- An assessment of the immediate post-war period
- Social work training 1950–58 – courses extended or made post-graduate; post-graduate education for social workers; medical social work into the Sydney, Melbourne and Adelaide courses; a 4-year degree at Queensland University; a course in Western Australia?; a course for Asian students in Sydney; boards, directors, courses, lecturers, students; output of the training bodies
- Professional social work in Australia 1950–58 – when and where did the trained social workers fit in the community?; the Australian community 1950–58 (inflation, delinquency, hire purchase, gambling, material prosperity, impact of migrants, good neighbour councils, social security measures meeting need?; international crises, the threat of destruction; the race for technological advancement, social consideration neglected; the increasing fragmentation of specialties; the social work focus on the whole individual in their total environment hopeless?); social and economic thinking and social work thought 1950–58; social work – women’s work; professional associations (national conferences, registration of the AASW with the Arbitration Court, the medical social workers a special group within the AASW)
- International developments – IFSW and IASSW conferences, overseas experience of Australian social workers
- An assessment of the period
- Discussion of topics covering the whole period of the thesis: Non-university training for people in social work fields. The movement towards co-ordination and rationalisation of social services
- Research
- Should professional training for social work be done within a university?
- The growth of a profession
- The relationship of social workers to other professions
- The effects of having a large majority of women in professional social work
- Australia’s need for professional social work – where have the various states

reached in the fields recognised in other countries more advanced in this work?; likely to be increasing levels of social work knowledge and skills, and increasing numbers of social problems, individual and community

- A vision of the role professional social work could play in the future
- How to maximise the profession's contribution to the welfare of Australian communities

I distributed the thesis outline well in advance to those who would be attending the seminar on 18 June – ANU staff (Hancock, Fitzhardinge, Gollan, and Butlin), Professor Clarke, and fellow students (Tregenza, Sutter, Roe, Bowes, O'Farrell, Vining, and Robertson). I also sent it to Professors Webb, Borrie, and Partridge, and to Bob Parker within the ANU, and I took a copy to Dr Mendelsohn in the Prime Minister's Department who was very interested. (He thought Lyra Taylor should be superannuated. Mr Rowe's death had removed one of the biggest obstacles to progress. He doubted if there was any real poverty left in Australia. The young well-spoken girl – a poor social worker? Impressed because emphasis was not put on salaries.) Letters with the outline were sent to Toni Geake, Professor Morven Brown, Norma Parker, Kate Ogilvie and Tom Kewley in Sydney; to Mrs Alison Mathew, Professor Hoban, and Lyra Taylor in Melbourne; and to Joy MacLennan, Helen James and Peg Norton in Adelaide. At the Canberra University College, I left the outline with Professor Gibb, the professor of psychology, seeking his help with relevant sources. I also talked with Dr Koch Emery, in charge of the Modern Languages Department.⁴⁷ Many migrants came to him for help. He agreed that suitable people from the national groups should receive social work training.

I reported to my family that I did not really get much out of the work-in-progress seminar. Professor Hancock, however, wished to send the outline to his old friend Professor Richard Titmuss at LSE and this was encouraging for he would not do this lightly. He described the outline as interesting and admirable, with minor blemishes (for example, mention of colonialism, defence expenditure). Was there any trunk to the thesis? Professor Webb also wondered about any trunk – the changing role of the social worker in relation to the welfare state? (I came to realise that the 'trunk' was in fact the development of an occupation organised on professional lines. This gave coherence to all the material I was examining and digesting and there was an emerging literature on the subject in occupational sociology of which I later became very aware.) Most of the comments were superficial but Bob Gollan said afterwards that the seminar was a useful bit of advertisement if not much else. Professor Hancock suggested writing about 40 pages of the first chapter almost immediately – to get used to writing in bulk. This seemed a good idea. The writing may easily be scrapped eventually.

Professor Manning Clark said there was enough in the outline for 50 theses, and told me to find one. Professor Hancock and Dr Gollan, however, came to my defence. Dr Gollan said there were two types of thesis. This one was of the broad sweep type in a virgin field. The welfare state does not have that much

⁴⁷ He had been on the staff at St Peter's College in Adelaide.

welfare in it? Manning Clark said he knew the Melbourne course. Catherine Spence was superior to any present trained people. I challenged him for a sound basis of comparison and he withdrew the comment. In my work diary I observed, 'I don't think he is happy about concepts of welfare which seem to neglect religion. He is a very high church Anglican.' Professor Borrie thought the roots of the development were in the welfare organisations in the early 20th century. He commented on the conflict between the universities and certain welfare organisations as to the length and type of training for example, the Child Welfare Department (in New South Wales) did not want anything too elaborate; something which helped fairly routine work was sufficient.

On 23 June, I had an individual discussion with Professor Borrie about the thesis outline. He too wondered about a central theme. The complete lack of understanding of employing agencies and of other people in the university as to what the Social Work Department was trying to do – the whole contrast of social thinking. People like Hicks were actually on the board at Sydney; they wanted essentially practical training. Professor John Anderson was fundamentally opposed to any professional training being done in a university. It was likely the Melbourne picture would turn out much more successful than the Sydney one. He wished me luck in wending my way through the personalities involved, exceptionally tactful handling would be needed. I should read Kewley's MA thesis on statutory social services. Proposed research on widows should be done under the guidance of a university department of social work, not a council of social service, preferably by a trained social worker, but where would a promising young research worker be found?

On completion of reading the PhD thesis of Jim Cairns on 'The Welfare State in Australia', I noted in my work diary on 26 June:

It is not a carefully finished off piece of work, but it contains a great deal of material relevant to the growth of professional social work. ... Cairns in focusing on the essentially political factors in the emergence of the Welfare State, fails to place (them) ... in the wider context of the 'social security' emphasis made possible by increased knowledge in the social sciences.

'Welfare' tends to be interpreted in terms of pension rates, etc..

On 28 June, I re-read Bertha Reynold's *Re-thinking Social Case Work*, 1938. This provided an analysis of the changing aims and implications of social case work in the USA from 1916 to 1938. Another notable American publication, which I read on 3 July, was Grace Coyle's *Social Science in the Professional Education of Social Workers*, 1958. On this same day, we had Uncle George Sutcliffe to dinner. Given his position as a Commonwealth Public Service Commissioner, as well as an interested member of our family, I had sent him the thesis outline. He thought my approach of dealing with the weaknesses as well as the strengths was right. The public did not know about professional social work. What had social workers published?

On 30 June, I had an individual discussion with Mr Parker in the political science department and saw Professor Webb briefly. Bob Parker thought Professor Bland should be a good source on the early training period in Sydney, and gave me advice on possible sources on the social services including a

chapter in a forthcoming book on public administration in Australia. There was a tendency in Australia to pass a law about a thing, but not do any hard thinking about it. Concentration on money payments was the easiest way out. Professor Webb spoke of the difficulties in defining a profession, and wondered how substantial would be the material I obtained in my field work.

Next day, 1 July, Professor Partridge, professor of social philosophy at the ANU, could not think of any aspect I had not covered in my outline. Perhaps the periods would prove too short to treat some of the trends. He had been on the board of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Sydney, about 1942 to 1946. The directors of the course were not confident of their standing and tended to defer to the professors on the board. The most desirable course was lost sight of in placating the individual departments. He wondered if Ruth Hoban in Melbourne was stronger than Norma Parker in Sydney? Many of the part-time lecturers were not really interested. There was very lukewarm support for the training being in the university. Students were rushed off their feet doing practical work. They had no time for contemplating in academic subjects. Many students felt theory of casework was largely a bogus subject. Professor Partridge suggested various sources – general and more specific ones on political and economic affairs. Students had done social surveys under Professor Elkin, and I might get in touch with him. Professor Partridge was willing to give assistance with particular problems as my work progressed. I noted: ‘He seems a placid, contemplative type of person, conscientious’.

Trish, David and I drove to Sydney on Sunday, 6 July, to stay for three weeks with the Walls in Middle Harbour Road, Lindfield. We briefly overlapped at the Walls’ with Professor Robinson, before he moved on to Melbourne. He was chairman of the university settlement in Toronto, so had quite a keen interest in social work. We enjoyed talking with him.

The main purpose of this Sydney visit was for me to work on the findings of the incomplete survey undertaken by Morven Brown and Norma Parker in 1956 on social workers employed in social agencies in Australia – the composition of the group, the personal characteristics, educational qualifications, employment experience, and employment conditions. I found the material in a chaotic state. I wrote to the family on Thursday, 8 July:

Professor Brown and Miss Parker are very busy people, the former in particular, but by the end of 3 weeks here I think we should have got somewhere. My thesis outline fortunately seems to have been quite well received.⁴⁸

After her work at a child guidance clinic, Helen McFadyen went through the material with me on Wednesday, 9 July, and found out how far she had reached before she gave up as the research assistant on the project. Most of the NSW material was carded and tabulated, but none of the interstate. She had not looked at the material for almost two years. Next day, with some assistance from Trish, I began carding and punching the survey material from interstate. I spent the day on Thursday, 17 July, discussing the material with Professor Brown and Miss Parker at the NSW University of Technology. It was decided

⁴⁸ Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 8/7/58.

that NSW would have to be the main focus, since the returns from the other states, Victoria in particular, were inadequate. I undertook to write up all of the information contained in the NSW tables, Miss Parker would write a brief historical introduction, and Professor Brown would do a final assessment.

On Friday, 11 July, Miss Parker and I went to the final day of the seminar on penology at the University of Technology. A very diverse group attended – supreme court judges, probation and parole officers, and Prison Department officials. In the morning, Dr David Maddison, a senior lecturer in psychiatry at the University of Sydney, delivered an interesting paper on the justification of a theory of diminishing responsibility for anti-social conduct, but I thought he spoke much too quickly and moved too quickly for his audience. I commented to my family, 'He produced a very overstated case for determinism and seemed to have a fantastic trust in the soundness of modern psychiatric knowledge'. Professor Brown invited me to a buffet lunch for the main guests and speakers. In the afternoon, Professor Paul Tappan, head of the Department of Criminology in New York University, gave 'a meaty, well-delivered address'. It contained 'one of the best plugs for adequately compensated men in the social work field' that I had yet heard. He was keen on the idea of a professional parole service covering every person who had been in gaol for some length of time.⁴⁹

On Saturday, 12 July, we spent a most enjoyable day with the Lauries at their comfortable old home in Warrawee, set in plenty of ground – an excellent spot for bringing up five boys. Next day, we drove with Jean Wall and two of her children and a friend to Palm Beach, had lunch and climbed Barrenjoey headland commanding fine views in three directions. On Sunday, 20 July, we had tea at the flat of Wendy Hearn and a young almoner, and on Wednesday evening, 23 July, we were taken to dinner by Rosemary Nicholls and Lorraine Peart and we all went to see 'Around the World in 80 Days'. Wendy, Rosemary and Lorraine were the three medical social work students who had visited us in Canberra some weeks before.

The Lauries had us to dinner on Thursday, 24 July. Bill Laurie spoke of his experience as a member of the council of the NSW University of Technology, their planning, their clash with the academics, and so on. He made the sobering comment, 'In my experience there is more calculated dishonesty amongst university professors than amongst any other group in the community'.

In the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney on 25 July, our last day in Sydney, I discussed what I had already written on their project with Professor Brown and Miss Parker. They seemed well pleased and it was agreed I would take all of the material to Canberra with me and post back the tables and my completed analysis of them late the next week. On 6 August, I posted my 60-page report of the survey⁵⁰, but it took almost another year for there to be any final published output from the project. This took the form of a relatively brief article by Norma Parker in *The Australian Journal of Social Work*. From the study, it was found that:

49 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 18/7/58.

50 I also gave copies to Bob Gollan, Professor Borrie and Mr Parker.

- the 184 qualified social workers in the NSW survey were employed in 53 different agencies
- 14 of the agencies were statutory (8 were commonwealth and 6 were state)
- 17 of the agencies were hospital, and the next largest group were the churches
- 37% of the social workers worked in statutory agencies
- the social workers shared 54 titles
- all had at least a 2-year diploma, a little over a third had an additional one-year specialised qualification, and a little under a third had an arts or economics degree
- 85% of the social workers were female
- 55% of those who had gained their diploma at the University of Sydney had been lost to the profession
- the greatest professional wastage came from marriage and the retirement of women to 'home duties'
- only half of the qualified men stayed in social work
- of the 30 qualified men who stayed in social work, few were financial members of the AASW and participated in its meetings
- staff turnover was high
- 40% of the social workers had less than 5 years' experience, another 40% 5-10 years' experience, and only 10% had over 10 years' experience
- 46% had been in their present agencies for less than 3 years, and 35% for less than 2 years
- almost all of the social workers were in agencies which provided a case work service
- 7% were employed as group workers
- a few individuals were in community organisation
- the great majority of the social workers had multiple functions which required some competence working with individuals, groups and communities of various kinds

At the end of the article, Norma Parker stated:

The hope is that this material will be used to form a small part of the history of professional social work in Australia which is being written by Mr John Lawrence. He has been given access to the data and has been responsible for much of the work which has gone into the analysis which has been done.⁵¹

Professor Brown discussed my thesis outline on 25 July. He was very much in agreement with the approach; there was a sensitivity to social factors which perhaps only a social worker could achieve. It being largely historical, however, he had let Bede Nairn, the head of the Department of History at the NSW University of Technology, read it. Nairn's main criticism stemmed from the fact it was contemporary history. Professor Brown did not share his view, but thought a short section on methodology might be a good idea. He would write

51 Norma Parker, 'The Study of Professional Social Workers in N.S.W.', *The Australian Journal of Social Work*, Vol. XII, No. 1, June 1959, pp. 16-20.

to Bob Gollan giving the project his blessing.

The thesis outline was also discussed on 25 July at a staff meeting of the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney, and I received advice on a variety of relevant sources – Betty Govan's study of child welfare in NSW, Norma Parker's study of the NSW Child Welfare Department in 1945, histories of hospitals, Red Cross, and Rotary, Borrie's social history lecture notes, a study on widows, a hire purchase survey, and so on. There was general agreement that all of the questions in the section concerning the high proportion of women (mainly single) were substantial ones, and that the influence of women being the basis of the profession on its development had to be dealt with. It was an essentially male community and social welfare was not to the fore. A very high value was placed upon a woman's place in the home rearing children. 'The woman's point of view' was included on committees, but a businessman looked upon a woman in the same way as they did upon an efficient stenographer secretary – with benevolent paternalism. Kate Ogilvie said that throughout her career the highest praise that could be bestowed on her was 'You are as good as a man'. A taxi-driver had told Betty Battle that a social worker was a frustrated old maid. No social worker was in a top government position. None were in political parties. A tiny ineffective band were in the Communist Party. I commented to my family: 'On this question, one's own sex and position can very easily colour one's views no matter how carefully one tries to guard against it'.

Although my Sydney visit resulted in such a meagre published outcome of the 1956 attempted national social work survey, it did provide some general hard data on New South Wales, and for any person interested in the full detail it was available in my report held in the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney. The raw material had provided me with a great amount about social workers in their agencies, not only in NSW, but within all of the states. The visit also helped me to establish a relationship with Morven Brown and to further my relationship with Norma Parker, it gave me some reassurance on my thesis outline, and the penology seminar at the NSW University of Technology was productive. In addition, we had enjoyed our time with the Wall family and the other social contacts. On 19 August, Bob Gollan said my report on the Sydney survey was 'good'; it seemed to cover a great deal and was well put together. On 21 August, he told me Bob Parker (who had taken over from Professor Webb as one of my consultant/supervisors) also thought my report was good; a friend in the Victorian public service thought the right questions were being asked.

The End of Football for Duncan Anderson

In Canberra on Monday night, 28 July, Ray Greet called in with the news that Duncan Anderson was still in bed with disc trouble after a knock he received in the football carnival in Melbourne about a fortnight before. He had had trouble with his back when we were at Magdalen, and this was the end of his football. I felt sad that I would not have the pleasure of seeing him play again, however he was in good spirits when I immediately visited him. He hoped to

be on his feet again very soon; Ruth and he were to be married in Melbourne on 16 August.

A Letter from Ruth Hoban

On 29 July, I received a very helpful and engaging letter from Professor Ruth Hoban at the University of Melbourne. She thought the outline most promising and worthwhile, but a formidable task. It needed to be done and social work and I would gain much from it. My first presentation option (descriptive chapters right through, then analysis) was preferred. She would be leaving with her husband Professor Max Crawford for a year's study leave on 6 August, and suggested I might postpone my visit to Melbourne until after her return. If not, Professor Boyce Gibson would give me general guidance. He had had the longest association with the Department of Social Studies – both before and after it came to the university, being its chairman for many years. He was really responsible for persuading the university to take over from the Victorian Council for Social Training (VCST). She gave me contact details for Greig Smith and Dorothy Bethune, who would suggest other 'old timers', and urged me to talk with Alison Mathew (formerly Player).

The first director of social studies was an Englishwoman brought out in the mid 1930s by the VCST – Jocelyn Hyslop BSc (Econ) London, Mental Health course certificate, LSE. In the late 1930s, Jean Robertson MA, DipSocSc (Glasgow), was appointed her assistant. Ruth Hoban lectured social studies students in economics in 1940, the year before the course moved into the university. In 1942, she was appointed a full-time tutor on the social studies staff, and in 1945 was appointed acting director when Jocelyn Hyslop resigned, and was director later that year or in 1946. Before these years, she had been a social worker with the Victorian International Refugee Emergency Council and also with the Victorian State Housing Commission. Her initial course at the University of Melbourne was a bachelor of commerce degree, begun in about 1925. She later completed there an arts degree and a diploma of education, and taught in two Melbourne schools for about five years. For a year, she did library work and economic research with the Victorian State Electricity Commission, saving enough money to do the certificate of social science and administration at LSE which trained her as a social worker. Her practical work was in the fields of family welfare and housing. Ruth Hoban concluded her letter to me on 27 July with her contact details in the USA until January, and in England after that.⁵²

Playing Football for Manuka

On Saturday, 5 July, I had played my first game of football for Manuka – in the seconds against Turner. We won very easily so it was not much of a game, however I enjoyed it a great deal playing on the half-back flank, getting more than my fair share of kicks. I found I could see the ball much better in the broad daylight, compared with fading light at football practice.

⁵² Letter, Ruth Hoban to John Lawrence, 27/7/58.

On Saturday, 2 August, I played football for the Manuka firsts against Queanbeyan and we unexpectedly won comfortably. I was on a half-back flank and was named second in the best players. (A few early marks had obviously impressed someone.) The football was getting my weight down and making me feel fitter generally. Just sitting about all day was physically deteriorating. Manuka Club had a newly-built club house, the spirit in the club was good, and they were a likeable bunch of chaps. On 16 August, in a very wet match Manuka beat Turner by four goals. I had a good last quarter but that was about all. On 23 August we were beaten by the top team Ainslie, but it was a well-contested game. Our star centre-half back Don Woods was shifted to centre-half forward and I was placed at centre-half back where I quite enjoyed myself and did not allow my rather slow direct opponent many kicks. He was Ainslie's captain-coach. In the first semi-final against Queanbeyan on Saturday, 30 August, again we were beaten. I had a reasonable game at centre-half back after a slow start, but sprained an ankle just before the end.

A British Visitor

On Sunday morning, 3 August, Jeremy Beckett and Andrew Fraser from University House introduced me to Gerald Morgan, a visitor from the United Kingdom. I had a long talk with him. He had been collecting material on deprived children in Australia for 'Social Survey' in the United Kingdom, and had been far from impressed by what he had seen. The poor quality of the officials concerned in handling the problems connected with deprived children had been one of his outstanding impressions; they had very restricted outlooks. He was connected with Borstal after-care work in England. What help might be given to the over 20 year-old group who had deprived backgrounds? I suggested the need for a professional casework service to put them in touch with community resources appropriate to their particular cases; binding them together was not really a very good idea. Gerald himself had been an orphan since birth and had been in a deaf and dumb school for seven years. In our chat we ranged over a great number of subjects. It was good to find a person with some like interests. He was an LSE-trained social worker. He thought Britain was beginning to be concerned about the social well-being of its people.

In the afternoon of 3 August, Duncan and Ruth, Ray Greet and Frank Hambly (from Adelaide) came to tea, and Duncan and Ruth had dinner with us on Friday, 8 August, before going to Melbourne to be married. On Wednesday, 6 August, Ray baby-sat for us to see 'The Prince and the Showgirl', and had a supper party in our flat for a few of his friends at the Narellan hostel who were departing shortly for various corners of the globe.

On Saturday, 9 August, I placed an advertisement in the Sydney Morning Herald for a self-contained flat in Sydney for three months from mid-September. Manuka had a bye, but I trained on Sunday morning, and we had Margaret Evers to lunch and the afternoon. The weather prevented me from taking some coloured slides for Margaret to send to her parents in England, but we had a drive anyway. She discussed with us a play she was writing. She had already had a couple of short stories accepted commercially. On Tuesday

evening, 12 August, we had a bit of a party in the flat for four couples from the history department at the ANU – Pat and Deidre O’Farrell, John and Jean Tregenza, Tim and Pat Suttor, and Keith and Rae Bowes.

On Thursday, 14 August, Tim and Jean Wall and their children stayed the night on their way to Adelaide. We went for a drive in the afternoon and looked at slides in the evening. It was good to be able to repay a little their generosity in having us to stay with them in Sydney. (We were disappointed that they could not again stay with us on their way back because of mumps.) On Saturday, 16 August, we enjoyed a meal and the evening at the Hancocks’. Also present were Professor Geoffrey Sawer and his wife, a war historian and his wife, and two other scholars and their wives. Keith Hancock was about to go to an ANZAAS conference in Adelaide – the first time he had been there for about 20 years he told me. I wrote to the family, ‘He is a likeable chap, but has his oddities’. Margaret Evers came to tea on 17 August and minded David while we went to church. On 19 August, we saw ‘Window’s Way’, a film starring Peter Finch and Mary Ure, whom we had seen live as Ophelia in ‘Hamlet’ when we were in Oxford. For both the dinner and the film outings, Ray Greet baby-sat for us. On Saturday, 23 August, we had a meal and spent the evening with the Tregenzas.

Anne and Murray Gordon came to stay for a week beginning on Sunday, 24 August. They were very easy to have to stay, and we enjoyed showing them the sights of Canberra. We celebrated our wedding anniversary with them on 25 August, with a Chinese take-away meal and looking at ‘All at Sea’ (Alec Guinness at his best.) Trish and I went to a party for Ray Greet after football practice on Tuesday, 26 August. Duncan and Ruth Anderson were there having just returned from their honey-moon at Mount Gambier. The next day was ideal for photography; the wattle was out and many blossoms were just beginning to burst. In the evening, John and Betina Fisher came to dinner. Anne could tell them first-hand news of Janet Stonier’s daughter Claire in Melbourne. (John was Janet’s brother.) On Thursday, 28 August, we had a picnic lunch at the Cotter River and went with them for an elaborate dinner with Bruce and Elizabeth McDonald at Duntroon. Bruce was the acting commanding officer of the cadets at Duntroon. The Gordons had got to know the McDonalds on the ship to England and had kept in touch. Bruce showed us movie films taken while they were in England, which brought back our memories very quickly and vividly. On Saturday evening, 30 August, we had a farewell dinner for Ray Greet; Frank Hambly and the Andersons joined us. Next day, Margaret Evers came to lunch and we spent the afternoon taking photos for her to send to her parents in England.

My Work

In the period 11–21 August, I read carefully and made notes of two particularly helpful American publications, Bruno’s *Trends in Social Work 1874–1956*, and Grace Coyle’s *Social Science in the Professional Education of Social Workers*. Many of the points in the latter were applicable to the curriculum section of my thesis.

On 22 August, Keith Hancock received a letter from Richard Titmuss at LSE;

I was very interested to read Lawrence's first thoughts on 'The Development of Social Work in Australia' (I deliberately leave out 'Professional' as I dislike it and think it misleading.) He has mapped out the field in a thoroughly competent way. He has asked most of the big and important questions but in places they are mixed up with a lot of little ones – practical work requirements, costs, student selection and other details of staff and students. I would favour keeping much of this organisational detail in one section (with no historical breakdown) and plenty of nice fat appendices.

I am sure Lawrence would profit from using a good deal of comparative material in asking such questions as: Why were the developments so relatively late in Australia? Were the 'needs' not there or were they not recognised? Has resistance to psychology been a factor (in the U.S.A. psychoanalytic theory has been one of the major forces but not in Britain). Is industrialisation the key factor? (Lawrence might benefit – as I have done – from reading Durkheim's *The Division of Labour*.) Then there are two other important areas – social class and 'cultural assimilation'. A history of social work in Britain since the 19th century would have to concern itself with the efforts of social work reformers to escape from the imprisonment of class attitudes to and relationships with clients. By contrast, in the U.S.A., the need for 'assimilation' to the 'American Way' would be one of the leading themes.

I would like to see some of these larger issues raised, though I realise that they would take Lawrence far afield and might be too demanding for a thesis. It would be a pleasure to discuss all this with him but I fear that is not possible. I am pretty sure he is worth encouraging.⁵³

Nothing would have given me greater pleasure than being able to discuss this letter with him. As I have already indicated, Titmuss was unequalled as a social policy scholar and was playing a dominant role in the emergence of social policy as an academic discipline in Britain. I would have particularly wanted to know why he disliked the term 'professional' and why he thought it was misleading. I was writing primarily about Australian society and the people in it who were organising their work on what was typically seen as professional lines, as had occurred most strikingly in the United States. Titmuss was embedded in a society where the development of a social work profession had been slower and struggling, partly because of the development of separate specialised courses in some of the different fields of social work, and some of these were outside the universities.

When Hancock sent my thesis outline to Titmuss for comment, I was not specifically aware of the great difficulty he had been having at LSE with decisions over trying to achieve some sort of amalgamation between his department's three 'professional' courses in social work.⁵⁴ The mental health course

53 Letter, Professor Richard Titmuss to Professor Sir Keith Hancock, 15/8/58.

54 See David Donnison, 'Taking Decisions in a University', *Social Policy and Administration Revisited*, George Allen and Unwin, London, pp. 253–285. This provides a sophisticated description, analysis and discussion of the issues at stake, and the interests and personalities involved, although the people are not named. Donnison himself had been asked by Titmuss, who frankly confessed he was 'at his wits end', to devote special attention to these problems when he was appointed Reader in the department in January 1956. The lecturers in charge of the three courses had failed to collaborate in working out plans for their future development. Neither Titmuss nor Donnison was a social worker, and the three professional courses in social work constituted only a small part of the department's responsibilities.

had been established in 1929, the child care course in 1948, and the applied social studies course in 1954. In the 1950s these courses produced well over half the total of trained social workers coming from British universities. Many other students, however, were trained outside the universities, with the largest of these courses being provided by the Institute of Almoners and by the Home Office for probation officers. 'In social work journals at the time, the term 'profession' was still usually applied to specific branches of social work, such as almoning and probation – not to social work as a whole'. (Not until 1970 was an almost comprehensive general national professional association achieved – the British Association of Social Workers which now covered all of the major groups of social workers except the probation officers.)

On Friday, 29 August, I discussed my thesis with Professor Gibb, professor of psychology at the Canberra University College. He seemed very interested in the outline and gave me a few useful sources. (I was particularly concerned with the relationship between the psychologist and the social worker in a clinical team, and also the differences and similarities in psychological counselling and social casework.) Professor Gibb had looked up sources on relationships within the clinical team, but had not found much about the psychologist-social worker relationship. His nine references were mainly in professional journals. He introduced me to Pat Pentony, the clinical psychologist on the staff and also the student counsellor and we had a quite a long talk.

Pat Pentony had recently returned from Chicago where he had been working with Carl Rogers whose emphasis was on a client-centred approach. Rogers was becoming more and more psycho-analytic. There was a row developing between psychologists and psychiatrists over psychotherapy. In a team approach where did the client come in? The psychological counsellor tried to move the client if possible on the psychological side, taking the client's circumstances as given. In changing the client you were changing the situation. There was no clear definition of function between the social worker and the psychologist. The psychologist was usually used for diagnostic purposes in the clinical team. The psychiatrist usually determined what was to be the treatment, and he and the social worker carried it out. The social worker usually worked with the parents. Psychologists sometimes did play therapy with the children. Pat Pentony referred to the extreme difficulty of working with a number of people in a difficult situation; he would feel uncomfortable about it. The social worker could be played off against the others; the social worker needed to be a very capable and exceptional person. He thought there was antagonism towards social workers on the part of psychologists, but the psychologists were very concerned, and in many cases hostile, about psychiatrists.

The day before we left Canberra for Sydney, the Vollugis and their son Peter called in at our flat after Mr Vollugi and I had met by chance at a garage where both our cars were being refuelled. The Vollugis were on a holiday visiting Mr Vollugi's father. We thoroughly enjoyed their company. I was interested in their story of their adoption of Peter, handled by an untrained person which I described to my family as 'nothing short of stupid'. Mr Vollugi also made some very astute comments on the need for a great amount of work by almoners in the Adelaide Hospital. The comments on the adoption and the hospital set-up

were quite unsolicited by me. I had not seen Bob Vollugi and his wife since school days. As already described, he was a major influence in my liking for and prowess in football, athletics and cricket.

SYDNEY, 2 SEPTEMBER-18 DECEMBER

On Monday, 1 September, Trish and I decided to drive to Sydney the next day, stay at the Walls (they were not expecting to get back from Adelaide until Friday), and try to get a flat from there (we had been unsuccessful trying to do this from Canberra). Manuka was out of the finals and we had no other ties, and also the Andersons were delighted to be able to move into our Canberra flat immediately. After following up various leads, we moved into a flat at Harbord on Thursday, 4 September, where we stayed until 18 December.

21 McDonald Street, Harbord

Harbord is a beach-side suburb just north of Manly. The flat was about a mile away from a splendid surfing beach. On high ground at the top of a two-storied house, it had commanding views all round. From my writing-desk, I had a fine view of the coastline at Dee Why, Harbord and Manly, and looked across to the ocean where we could see ships travelling to and from the north. We had a couple of blissful sun-decks and the place was spacious and clean. There were two bedrooms and a sleep-out. The rent was 12 guineas a week, covered by the University's living-away allowance. The owners were the Cresswells who lived downstairs with their 19-year old daughter and Mrs Cresswell's mother. They were pleasant people. Mr Cresswell worked for the MLC. We had bought a pack-rack for the car and managed to bring David's pram and play-pen with us. The Morris Minor was proving very reliable.

The only disadvantage with the flat was its distance from the city and the University of Sydney by public transport. On Friday, 5 September, I caught a bus at 8.20am, which connected with the 8.45am Manly ferry. We arrived at Circular Quay at 9.25am, and I reached the University by tram at 9.50 am. At the University I collected enough material to keep me going at home for at least a couple of weeks – the reports and prospectuses of the Board of Social Study and Training 1929–1938, and the minutes and reports of the University's Board of Social Studies/Social Work 1940 to the present. I also collected a copy of all the roneoed material used in the Department of Social Work – articles, cases, group work literature, and so on. Almost all of this was American.

I had lunch with Norma Parker, who told me Queensland was opening up well. For years, there had been a Labor government who really did not know what a social worker did. With the change of government many social work positions were now available. The minister for health had just returned from abroad convinced social workers were vital in doing anything effective about delinquency, mental illness, and alcoholism, his particular interests. Miss Parker had just had a long discussion with Professor Shackwell, Head of the Department of Law at the University of Sydney. She was on an advisory committee which aimed to get a course on criminology started in 1960 with

money from the NSW Attorney-General. Probation officers would still need the full social work qualification, but their training would include more legal knowledge than was given at present in the diploma. Specialisation in the third year of the diploma was the possibility. Miss Parker thought these developments were an outcome of the penology seminar we had attended.⁵⁵ Professor Shackwell had suggested he and some of his staff should sit in on her lectures on principles and practice of casework. They were particularly interested in teaching by means of case discussions. She had offered to provide a separate course for them, and Professor Shackwell said they had not dared to hope for so much!

On Saturday afternoon, 6 September, we went for a drive to some of the nearby excellent beaches with superb surf. On Monday evening, 8 September, we went to a drive-in theatre and saw 'Oklahoma', with David sleeping peacefully through it on the car's back seat. The next Saturday, 13 September, Rosemary Nicholls came to lunch and the afternoon. We took her for a short drive up the coast before leaving her at the Manly ferry. As mentioned Rosemary had been a friend of the Berry girls in Adelaide. She was in her final year doing medical social work at the University of Sydney, with Kate Ogilvie the lecturer in charge. She thought the staff took on too many things and could not concentrate on any of them. Miss McLelland had a very good brain, but did not get as close to the students as did other members of the staff and did not take the same personal interest in the students. She was very sick at present.

Miss Parker came to dinner on Saturday, 20 September. I wrote to the family:

The early history of professional social work in NSW is rich in strange personalities. Miss Parker has a seemingly endless store of anecdotes about them. She herself is a thoroughly likeable person and is basically sound and balanced. I really don't know how I can give an adequate picture of the development of this sort of work without considering personalities. The example nearest home is, of course, Mrs Wheaton, and what an example it is!⁵⁶

My record of our conversation was as full and accurate as I could make it from the detailed notes I kept at the time. As I interviewed key figures like Norma Parker, I was collecting observations on significant individuals in the history so that I could make my own judgements based on comparing and contrasting the observations. Here, I can only give a brief indication of some of the variety and richness of my record.

Norma Parker's Observations:

Mrs Wheaton: Everything happens to Mrs Wheaton. Strong masochistic tendencies.

⁵⁵ See p.85.

⁵⁶ Letter John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 25/12/58.

'A character.' Writing scathing letters from the USA – the US schools are only just beginning to catch up with Adelaide! She is bitter about the way the University of Adelaide treated her. ...

Stella Pines: An untrained nurse in the 1930s. Started in NSW. Interested in training for social work and nursing. Went to Victoria. Connected with the beginnings of a college of nursing there. Then went to South Australia. Was largely responsible for arousing public interest in training for social work there. It looked as if she might be director of the new school. Sir William Mitchell sent an urgent wire to Mrs Wheaton, his brilliant student in London, offering her the position, which she accepted.

Aileen Fitzpatrick: Stories about her were legion. She indulged in extraordinary phantasy. A fairly large, round-faced, fair-haired, serene woman. Told endless lies without turning a hair. She was a school teacher teaching Latin, connected in some way with the Country Women's Association. Professor Lovell found and sponsored her. She didn't really know anything about social work. Constant embarrassment to Miss Parker, Miss Ogilvie, Helen Rees, and Miss Stella Davies. Miss Parker came to Sydney in 1936 and 'Fitzie' made lavish promises and offers to her to get her on her side. On the other side were English-trained almoners, talking of starting an institute of almoners in NSW. 'Fitzie' poured scorn on English almoner training. Miss Parker, having been trained in the USA was to be her trump card. Miss Parker learnt a great deal quickly in those next few months. The trip of the students to America and Canada was a riot. It was paid for mainly by the Carnegie Corporation. On the students' return they made up a petition and claimed 'Fitzie' had taken their money and had behaved shamefully. Professor Lovell stood by 'Fitzie' and told students they had better be careful that they were not charged with libel. None of the people on the trip spoke to 'Fitzie' again. A few were still in social work circles in New South Wales.

After the board moved to the University, 'Fitzie' began calling herself 'Professor Fitzpatrick'. She had a legendary story that she had been offered a professorship at a university in the USA but had been unable to take it up because of the war. She at times was completely divorced from reality. A lot of her misdoings were not intentional – she genuinely believed she was doing the right thing. She managed to get quite a lot of backing in the early stages.

Professor Lovell: He deteriorated somewhat a few years before he retired, though a second wife revived him for a while. He was an extraordinary person to be a professor of psychology – he was so gullible. He could never think of people having mixed motives. Eventually he had to relinquish his support of Miss Fitzpatrick. In the USA, he was enormously impressed with the child guidance movement – the Commonwealth Fund had demonstration clinics in operation. It was this which gave him his initial interest in social work.

Professor Bland: Miss Parker did not like him. He was a person in whom the end justified the means. ...

Miss Stella England: She put up her plate in Macquarie Street with qualifications from Cambridge and London University, which proved to be false. The trained

social workers had to squash her schemes for child guidance.

Miss Hazel Dobson: She did one of the industrial welfare courses in Sydney during the war. Went to Lithgow and did a lot of work on factory amenities, etc. Caught Mr Chifley's attention while there. Helped in a Labor campaign. Got to know the Chifley family quite well. Her appointment to run the assimilation and social welfare section of the Immigration Department was most likely at Chifley's own order. Perhaps she had sold the idea of social workers being needed to him. At first she had direct access to Mr Hayes, one of the best civil servants in Australia. The ball was at her feet; no-one had greater opportunities. Within 6 months, however, she was blocked off from Mr Hayes. Her talking was always incessant but it is now pathological. Everyone runs a mile when she comes near them. When she rings Miss Parker from Canberra sometimes she has seven extensions. She is a tragedy, rather like Miss Taylor, but a much less able person than Miss Taylor. It has been a tragedy that the two foremost social workers first in the Commonwealth departments have been these two women. Miss Dobson has, however, kept her male social workers in the general administrative stream, which has given Ray Vincent his latest opportunity in the Northern Territory.

Professor Eric Saint: He had recently spoken to Miss Parker about social work training in Western Australia. At that stage, students were to do one year in WA post-graduate and a further year in NSW, but now the post-graduate course in NSW had fallen through, Miss Parker did not know what the outcome would be. Professor Saint was very scathing about undergraduate training for social work.

On 25 September, I wrote to the family that apart from going to a drive-in show, all the rest of the time was spent on going through old records.

The size of the whole thing still scares me stiff at times, but I usually manage to thaw out by concentrating on the tiny section I'm working on at any one time. I work all the time at home here and will continue to do so as much as possible. The conditions for working are ideal.⁵⁷

On Sunday, 28 September, we had lunch and spent the afternoon with Kate Ogilvie and Joan Lupton at Kate's delightful wooden cottage in a tea-tree wood at Bungen Beach. I had a meandering discussion with Miss Ogilvie over a variety of social work topics:

Religion and social casework: They had been having a great amount of difficulty in the last few years in Sydney with Evangelical Union students and young social workers. About 80% of their students were EU members. These people insist they have a duty to bring people to Christ. There is confusion between pastoral and casework roles. A recent meeting of the Association (AASW) discussed the place of religion in social work. A Roman Catholic speaker and a protestant speaker were extremely dogmatic and rigid; an atheist speaker was pathetically weak. Miss Ogilvie felt moved to make a case for the tolerant agnostic. I stated if these people firmly hold to a dogmatic viewpoint and proselytise, they have no place in social work and should have the courage to get out. ... Social work done within

⁵⁷ Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 25/9/58.

a church framework is in danger of getting involved in pastoral work, yet if the churches insist on assuming social responsibilities for their flocks it is advisable to have trained social workers doing the work. A strong professional association is the only hope of keeping the social work balanced, but with many such a hope is slight.

Migrant social workers: I suggested recruitment of a suitable male from each of the major migrant groups to do social work training and then run a social work service for the group. Migrants who make good were often not kindly disposed towards those who fail.

Social work consultants to community service organisations: Bodies like Rotary would benefit from having a social worker to think more carefully and knowledgeably about their helping projects. ... Miss Ogilvie had already discussed something like this with the current president of Sydney Rotary Mr Hyde, who had a well-established printing and engraving business.

Trade unions are another possible opening for employing social workers but they are poorly backed in Australia and have no money. Officials with ability are hopelessly overworked.

On October 1, Miss Ogilvie rang. She had told Mr Hyde of my interest in getting large influential organisations like Rotary and the trade unions to have expert consultants on social affairs, the consultants to be men with honours degrees and a social work qualification. A week later, we had lunch together at the Wentworth Hotel. We discussed Mr Hyde's idea of his Club appointing a full-time projects officer to make the Club's community service more effective, and he asked for a written memorandum on the subject. I sent a 5-page foolscap memorandum to him on 12 October, after showing it first to Miss Parker and Miss Ogilvie who were pleased with it. I wrote to the family, 'It will be excellent if the idea does bear fruit, provided of course that the chap they appoint is good quality and knows what he is doing'.⁵⁸

Margaret Evers, our friend from Canberra, spent the afternoon with us on Saturday, 4 October. We drove to North Head and the harbour views were magnificent. I wrote to the family, 'The surf and the whole layout of this northern coastline is very hard to beat'.⁵⁹ Margaret had applied for teacher training to work in the Papua service. She was doing quite well in the Department of Trade but had realised that the future for a woman in the Commonwealth public service was pretty chancy. She was a person full of energy and ideas, and as usual we found her good company.

We had our first surf in the afternoon on Monday, 6 October. Harbord beach was reputed to be the safest along the coastline and was excellent. On Wednesday evening, 8 October, we went to a drive-in theatre and saw a Danny Kaye film. We had found that occasional visits to the drive-in gave us both a welcome break, with David cooperating admirably by sleeping peacefully in his pram-top on the back seat of the car.

On Friday, 10 October, I returned some files to David Macmillan, the University archivist, collected another pile of files from an old cupboard in

58 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 16/10/58.

59 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 9/10/58.

the Department of Social Work, and brought Betty Battle back to have a meal with us and discuss social group work. Betty was the lecturer in social group work in the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney. In 1949, social group work was introduced as an alternative to social casework in the second year of the diploma. Miss Battle, born in 1908, traced for me her family background, her unhappy experience teaching in Victoria, her training and experience in physical education, her shift to Adelaide and contact with Amy Wheaton, and her time in the USA where she completed a degree concentrating on group work at the New York School of Social Work, 1947/8. Veterans were in all of the schools. In the social work schools, many of them were choosing the group work and community organisations options. In the UK for 6 months, she found 'complete antagonism' to the fact she had been to the US. She found in Britain group work training in the clubs was the experienced helping the inexperienced, not relating it to theory. They were doing excellent things but were not clear why. Grace Coyle went to the UK this year. Only in 1957 did they begin to think USA group work had something to offer.

Betty Battle offered various observations on the group work scene in Sydney and on the personalities and developments in the social work course at the University of Sydney. She had heard it said that the Sydney school was a Catholic one, but she had found no evidence of it. Norma Parker was an easy-going Catholic. There was never any suggestion of it in her teaching. She usually took the priests; took all difficult students anyway. There was a sprinkling of clergy of all denominations. Only a person as warm-hearted as Norma would have done so much for the Asian course in the department. Originally students of far higher quality had been hoped for. Asian students did surprisingly well in practical work.

On Tuesday, 14 October, we had dinner with the Lauries at their home in Warrawee. I commented to the family: 'Mr Laurie is very good entertainment value and I also enjoy talking with him on things of some consequence. He is a refreshingly relevant thinker'.⁶⁰

Dorothy Shipp came to dinner and for a discussion about social work on Wednesday, 15 October. She had called in on us in Canberra. A social worker of Austrian Jewish origin, she was looking for an opening in probation work although the superannuation situation would be a deterrent. She was weary of the constant strife in CDSS with the department's senior social worker in Sydney, Nell Cameron, who was regarded badly in the department. In central office, Kathleen Crisp, was a likeable, decent, thinking person, but was overshadowed by Lyra Taylor. Miss Taylor was retiring next year. There was much greater awareness of individuals now in CDSS than formerly. The social work branch was always asked to contribute to training courses. Dorothy felt apathetic towards the AASW. It was still talking about the same things and never getting anywhere. Social workers were very poor at changing social conditions.

On Thursday, 16 October, I wrote to the family,

I continue to plod along through file after file. ... there isn't really much choice. 'The

⁶⁰ Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 16/10/58.

documents' – those sacred things – will make the work academically respectable, which is of course necessary as far as getting the degree goes.⁶¹

Mary McLelland

Mary McLelland, the lecturer in social case work at the University of Sydney, was likely to be someone of particular interest; the quality of her mind was often commented on by her colleagues. She came to dinner and for a discussion on Friday, 17 October. As with some of the others I interviewed, I had a check-list of possible questions which might give at least some structure to our discussion, but my chosen approach was essentially open-ended.

Mary McLelland observed that Norma Parker did not make much of an impression on senior academics like Bill O'Neil and Dick Spann, because she was not rigorous in expressing herself – and she was untidy and over-weight. It took someone like Gordon Hammer, a professor of psychology in the same building as the Department of Social Work, who saw her on a working basis to know how shrewd she was in some areas. Norma, in fact, had an extremely good academic background, and at the time the social work school she attended in the US was perhaps as good as any. She always got on well with men. Staff could depend on her to understand, but she could not delegate authority and could not use the group. Staff groups were not used when she and Morven Brown were together; Fulbrighters were very outspoken on this. She forced herself to have discussion on the place of religion in casework, but it was carefully controlled. Accusations of bias towards Roman Catholicism was nonsense. In the University there had been a swing of interest in religious matters from libertarianism. Mary did not have a high regard for Eileen Davidson – 'she doesn't ring professional bells with me'. Norma 'let the place run like an Irish convent'. She had the devotion and affection of the typists and administrative staff.

Kate Ogilvie did not get on well with the typing staff. She was cultivated, read widely and spoke good French. She oozed into the professional field – almost on a reform basis but soon was into personal service. Her casework was extraordinarily good. Mary saw the arrogance of medical practitioners as an interesting sociological phenomenon. Kate was pro the medical profession. Mary did not think her course outline (in medical social work) was good enough; she made simple ideas sound complicated. She had the arrogance of minor landed gentry; she never talked about her father who was a hard man. There was a need to dominate students and keep people in a subservient position. Kate was highly regarded by the community. She was terribly anti-government. Most almoners deferred to her genuinely. She had a belief in the good quality amateur.

Betty Govan (the first director of the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney) was the same age as Norma Parker. She was very myopic and wore very thick glasses – a bit hearty but had a very attractive smile. She was much trimmer than Norma. She was a Scottish Presbyterian who could not control her reactions to Roman Catholics. Yet she and Norma seemed to get on. She had done wonderful research work and was a very good historian. (Mary said we ought

61 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 16/10/58.

to have a history of social welfare in NSW.) She was a very poor casework teacher, but was a very good administrator. She had sympathetic understanding of people and understood difficulties in government departments. She saw trends very rapidly.

Lyra Taylor was cold and too controlling, and was stupidly status-conscious. She said all of the men were against us, but this was just not true in Queensland where Mary had worked in CDSS. She never said anything nice about any man. She had an inability to delegate and allow policy to grow reflecting local needs. The separation of the professional section from the general administration stream in CDSS was stupid – it was ‘protection of her girls’. Mary had admiration for Lyra Taylor all the same.

In addition to the above insights, Mary McLelland told me some of her own history.

She was the daughter of two doctors in Queensland – her father a gynaecologist, her mother an anaesthetist. Mary was sent to an Anglican private school. She completed an arts degree (Latin, French, and some economics and philosophy), graduating in 1941. She had never heard of social work. In the army for three years in the censor-secret service section, Red Cross gave her some idea of social work – ‘give a lot of good advice’. Her mother introduced her to the possibility and she came to Sydney to do the 2-year diploma, staying with relatives for a year, 1945, and with a sculptor student in 1946. She almost discontinued near the end of the first year, because her teaching failed to get over concepts; the principles and practice of casework was ‘phoney’. Her first placement at the Women’s Hospital was hopeless, but then she went to Joan Lupton at the Family Welfare Bureau, and this was the turning point, her experience in the field. She then went to a placement with Kate Ogilivie in her next year. For two years, 1947–48, she worked in CDSS in Sydney and then moved to Brisbane in April 1949 for a year there in CDSS. Her time in the department gave her a special interest in philosophical and political issues in the use of social work method in a large public agency.

In July 1950, she went to Canada to work in the Children’s Aid Society in Montreal. It was connected with McGill University and had the highest standard of casework practice. In October 1951, she went to the School of Social Service Administration at the University of Chicago to complete her MA in three terms. She did extra work in public administration, had a public welfare agency placement, and did an administration project within the agency. Some places in the US were highly professionalised, and the best was very good. Diagnostic thinking was not so good in Australia. Teachers there were given much more time to develop. Mary had also had 5 months working with parents in the Tavistock Clinic in the UK.

This first significant contact with Mary McLelland had not been disappointing – she was clearly a person of considerable substance. We did not know at the time, but she was to become one of our good friends. Trish’s old school friend Joan Creswell, who had visited us at Oxford, contacted us on her way to England on the Southern Cross when Mary came to dinner, so we invited her to join us. She and Trish chatted afterwards while Mary helped me with my research.

On Saturday, 18 October, Norma Parker came in the late morning, stayed

for lunch and left in the late afternoon. Throughout this period I gleaned from her information about Sydney's social work past. I wrote to the family, 'It is certainly a curious story'.

My 8 foolscap pages of notes tried to capture the gist of it. How I would have appreciated a tape recorder! Norma's account traversed a wide cast of characters which included not only herself but also:

Mrs Muscio – involved with Aileen Fitzpatrick, a bit antagonistic to those who came after.

Miss Fidler – first adviser to women students at the university in the 1920s, few women in the academic world.

Peg Telfer – first secretary of the Institute of Almoners (her brother Archie Telfer was medical superintendent at Sydney Hospital), 'close to all of us in the early days', succeeded Miss Fidler (1936), joined the registrar's department (1944), became university registrar (1955), was consistently a friend to the department of social work. A good person, who commanded respect – cautious, solid, conservative. She stayed back in the 1930s in her social work thinking.

Professor Stout – '(Social work) is terribly hard to interpret to people who have no connection with actual social work'. This was one of the problems with Professor Stout. His views on social work were back in the dark ages, although he read all sorts of stuff. (Professor Partridge inspired confidence. His was the best contribution in the last issue of 'Highway' on Professor John Anderson.)

Gertrude Vaile – head of the social work school at the University of Minnesota went back to the US to find a casework teacher for the board otherwise the institute of almoners would refuse cooperation with the board.

Betty Govan – was not primed about the Sydney situation. She found herself more and more horrified by Fitzie; was told she could not have anything to do with the supervisors in the field, had a year of absolute misery (1939).

Dr Grace Cuthbert – NSW director of maternal and infant welfare, had the final credit for getting the money for the University to take over the board's course at the University of Sydney, was on very good terms with D.H. Drummond (the NSW minister for education and minister responsible for the Child Welfare Department), was a member of both the general and the almoner training bodies. She and Kate Ogilvie were friends from their university days.

Helen Halse Rogers – was the executive officer of the Council of Social Service of NSW, which was moribund and inadequate, the CSS had a lot of good people but they had left. Kate, Helen and Norma were the only continuing figures.

I have already provided a very general account of Norma Parker's own career – in Perth, the USA, Melbourne and Sydney.⁶² At this meeting with her on 18 October, she shared with me an account of her personal story, including – how

62 See pp. 65–6. For her obituary, see John Lawrence and Gay Baldwin, 'Norma Alice Brown, CBE, Social worker, 1906–2004', *Sydney Morning Herald*, 21 May 2004, p. 28.

she would have liked to be a psychiatrist but lacked the necessary manual dexterity to do medicine, how she had gone to Washington to train in social work, her difficulty in finding social work employment in Perth, her work in depression conditions establishing an almoner department at St Vincent's Hospital in Melbourne 1932–36, and then her establishment of a department at St Vincent's in Sydney. Key people in the Melbourne part of her story were three almoners (McIntyre, Brett, and Rees) who were imported from Britain to direct almoner training; a well-qualified psychiatric social worker (Hyslop), also from Britain, to direct the general social work course in Melbourne;⁶³ and Greig Smith, secretary of the almoner institute. These early almoners were good in many ways.

Agnes Macintyre – was the best of the almoners, although not academically (she was short of psychological knowledge), was warm, pleasant, had tremendous compassion for people in need, generous, had wisdom, about 50 years of age

Joan Brett and Helen Rees – both had masters degrees from Cambridge as well as their British almoner training, both held positions of importance at an early age (in about their late twenties), both had good facades and impressed public gatherings but were controlling. Norma had trained under Joan Brett at Melbourne Hospital;⁶⁴ she had an orthodox English Anglican background. Helen Rees was daughter of a Methodist minister, was utterly conscientious, a lot of ability, real concern for people, only way she saw of being able to handle responsibility was to keep everything controlled, was a controlling person, the trouble with the effects of English almoner influence in the beginning, control of growth, suspicious of people with different kinds of background (Norma was always conscious of being a Catholic with her, and also of being out of the USA), nice looking, curly hair, good complexion, sporty kind of build, wore English tweeds well, had a great deal of charm, not a lot of social sense and made up for this by her deliberate use of manner (in England Methodists were inferior, some feeling between Joan Lupton and her), never drank sherry, mellowed attractively.

Jocelyn Hyslop – was a decided asset to the Melbourne scene, brilliant, witty (but cutting), sophisticated, unstable, charming, inconsistent, unpredictable, of average size, about 40, grey hair, a good-looking woman, got on well with men, much softer person than Lyra Taylor, a stimulating teacher, lot of students found her unpredictably difficult, was particularly anti-religious, deliberately provocative on religious issues, ended up as a missionary in Africa, not a comfortable character, destroyed confidence in students rather than inspired it, good with good students, did the mental health course (at LSE) in her early days, a good public speaker.

Greig Smith – only person in Melbourne with warmth, built up a wonderful library in the Charity Organisation Society (COS) in Melbourne, no training, welcoming of trained people, one of greatest supporters of the English almoners, the almoners worked well with him, was secretary of the Institute of Almoners.

63 Jocelyn Hyslop was director of the general social work course in Melbourne for 10 years from 1934.

64 See p. 65.

Norma decided she would have liked to live in Sydney when she came back from the United States. She came to Sydney on holidays and was looking for a job, for she was not happy in Melbourne. The Catholic Lewisham Hospital was ready to appoint her on the urging of Eileen Fitzpatrick, who was not a Catholic. (She had attended Sydney High School.) The Catholic order which ran her hospital in Melbourne offered her a job at St Vincent's Hospital in Sydney. Norma Parker was needed by both sides of the dispute in Sydney. Eileen Fitzpatrick and those who continued to support her, like the lawyer Mrs Mary Tenison Woods, wanted to stave off setting up a separate institute of almoners. Kate Ogilvie, Stella Davies, who had done the almoner course in Britain, and others they persuaded, believed a separate institute was necessary. Fitzie was telling the board and the public the British almoner system was back in the dark ages. She would be using Marjorie Williams for field work at the Prince Alfred Hospital; she was better than the trained ones. She told Norma Parker that Kate Ogilvie had sworn a vow to keep Catholics (Connie Moffat, Eileen Davidson and Norma Parker) out of Sydney! Norma's coming to Sydney was the star turn and she offered her patent bribes including a lecturership in medical social work with the board in a couple of years. At the end of two months, Norma joined Kate Ogilvie, Helen Rees, and Stella Davies in a preliminary meeting for the institute of almoners in New South Wales with Helen Rees as the almoner-in-charge of training. Helen Rees had opened the almoner department at the Sydney hospital a month before. Fitzie had set up a committee to run a medical social work course, but Kate was a difficult person for Fitzie to oppose. Kate commanded a lot of respect, she was a local product, her family was well-known, she had women's college connections such as Peg Telfer and Grace Cuthbert, and doctors were opposed to Fitzie's committee. Kate was the spearpoint for setting up the separate institute.

Helen Rees returned to England in 1941 and later became the director of training for the British institute of almoners. Kate Ogilvie and Helen Rees became close friends. Kate succeeded Helen as the NSW institute's almoner-in-charge of training and head almoner at Sydney Hospital. In 1954, when the University of Sydney took over medical social work training from the institute, she became a member of the university staff.

Betty Govan⁶⁵ – commanded a good deal of respect intellectually,⁶⁶ a Canadian Scot with Presbyterian qualities, aroused some hostility, worked fiendishly hard, a little apt to think everyone should do likewise, now mellowed, had very definite ideas, her casework theory was alright, but had much too definite ideas about how people ought to behave, good understanding of public social services and public administration, a very good administrator, the only good administrator the department had (Norma not very good, Morven worse, and Cardno more so), was not the sort of person to whom all warmed, austere and aloof.

65 She was acting director/director of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Sydney, 1940–45.

66 She completed her PhD at the University of Chicago in 1952 – on child welfare history in New South Wales.

J. A. Cardno⁶⁷ – a Scot in his early thirties, Kate Ogilvie was responsible for Helen Rees interviewing him in London and Helen had sent a glowing report, he had double first-class honours degrees (from Aberdeen and Cambridge Universities), but had no social work qualification or experience, grew up an only child on a Scottish farm, married another only child who grew up on a Scottish farm – a psychiatric social worker who worked in a child guidance clinic in Southampton, he commuted from Scotland to the Board of Trade during the war, social experience of both was extremely limited, a tough Sydney and university environment, he had to cope with a tough vice-chancellor and women like Kate and Norma, he shrank, would not do anything, close to being paranoid, in first few weeks she had thought he was wonderful, he had naïve idea his wife and he were running the course, his wife was hell-bent on introducing psychiatric social work as in England whereas the Sydney course was generic, she and Norma were quite good friends.

Helen McFadyen came to dinner on Wednesday, 29 October, and I commented to the family, 'Trish feeds them and I pump them!' Helen was a social worker at one of the child guidance clinics and had been the research assistant for the 1956 social work survey.⁶⁸ She had first heard about social work at school – 'putting your nose into other people's business and managing their affairs'. While doing her BEc degree she vaguely started thinking about social work. Some of her friends were doing the social work course. The selection process into the course had not been rigorous – 'obviously they accept practically everyone'. The academic standard of the economics students was higher; the students were younger and more eager. Helen described her four field work placements – with Gwen Forsyth at the Sydney Hospital, Paul Henningham at the Marrackville council, with a child guidance clinic (supervisor Norma Parker), and with Dorothy Davis at Red Cross. She thought there would be less 'mucking around' if more men were got in; 'men think differently'. Morven Brown took on too much.

On Friday, 31 October, Trish and I went to the ballet (Robert Helpman, etc.) with Rosemary Nicholls and Lorinne Peart, who came back and stayed the week-end with us. On the Saturday evening Chris Rallings joined us for a meal. The Gordons had put him in touch with us; he was on a 10-month scholarship from the BBC. He had been at Wadham College shortly before we were in Oxford. He appeared in the ABC show 'Any Questions?' the following week.

On Thursday evening, 13 November, I went to a party for social workers held in connection with the Pan-Pacific Conference on Rehabilitation. Jane Hoey, an eminent US social worker, spoke. A number of interstate people were there and the contacts promised to be useful for my work.

In the afternoon and evening of Sunday, 16 November, we entertained Winifred Danby and a friend Alison Graham who was a nursing sister at Sydney Hospital. Win, an English-trained almoner working at the Prince Alfred Hospital, was the secretary of the Australian Association of Hospital Almoners. I talked with her while Trish chatted with Alison.

67 Director of the Department of Social Studies 1946–49. He stayed on in the University for a year teaching psychology.

68 See p. 66.

Win Danby told me about her almoner training; supervisors' reports determined the length of the course and there were no exams. She came out to Australia under the immigration scheme, responding to an advertisement in *The Almoner* placed by Joan Lupton at the Prince Alfred Hospital. Joan Lupton was fairly highly regarded by doctors (she was on their level socially), and had the ear of the superintendent, but accommodation was a bugbear. There was no privacy for interviewing and telephones were hard to get. Almoner students were awed by Kate Ogilvie, but Win was fond of her. There was a general tendency for general members (of the association) to leave things to the senior people. Beth Ward was well regarded. The lack of help for the mentally ill was very marked in Australia. In Australia there was greater emphasis on casework than in Britain. Almoners to get accepted in new settings often took on other than social work services. There had been a lot of attempts at defining what was essentially a social worker's job, but none was really successful. There was interstate jealousy. New South Wales almoners were jealous of the salaries in Victoria, and were suspicious of the new training in Victoria. The medical social workers in Victoria were not happy about the university course; they had not been consulted about it. Georgia Travis (a visiting American medical social worker) could not understand why Australians did not work harder. Her courses did a lot of good. She thought Australian social workers were too modest about how much they knew.

On Thursday, 20 November, Audrey Rennison came to dinner and chatted. She too had a British background and was currently doing a locum at the Prince Alfred Hospital. She had studied at Cambridge University, the London School of Economics and the Institute of Almoners in London.

Audrey Rennison had spent ten years as a lecturer in the Department of Social Studies at the University of Melbourne, from 1947, and had then returned to the United Kingdom. The student counselling service in Melbourne was done by psychologists; it should be a full professional social work service. Norma Parker was a poor administrator but an excellent caseworker. Morven Brown was weak on administration – she did not 'get' him. Teaching the ex-service group, she had to watch everything she said. She was very keen on getting men into social work – they stayed in the job, were not diffident about asking for a rise, would not tolerate bad working conditions, and were more interested in administration and in sociological and political implications (some German and Dutch migrant women were too). Girls were more interested in personal problems – psychological aspects etc, got to a superficial interest in these at a younger age than do men. Recruiting in boys schools had begun. There was danger in thinking there are great numbers of unhelped people; they work things out for themselves.

A lot of baby-farming went on, with a doctor taking in a girl for a while and offering the baby at a price. Caseloads of existing social workers were too big. Almoners in Sydney must have private means, they could scarcely live on what they were getting.

There was stimulation from having in a university department people from other disciplines. Ruth Hoban was of high academic quality herself, felt sensitive about social studies students being thought academically inferior. She began by carrying the social workers association but dropped it and concentrated on raising

academic standards, producing the most heavily-loaded academic course in the University. The department's students were carrying off distinctions in psychology, etc; it was no longer the 'deb department'. Students perhaps were sacrificed. The 'do gooders' were squashed by the time they were through. Ruth Hoban gave the social workers in the field the impression that she considered them inferior. They did not let this interfere with supervision standards, however. They thought she was a 'two-faced bitch'. At a recent conference, Miss Rennison heard a great deal of cat talk – far more than she had ever heard in Sydney.

Clerks were being used for close knowledge of social services. It was difficult to get students to absorb this knowledge until they had to start using it. Where did social administration come into social work knowledge? The association (AASW) was necessary for social action; individuals cannot do much. The more people need the professional service the less they get it.

Amy Wheaton was always a bit queer. She had tried to get Audrey Rennison to stay in Adelaide on her way from the United Kingdom to join the Melbourne University staff. She could run rings round any of them intellectually.

On the following week-end, 22–23 November, we had two lots of visitors. Tim Wall took a break from his marking of mathematic examination papers and came with Jean and the children for a swim at Harbord and a picnic tea. Jenny Wagner, Wendy Hearn, and Janet Butler, now all beginning medical social workers, also came for swim and a meal. On Tuesday evening, 25 November, Trish saw in Manly a very enjoyable film on the Bolshoi Ballet.

An English Almoner – Miss Enid Warren

Uncle George Sutcliffe wrote to me suggesting I might be interested in talking with Miss Enid Warren, an English almoner who was in Australia with her sister Dr Marjorie Warren, for the Pan-Pacific Rehabilitation Conference. He had met them both in Canberra and had been interested in their views. On Sunday morning, 23 November, I spent a couple of hours chatting with Miss Warren in the Hotel Australia and was glad of the contact. She was at the Hammersmith Hospital in London and chaired the education committee of the Institute of Almoners. All of the professional almoners in Britain were in the institute, whose executive council was democratically elected with representatives from every region. Helen Rees had been the director of studies and was helping with the setting up of a course in Malaya. The Australian almoners had complete reciprocity with the British institute.

Agnes Macintyre was a delightful personality, had mellowed, was cultured, had pioneer spirit, most gracious, determination behind a very feminine exterior, charming looking, was very well thought of in England. She had perhaps been suggested to come to Australia by Miss Cummins at St Thomas's. Joan Brett was younger, without a great deal of experience, was racy (in the nice sense), up-and-coming, enthusiastic, very outgoing, most attractive, and with obvious punch. Helen Rees was very respected in the profession, Miss Marks a solid pioneer had never had a better student, was highly intelligent, intellectual, had a fundamental outlook, had some experience before coming to Australia, a slighter build, smiling, a bright

face, a good all-rounder, a leader. Kate Ogilvie had been a student at St Thomas's. She was highly regarded in England, personally and on intellectual grounds. Miss Warren was concerned that the senior ones had been doing everything, what about those coming on?

Kate Ogilvie

On 26 November, Kate Ogilvie came to lunch and we talked through the afternoon about the past.

Miss Fitzpatrick wanted Kate to take on her job as secretary of the Country Women's Association because she was moving to be the director of the NSW Board of Social Study and Training (in 1931). Kate, however, had a long-term project as secretary of the Rachel Forster Hospital. Yet Miss Fitzpatrick said Kate was willing and able to take the job. She was dishonest even then. Fitzie had no social work training herself, but she sold herself to an ignorant group, which included Professors Sutton (public health and preventive medicine) and Lovell (psychology), and Miss Fidler, tutor to women students. Kate asked Miss Fidler, 'Will you advertise this post?' and was told 'We have Miss Fitzpatrick'. (In 1930, Kate had managed the Australian women's hockey team on its inaugural overseas tour. While overseas, she visited hospitals in England and the United States and was so attracted by the almoner work in England that she wished to return there for training so her hospital could open an almoner department.)

Fitzie was a real showman. She made a lot of contacts, but her teaching of social work was abysmal. The American tour with students was ill-conceived; people did not know what to look for. There was an unfortunate misunderstanding about the money involved and students who had put their savings into it felt cheated. At least two of them came to her about it. Students went to Sir Robert Wade, a member of the board, but were told there was no evidence. Lovell and company were rude to anyone who was critical of Fitzie. The episode created a group who began to suspect her. Kate disliked Fitzie intensely. She questioned the value of her course and she the value of Kate's training. According to Fitzie, Helen Rees and Miss Ogilvie only had apprenticeship training, not proper (American) professional training. Kate was not anxious to form a separate institute of almoners, but decided the only thing to do was to start in opposition to Fitzpatrick. She was quite ill from worry for a couple of years.

No holds were barred in this dispute. Some of the social workers who had been supported by Fitzie stayed loyal to her and fell out with Kate. She and Helen Rees had a conspiratorial year enlisting the support for an institute based in a hospital from key people, like Dr Archie Telfer (the superintendent of Sydney Hospital), Sir Robert Wade and the minister for health Fitzsimmons. Fitzie overplayed her cards with people high up and they saw through her. She was a psychopath and told the most blatant lies. Miss Macintyre was a little intolerant of Americans and was not nice to Norma or Connie in Melbourne. Norma did not like institutes but Kate wanted to get her on their side to improve things when she came to Sydney. They recognised the general diploma was needed and took people who had the diploma, but the students were getting dreadfully inadequate training. Fitzie covered her tracks by getting Miss Govan from Canada. The board of studies was

working hard to get the university to take over the course. They were running out of money – no-one was giving any to Fitzie. At a political science conference, Dr Cuthbert got the education minister Mr Drummond interested, and he saw Helen Rees and Kate. Helen Rees, Kate and Dr Cuthbert argued that state money should only be provided to the University for the course if a properly qualified person was appointed director. This happened when Betty Govan was appointed in 1940 as acting director of the course in the University. Fitzie was opportunistic and began working with displaced persons. A lot of people were very grateful to her. Professor Lovell was a lovable chap, but was vain and had little acumen. 'The professors had backed the wrong horse.' Bland, however, saw through her.

Fitzie had got the Council of Social Service going. It went off with a bang but had no underpinning. The council ran a central index, but there was great variation in the use that was made of it. Red Cross and Legacy paid the council quite a large sum for using it. There was a duty to the community as well as the client. People using it had to be aware of the ethical issues involved. The central index added to the objective tools of social work, and encouraged full use of collateral help.

Miss Govan was scholarly, Kate had great confidence in her ability to tackle a subject honestly and well, she taught social work theory with full regard to the various schools of thought, the institutional, historical and sociological side of her teaching was good, she was forbidding but her students admired her, a bit 'gauche', rude and ungracious unless people knew her, people respected her, a tiger for work, she and Norma were a good complement, her public relations were weak, she put the course on its feet, a thoroughly sound person. She, Norma, Kate, and Alison (Player) would meet in Norma's flat. They were all doing things outside their ordinary jobs.

Miss Macintyre was a Scot with a powerful, astringent mind, leftist in politics, very well read, wise, whimsical, intolerant of fools, very fond of anything beautiful, was in the tradition of very liberally educated women of the Edwardian era, had an enormous sense of vocation. She had no degree, worked from 9 in the morning until 8 at night, dealing with the dispensation of medical charity, was very directive deciding what was best to do for this person, she tried to reproduce St Thomas's in London, where they were dealing with impoverished, malnourished, illiterate hordes of people, she was a woman of her time. She took Melbourne by storm although she had an inaudible voice. She was a great plotter getting people on side, a manipulator. Got people together and taught them. She had written a report about an almoner department at the Rachel Forster Hospital.

Joan Brett was a Cambridge graduate, she had enterprise but was not an inspired person, she faced widowhood with children and had done well by them, was back at work in a UK hospital. She was brought up in the old tradition.

Helen Rees was a very great friend, had a Cambridge degree in English, was very intelligent, intolerant of frustration, very good leader on paper, not so good coping with other people, a good caseworker but a bit on the directive side, she had had 6 months as an assistant almoner at the City General Hospital in Sheffield before going to Melbourne, she and Miss Hyslop were a very good combination.

Miss Hyslop was much more modern than Macintyre. She had trained in psychiatric social work. She was much more generically centred in her thinking. Helen Rees and Joan Brett were well onside with this. The products of Macintyre – Dorothy

Bethune, Maude Hamilton, Isobel Hodge – had a great sense of vocation and had all the fervour of pioneers, but they had done a little scrappy course and were threatened by Hyslop. Ruth Hoban who succeeded Hyslop as director of the Melbourne university course was on Hyslop's academic bandwagon, but she did not have much feeling for individuals. Miss Bethune and Miss Hoban were two very intolerant people. Hyslop was the most brilliant person social work had had in Australia. She was very attractive and made a big impression in the University. She was offered a job heading the WAAAF (Women's Auxiliary Australian Air Force), but did not take it arguing she was making a greater contribution in training social workers.

Joan Lupton

We had Joan Lupton, head almoner at Prince Alfred Hospital, to dinner on Monday, 1 December. I told the family, 'She is a good person and we enjoyed having her'.⁶⁹ It was my second chance to talk with her at some length.⁷⁰ She commented on a wide range of people, organisations and events.

When Joan went to PA in 1948, Professor Dawson had a psychiatry unit and was interested in mental deficiency, but psychiatric social work did not come in because of him. There had been a terrific rumpus about conditions in child welfare generally in New South Wales – Norma, Kate, Grace Cuthbert, Mary Tenison Woods and others had been in the thick of it. All of this was in Kate's and Norma's bloodstream. So many good ones from the Child Welfare Department – Swanson, Hayes, Love – had now gone. One 'twerp' whom she had had as a student at the Family Welfare Bureau might be the next director, he was Hicks's white-haired boy. Yet he had a really punitive attitude to people, and was corrective and moralistic. The idea of an almoner at the Children's Hospital in Adelaide came from Dr Helen Mayo and Constance Finlayson. Mayo was a great friend of Agnes Macintyre. The initial money came from Eva Waite who was on the hospital board. Amy Wheaton had worked up the course in Adelaide to a standard the university was willing to accept. Helen James in Adelaide was looking after sick parents and relatives and was terrified of her own health. The family was well-to-do. She never fulfilled her potential in social work. Joy MacLennan was good within her limits. The Adelaide community as a whole was doing things for others much more than in Sydney. There were many good untrained people. The socially acceptable thing was to go into nursing. The almoner department at the Royal Adelaide Hospital started in 1937, at the same time as the Children's hospital's. Janet Payne, its first almoner, was the daughter of a well-to-do jeweller in Oxford. She was a very nice person, but an awful almoner; she knew she was out-of-date.

Kate Ogilvie

On 3 December, we drove to Kate's home at Darling Point in the late morning. After lunch Kate and I had a further extended talk about the past.

69 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 4/12/58.

70 See pp. 68–69.

The Charity Organisation Society was financed by members of the Union Club. They dealt with begging letters and had to decide whether or not to give money. Casework was likely to develop practically anywhere where there was a money handout. C.T. Wood was too forward looking for the Department of Child Welfare, which he headed. He put humanity and convictions above red-tape. He formed a child welfare association in the 1930s, a forerunner of the representative child welfare advisory council formed by Drummond, which was to upgrade standards. Kate was on the advisory council and told me, as had Norma Parker, how they had finally managed to get a new minister and departmental head in the department by 1945. Hicks had done a wonderful job organising emergency services. He was put in to implement training recommendations, but he was not able to make a casework service in his department; he was not convinced about the worth of social workers. Hicks sent quite senior people to do the social work course, but one by one they left the department. The last one Kath Hughes did extremely well at Smith College in the US, but was told by Hicks there was nothing in the department for a psychiatric social worker. A personnel officer in the state public service said that social workers cannot do anything that someone with a psychology degree plus commonsense cannot do.

Until lately the community demand for professional social work in Queensland was almost nil, and the government was against it. Red Cross had started things rolling with its scholarships and employment, and CDSS and other Commonwealth departments were making social work appointments. Individual professors were interested. Queensland was not ready for it and there were few precipitating situations. It would have to depend on chance factors. In South Australia, Adelaide was just as sticky in their public health department which controlled hospitals, but they had had Amy Wheaton, Jerry Portus and a climate of liberalism.

Kate talked about the abortive attempt in the early 1950s to establish a national council of social service. She had the impression Mr Rowe would not play ball unless he was the chairman of the national body, but when a parallel Australian social welfare council was established he still did not actually participate, although he made money available for international affiliations. (Kate was actively involved with the NSW Council of Social Service; was a vice-president from 1946 until becoming president 1952–59.)

Kate described the diversity of jobs done by the early social workers. The first people were very keen about interpreting the work. There was a great sense of solidarity in the membership of the group. In the family field, the Family Welfare Bureau and the Red Cross were mainly set up by professional social workers. The Family Welfare Bureau was a magnificent chance to interpret the work to businessmen. The Lord Mayor was receiving letters from frantic women. Helen Rees proposed the idea of the bureau. But this was charitable work, you do not pay for this. Kate and Helen emphasised the skills needed but they still would not pay. With the approval of Rachel Forster Hospital, Kate served as the honorary director, with Peg Mangerson as her assistant, and with lots of volunteers. The subsequent director Alison Player wrote about three annual reports which interpreted the nature and importance of the work. Since the war both agencies had been languishing, providing a pretty poor type of social work (by too many neurotic, self-centred girls). Norma was far too permissive and optimistic, 'never

loses faith in people's ability to grow'. Kate did not reject them initially but put the heat on at the end of the first year. Ruth (Hoban) opted for the intellectual, but that was just as dangerous as being too permissive. There was a paucity of people coming in, yet there was continuing growth of demand. Child welfare officers started in-service training sessions from 1947.

Florence Ferguson

In the evening of Wednesday, 3 December, Florence Ferguson came to dinner. She was the past secretary of the NSW branch of the AASW and was the incoming secretary of the federal body. Florence had not yet been able to locate the minute books of the general meetings of the branch. The old records of the branch were in a chaotic state.

Miss Ferguson worked in the Immigration Department. There was no contact with Hazel Dobson at the centre of the department. A rift had occurred between Miss Murphy the senior in the Sydney office and Miss Dobson. They did not attract staff. Interpreters were available to assist in their departmental work. The average attendance at general meetings of the association was as good as one could expect. The spirit was now what do I get out of the association? There was a lack of knowledge of rules of procedure in committees. Office-bearers started with good intentions and ideas but got bogged down. Younger ones were not fostered. The association had not been in on the Mental Health Bill. The minister talked about visiting mental nurses! The Bill did mention welfare officers, however. Many members of the association were looking after aged parents.

On 4 December, I told my family I was looking forward to listening to the test match the next day. I had found I could listen to the cricket while noting material in the old records, and this alleviated the tedium. I had had a couple of very enjoyable hours watching Neil Harvey bat on the Cresswell's television, during the previous test.

Helen Halse Rogers

We had the director of the NSW Council of Social Service, Helen Halse Rogers, to dinner on Monday, 8 December. She gave me almost a complete set of *Social Service*, a publication of the council, a complete set of the council's annual reports, and copies of other council literature.

Helen said Miss Fitzpatrick coloured the whole early era of social work in New South Wales. Fizzie had been employed by the Country Women's Association, but had been more or less thrown out after an awful row. The trip to America which she organised was for the students to observe and further their practical work training. Older students in the group collected evidence of her scheming. Lovell was forced to call a meeting but he and Harvey Sutton were slow or did not want to believe. Fizzie did her best to hold on to a few who were very loyal to her. Helen started the course in 1934. Fizzie's lectures were appalling. She tried to teach casework but was hopeless. There was very little reading and she often did not turn up. Everyone wanted to do the almoner course but they were

not yet equipped for it.

Elizabeth Govan was extremely helpful, well-organised, very reliable, her opinion was accepted and regarded well by non-trained people, a good committee person, did a great amount of work, made a tremendous contribution, worked under great pressure. Norma Parker was a slave, sacrificed herself for her students, but student selection was a bit lax. Kate Ogilvie had made an impact on the community, everyone looked to her for leadership from the executive angle. As president of the council she did not want too many social workers on the council's executive. Morven Brown was rumoured to be most ambitious. Norma was carrying the department, but Morven raised its status. Mary McLelland was academically good but untrained committees in voluntary agencies were bewildered by her use of professional jargon. Betty Battle was liked as a person, but she was vague and unreliable about getting things done. Helen had learnt a lot from Mollie Booth, but she was academically lazy. She was a great influence on students. The council had run the first marriage guidance course with a government grant, but the Marriage Guidance Council were 'a horrifying group'. The council was trying to get industrial firms on its permanent donation list and was being consulted much more by large firms.

Dudley Swanson, Beth Ward

On Thursday, 11 December, Mr Dudley Swanson told me he was preparing an extensive report on the Adult Probation Service since its inception. He would send me a copy when it was printed in March. In the evening we had Beth Ward to dinner. She was head almoner at the Royal North Shore Hospital and was now president of the AASW. She had begun her course in 1938 and was quite grateful to Miss Fitzpatrick for providing her with a new point of view with sweeping, provocative remarks. She had had meaningful casework discussions with Betty Govan, but had had practical work placements with untrained people. She had to do an extra three months of practical work in the Institute of Almoners. Students were not aware of the intrigues and conflicts that were going on. Kate Ogilvie was strong and able, worked through conflict, was well known in the community, was good on committees.

Morven Brown

I spent most of the morning of Friday, 12 December, with Professor Morven Brown at what was now the University of New South Wales at Kensington.

Professor Elkin had founded the Australian Institute of Sociology in 1942 and it was going strong in 1947–48. It did a lot of harm. Benjamin Fuller had given particular support. Aileen Fitzpatrick was involved in it, but academic people began to distrust her considerably. She had all kinds of people apparently associated with it but none was functioning.

The misadventures with Cardno occurred after Morven had left for England.⁷¹ Stout did not believe in social work's existence as an academic discipline, and

71 See pp. 64–5.

thought an academic director without a professional qualification was appropriate. He thought Cardno had just the right background. Morven's appointment (as director of the School of Social Work) was very acceptable with influential arts people.⁷² He had had some associations with social workers. Norma, however, was anxious for the preservation of social work's status. His regime was not a success. He had come after the post-graduate course was in, and had accepted Norma's assurance that it would be alright. Professor O'Neil and others had thought the day of undergraduate diplomas was departing. Professor John Anderson did not agree that social work had any place in a university at all, but he had sat on the committee and his objections tended to weaken if the students were graduates. There had been no consultation with the field or with employers. It soon became obvious that the postgraduate course would not work; other courses were necessary. Morven Brown had been made a full member of the arts faculty, although Anderson bitterly opposed this.

People in the field had a strong sense of professional solidarity. Kate Ogilvie had strength with the upper class, and had powerful influence in the community. Norma's strength was with the professional group. Typically they identified with different groups. Both were devious – with high principles and self-interest.

Social workers were often seen as young flappers. Thomas, the personnel officer in the Child Welfare Department, sneered at young female know-alls. Their lives in the department were made so miserable that they were driven out.

Richard Hauser was an arrogant refugee from Vienna where he had trained roughly. He had joined the British army in Palestine. After the war he worked with UNRRA in Rome. He had been in a social work project with delinquent gangs of children. After more study in London, he came to Australia, representing himself as highly trained. He married Hepzibah Menuhin who had a great deal of money. He had no theoretical knowledge, was entirely concerned with social action, and was fond of self-help organisations – amputees, psychiatric patients, and so on. Hauser went to Adelaide and Amy Wheaton thought he was terrific. He had Amy and Morven to dinner. Hepzibah was there. He talked of the needs of the city, but then got on the dessicated spinster line. They left. His show used ex-social workers and others off the street. He had some powerful connections. It was difficult to assess Hauser. Alf Conlon, a power behind the scenes, was his mate.

I did not see Tom Brennan, the new head of the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney, but would do so on my next much briefer visit to Sydney most likely in February. The federal council of the AASW was in the process of moving to Sydney, so I would be missing its records in Melbourne when I went there.

On Sunday, 14 December, we returned David's cot to Mrs Fisher, had afternoon tea with her, and then collected material from Mrs Hector, the honorary secretary of the Institute of Almoners (minute books, and annual reports to give me a complete set). I had to return the minute books in the first week in January. We then met up with the Wall family who came for a picnic meal in the flat after a swim at Harbord.

72 He had been hoping for a chair of education but did not get on so well with Connell and McCrae.

Norma Parker

On Monday morning, 15 December, I had a further discussion with Norma Parker, at the Department of Social Work. This mainly covered her involvement in child welfare issues in New South Wales in the late 1930s and war years.

C.T. Wood, a progressive secretary of the state Child Welfare Department set up a standing child welfare conference in 1938, on which Norma was an elected member. The conference ran into official opposition; Wood was removed to another part of the public service and the conference was superseded by a nominated Child Welfare Advisory Council, a statutory body directly advising the minister. Its reports were ignored by the departmental secretary and the minister, Clive Evatt, 'the worst child welfare minister ever'. With mass abscondings and riots in the department's institution, the adverse publicity forced it to seek assistance from the advisory committee. Throughout 1943, the delinquency committee of the advisory council intensively studied the cases of the girls at the girls' industrial school at Parramatta. Betty Govan and Norma Parker 'did all the hack work', but all of the committee of seven 'worked like slaves'. Norma lived in the institution for a week and wrote a 'ball by ball description'. It was a 'devastating experience' for her; the cases were all failures of the Child Welfare Department. Their report went to the minister, but they heard nothing. Norma was besieged by the press, but she could not give them anything because the report was confidential to the minister. The chairman of the advisory council, Professor Lovell, went to premier William McKell, with the threat of giving the whole report to the press. They were lucky in their timing, about August 1944 - an election was coming up. The premier sat with the Child Welfare Advisory Council for two afternoons, and he agreed to replace Evatt with the best minister available, and at the same time ordered a public service judicial inquiry into the running of the Child Welfare Department. The outcome was that by 1945, there was a new minister (R. J. Heffron) and a new departmental head (R. H. Hicks), with a strong reform mandate which included an emphasis on training of the department's officers. A lot of money was spent on child welfare and Hicks did a good job in a short time, but he was 'a megalomaniac' surrounded by 'yes' men.

Also at this 15 December meeting, Norma Parker told me about a parting of the ways she had had with Lyra Taylor over an AASW invitation she had issued to Jane Hoey, a leading social worker in the US government, to visit Australia after the Madras Conference in 1952. Another topic was Jean Robertson's appointment in 1940 as assistant director of the Industrial Welfare Division of the Commonwealth Department of Labour and National Service. The department had decided trained industrial welfare officers were needed to foster welfare work in government and private factories. Jean Robertson came to Australia in 1939 to work as field work tutor for the Victorian Council for Social Training. She came from Glasgow and had industrial welfare experience. Norma Parker's uncle was a former Commonwealth public service arbitrator, who had retired but was back in charge of welfare services in munitions factories. Norma put him in touch with Jean Robertson who was appointed immediately. However, she fell foul of him and he did not stay very long.

(During the war years, she organised with the social work training boards in Melbourne and Sydney ten emergency 6-month industrial welfare courses.) Norma described her as very able but with a difficult personality.

Aileen Fitzpatrick

At noon on 15 December, I had a sandwich lunch with Miss Aileen Fitzpatrick (Fitzie) at the Benjamin Fuller Foreign Languages Memorial Library. As already indicated, she had been director of social work training in Sydney from 1930 to 1939. I described her to the family as 'a highly suspect person who has been involved in at least three major storms ('scandals' perhaps wouldn't be too harsh a word)'.⁷³

Miss Fitzpatrick told me she was first interested in the 1920s. She was anxious to specialise in sociology but it was not available at the university. She took Greek and Latin, and studied social philosophy for three years 1917–19, doing honours. She then taught classics in high schools until 1927, paying an observation visit to the UK and the Continent in 1923. Eleanor Rathbone, the Webbs, and the movement for social justice were mentioned. She thought of doing a PhD but decided it was more profitable to look. People she met travelling, included Jane Adams at Hull House in Chicago, and she mentioned being in touch with American friends.

In 1927, she went to the Country Women's Association as state secretary. For three years she wrestled with 'these inimitable women'. While there she saw the working of state departments and the danger of bureaucracy with no training. She visualised training connected with sociology. On cadetships from school, students would do a sociology degree as a pre-requisite for a post-graduate diploma which was always in her mind. As a member of the National Council of Women's standing committee for education, she tried to get Miss Fidler to get the proposed social work course to be based on sociology, and to be related to what was happening overseas. Miss Fidler did go to the UK and visited LSE and saw some settlements. On her return she proposed a chair of sociology but without success.

Fitzie offered to help as acting director for a while. She had suggested they should survey where training had developed and how, but Professor Lovell and Miss Fidler were in a bit of a hurry and pleaded with her to get the course started. She drew up a prospectus after studying prospectuses from New York, Philadelphia, Chicago, Minneapolis, Amsterdam, and LSE. She wanted to call it an introduction to training in social work, and to keep it as an entity in itself and out of the university because short diplomas should not be given by a university. The committee was inclined to take anyone offering to do the course; they could not demand pre-requisites.

Fitzie thought they might with a Carnegie grant get a visiting director to come in as an advisor – she had some possibilities in mind, one from the UK and four from the USA. In 1931, a Carnegie Corporation visitor, Dr Coffman, and his wife met her socially. She was subsequently asked if she would accept a traveller's grant if offered. It would be better if an Australian was doing the director's job. They would expect her to stay in the job, and would provide a grant for this. Later, if

⁷³ Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 22/12/58.

she agreed to stay for five years they would provide an additional but final grant. The travel grant enabled her in 1933 to do an observational tour of social work schools in the USA and Europe. It was pre-Roosevelt USA in the middle of the depression. America was shattered. Bread queues reflected a complete community cross-section. In the US she made a long stop at the University of Minnesota where the Coffmans were located, and then visited Chicago, Boston, Toronto, San Francisco (Berkeley), Philadelphia, New York, Tulane, and New Orleans. In Europe she was based at LSE, and visited Liverpool, Leeds, Manchester, Amsterdam, Sweden, Berlin, and Prague.

She saw from her trip that apprenticeship courses were on the way out. She had regular correspondence with all her friends overseas. She claimed Mrs Wheaton in Adelaide and Miss Hyslop in Melbourne copied the course she developed in Sydney. She had long sessions with Miss Hyslop. Practical work was the big problem and it was largely observational. A lot of it contradicted what was read and learned. Agencies were after cheap labour from the students. There was no group work. To show good practice to students, she took a group of students in the long vacation of 1934–35 to North America and visited eight schools of social work which she had contact with. Roosevelt's New Deal was getting under way. Unemployed graduates were doing social work training. Fizzie decided a chair of sociology was needed in Sydney. Others on the board wanted the course to be in the university at an undergraduate level. For two years she put up names to the vice-chancellor for a professor of sociology, who would be nominal head of the course, and a director from overseas. Finally she herself had to leave. She had, however, brought out an assistant from Toronto, Betty Govan. In a half-baked way the course moved into the university, with Betty carrying on with it. No-one applied for the director's job. There was something in Australian universities against sociology.

In 1932, Miss Fitzpatrick took the initiative, with Dorothy Poate a senior student, to form an association of social workers in New South Wales. There were people in the field who were feeling out of things, and were not able to take any courses. The association would bring in all sides. In 1934, she entertained Miss Hyslop and they talked of the formation of an Australian association that would get all in.

Early on 16 December, 1958, Miss Fitzpatrick rang me with further reminiscences.

In the early years, some voluntary agencies and some individuals in government departments were ready for a professional approach. She was in constant contact with schools in the USA. On two occasions she was asked by Carnegie to nominate people to come to Australia. Gertrude Vaile came on sabbatical leave and visited agencies in Victoria just after they started the course there. Hyslop was dependent on a salary provided by the board. Porter Lee came and was rather despairing of the situation here. There was little conception of what was needed by people on the board. He said to her come to us at New York. Keep on as you are going, was very firm on the need for a chair of sociology in the background. He could not understand why we were blindly following the English pattern of setting up an institute of almoners. We were too prone to take on ideas on the way out overseas.

In the showdown (that led to the course going into the university), Professor

Bland and others thought she wanted to keep on as director, but she could not have taken it on and it had her blessing. She saw herself as part of the Carnegie experiment which was over. She was going to be married in Hawaii in January 1941, but her fiancé died suddenly in December 1940. Professor Bland was an empire builder; he had been just a lecturer in the school of economics.

(From 1940, Miss Fitzpatrick ran a service for refugees which involved family reunion, a foreign language library and an integration program for the intelligentsia. It was eventually incorporated in 1949 as the Australian Council for International Social Service. With increased migration in the 1950s, it needed the support of overseas affiliates and additional funds. It became affiliated with the ISS in 1955, but had to improve its casework and management standards. Fitzpatrick resigned, but continued her refugee work from the Sir Benjamin Fuller Foreign Language Library. She died in 1974. According to her biographer, she had 'achieved much by her energy and charm, but met her match in other forceful women intent on directing the way the profession should develop'.)⁷⁴

On 16 December, we took two large suitcases, the pram base, and the playpen to Chatswood station and sent them by freight to Canberra; I returned material to the Family Welfare Bureau; and then we drove to the south coast of Sydney. On the way we passed a great number of large expensive homes with superb sites, but the Bondi area and past it was overcrowded, monotonous and shabby. We had our last surf on Wednesday 17 December and I frantically tried to finish taking down data from the graduates' cards at the Department of Social Work. Leaving Sydney at 11am we arrived in Canberra at about 6pm. Because of all the files I had made over the past three and a half months the car was choc-a-block. David was allowed a tiny little corner of the back seat from which he gazed at first with a great amount of wonderment. The Cresswells gave us coffee before we set out; we had got on very well with them.

CANBERRA

Our Canberra flat was left in excellent condition by Duncan and Ruth Anderson, who had found a house to rent for three months waiting to hear from External Affairs Department where they would be posted. We were delighted to learn that they were expecting a child. They asked us to have Christmas dinner with them.

In the course of the visit to Sydney, in addition to the various interviews, I had managed to make detailed chronological and subject files, using the minutes and other records – for the NSW Board of Social Study and Training and the Board of Social Studies of the University of Sydney, the NSW Association of Social Workers and the NSW branch of the AASW, and the NSW Institute of Hospital Amoners,⁷⁵ the NSW branch of the Association

74 Kerry Regan, 'Fitzpatrick, Aileen (1897–1974)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Vol. 14, Melbourne University Press, 1996.

75 I still had to complete these before returning them by post early in January, 1959.

of Hospital Almoners, and the central council of Australian Association of Hospital Almoners. No-one had denied me access to these records, although in some cases the records were in a chaotic and scattered state. My research project had produced some increased awareness of the need for more careful record-keeping. What was missing in my developing data-base was any systematic record of the organisations employing qualified social workers. On 1 November, I wrote to Bob Gollan telling him where I had reached. Back in Canberra, on Tuesday, 23 December, I discussed my progress with Professor Hancock and Dr Gollan.

Margaret Evers came for a meal that evening and helped with the decoration of our Christmas tree. She was recovering from a broken leg received when taking a cattle ramp at speed on her Vespa. She stayed the night on Christmas eve, and looked after David while we went to 8am church on Christmas morning. The Tregenza family came in the afternoon for a Christmas drink on the day before Christmas. Our Christmas dinner with the Andersons was a sumptuous meal prepared by Ruth. They now were living near the Sutcliffes and we called in on the way home.

On Christmas day, I wrote an excited letter to my sister Marg, who had written to us about her result in her economics finals and her first job, but her letter had first gone to Harbord. She had been awarded a 'First' and was going to be working in the Economics Department as a tutor and a research assistant, sharing these positions with her fellow honours student Deane Terrell who would be going to Oxford on a Rhodes Scholarship later in 1959. I said to Marg:

We are absolutely thrilled to hear of your 'First'. It is a richly deserved reward for a great deal of hard work plus a great deal of native ability. Soon Jim and I will be known as 'Margaret Lawrence's brothers'! ...

While the completion of the social work course would now seem to be out of the question, I would strongly urge you to attend as many sociology lectures as you can. Much depends on the quality of the lecturer as to how much you get out of the subject, but you should at a minimum be put in touch with some of the rapidly increasing sociological literature from overseas. Much of the latter would seem to me to be directly relevant for the practising economist. Sociology as a respectable academic discipline is belatedly making its appearance in Australia. Come it must, and I think you would do well to be 'progressive' in this direction.

... I have written to (Deane Terrell) offering congratulations (on the Rhodes Scholarship) and any assistance I might be able to give. Anyone who dresses up Oxford experience into something awe-inspiring and frightening is a pompous donkey.⁷⁶

On 30 December, we had a very enjoyable evening with Deane Terrell and a friend, who came for a meal and chatted. Deane planned to go to Magdalen College. (He subsequently had a notable career and was vice-chancellor of the ANU, 1994–2000.)

⁷⁶ Letter, John Lawrence to Margaret Lawrence, 25/12/58

News from Oxford and Other Overseas Friends

On 19 August, John Orton wrote to us with two wedding photos. He and Joyce would be staying in Oxford for another year to enable him to complete his DPhil thesis, and then there was a possibility of them spending a year in the USA. After that there was a question mark. Joyce had been working in a school off the Cowley Road. The summer had been very wet, but he had enjoyed playing with the College cricket team although they had had indifferent results despite having an Australian leg-spinner (not, I fear, a Benaud). He had played with the Barnacles at the end of term touring in Sussex. 'They're such a gentle and interesting collection of people, always enjoying their cricket to the full whether the game is keen or otherwise'. The College had been celebrating its quincentenary in great style, which included a dinner for all past presidents of the Junior Common Room and the Commem ball – 'the College never did believe in doing these things by halves!' John and Joyce had had an evening with Joachim Classen and his fiancée. Joachim was now on the staff of University College, Ibadan, in Nigeria, and was attending a conference in England. John and Joyce had been very pleased to have heard about the baby. 'I'm sure he or she will be thriving when I remember the vitality of the parents!'⁷⁷

We received a very welcome letter written on 7 October from Jack Love, one of our closest American friends when we were at Oxford. He had decided to stay in physiological research for five years; he had all the money and assistance he wanted. Poss Parham had finished law school at Yale after his return from England and was now in the US Air Force learning to become a jet pilot. Ivan Feltham had married a German girl who was studying law at British Columbia where Ivan was teaching, and they planned to be in Europe next summer working and travelling.⁷⁸ Our mutual friends Graham and Elizabeth Jeffries were well settled in New York, with Graham working at one of the leading hospitals. Jack told us he was still single, rebounding from a tragic romance – he had not been as fortunate as I had been in meeting someone of Trish's worth!⁷⁹

On 30 October, we had news of another friend from our time at Oxford, David Stout. I attended the presentation of diplomas of social work and social studies at the University of Sydney, and heard Professor Trethowan (psychiatry) speak on the assimilation of migrants. Afterwards at afternoon tea I talked with Professor Stout who told me that his son David and family (Margaret and young son Nigel) intended to return to Sydney after David completed his two-year fellowship in economics at Magdalen.

In a very warm letter written on 18 November, Ken Tite, my politics tutor at Magdalen, wrote to us:

Do let us know how things are going. We speak of you quite often, but generally in terms of speculation ... We thought we were onto something from the President a few months ago – he was almost sure he remembered – now where had he heard

⁷⁷ Letter, John Orton to Mr and Mrs John Lawrence, 19/8/58.

⁷⁸ Ivan had sent us an invitation to the wedding in Vancouver on 30/5/58. His bride was Kristine Strombeck.

⁷⁹ Letter, J. W. Love to Mr and Mrs John Lawrence, 7/10/58.

it? And what was it he'd heard? Or was it not the Lawrences, but someone else? However, whoever it was, we never found out *what* it was. ... give us a basis for further speculation.

The college is unchanged except for Harry – it isn't the same place without him, and yet surprisingly (when you think how fond we were of him, and what a grievous shock it was to lose him) it's more nearly the same place than one would have thought. Perhaps, as one gets older, the place asserts its permanence over the people in it. His successor is Patrick Gardiner ... I think he'll fit in quite well with David and me, except that we've now got all three tutors married and all three in the same age group, which doesn't seem to me an ideal arrangement long-term.

Peter had won a free place to Magdalen College School, and Philip was at his most bloodthirsty stage with an array of armaments.

I'm better than I was, though it seems I'll have to take things gently permanently ... I feel nothing but relief at being able to get around the way I can. ...

Margaret is growing younger and prettier all the time, and is cheerful despite an abscessed appendix which will be removed about Christmas. She has a job selling flowers and bulbs on a stall in the Wednesday market, and enjoys it a lot.

Hope you're bringing him up nicely, Trish (John, I mean). He must have rated a lowish beta as a husband to start with, but I'm sure you've got him up near the alpha margin by now.

Margaret sends her love. We wish you could drop in and play some family games this Christmas, or project slides at one another; but perhaps it will happen one year. We'd hate to think it will only be an occasional Xmas card for ever more!⁸⁰

In Norman Blake's Christmas letter, his thesis was still unfinished and he had decided to stay around in England for a year or two before thinking of looking for a teaching job in an Australian university. It would all be finally decided by where he could get a job; he would wait and see what turned up.⁸¹

Further overseas news came from Paul and Louise Remmy. Paul hoped they might see us someday in Australia, for as soon as he finished at Harvard he was going into the US foreign office or service. Many from Magdalen were there – Tom Skidmore, John Leyerle, Bill Miller, Frank Goodman. Louise wondered how we liked being home after our world travels. They had spent over a year and a half in Tokyo while Paul was in the navy, and they had loved Japan. Back at Harvard, Paul was completing his PhD and spoke longingly of the Oxford days, 'Harvard is a real grind!'⁸²

Astra Kirthi Singha wrote from London. He still had 18 months to go before becoming a breadwinner and was still single. He hoped to secure a job in an international agency and would keep us informed. Ceylon was unmanageable and was in a 'state of emergency', no doubt to be frequently repeated.⁸³

80 Letter, Ken Tite to John and Trish Lawrence, 18/11/58.

81 Letter, Norman Blake to John Lawrence, 30/12/58.

82 Messages on a Christmas card, 1958.

83 Letter, A. Kirthi Singha to Mr and Mrs R. J. Lawrence, 30/12/58.

Eric Gray thanked us for our Christmas card and congratulated us on the arrival of David:

He will keep you especially Patricia very busy for a long time to come. My own family here continues to flourish and the younger members of it to be as naughty as they could be from time to time. But they make up for it, of course.

He had been away for a term in Rome doing a bit of archaeology for a change. He was finding the Oxford weather just as it was – ‘sunless and damp. The very thought of Adelaide made him feel very nostalgic at this time of the year.’⁸⁴

Another very welcome letter came from Ray Greet at the Australian Embassy in Rangoon. Rangoon was an exciting place to be with the army providing the country’s first real leadership in ten years. The government had become ‘more and more corrupt, lazy and incompetent’. It had to be seen whether the army was as good at fundamental economic planning and political leadership as it was at organising street cleaning and throwing politicians out of office. He feared that Jenny got a little bored with life (‘as most wives do in the East’) but on the whole did not want to return home just yet. They had bought a Volkswagon which was ‘a little beauty’ despite the Rangoon roads and the frustrations of the traffic.⁸⁵

I wrote to Ray on 11 February, and he brought us up-to-date with their activities in a long letter on 23 May. They were in their eighth month at Rangoon and their first monsoon was due after a very hot period. Some of the initial gloss had worn off party going, but they were continuing to enjoy life on the whole. Jenny’s sister Phillipa had stayed with them for three weeks, and Professor Lawton of the Geography Department at the University of Adelaide had stayed a week passing through on study leave. Ray and Jenny had had a week in April staying on a tin mine down the Tenasserim coast. Ray had just returned from four wonderful days in the Southern Shan States in the hilly area of Burma some 400 miles north of Rangoon. From Taunggyi, the capital, the principal agricultural officer took Ray to the areas his department had set aside for soya bean development (and for which they were asking tractors under the Colombo Plan). The officer had spent 14 months in Australia in 1949/50 on a UNESCO fellowship. Ray had then visited in a long, narrow boat (40' long and 3' wide) Inle Lake, remarkable for the people who lived on and around it. The villages were nearly all built on stilts along the water’s edge. Some of the houses were silk factories; others were bag factories. All the transport was by water. Ray finished by mentioning some of the classical recordings he and Jenny had acquired. The frantic work of December – March had settled into a peaceful off-season period of meditation until the next batch of Colombo students were due to leave. The trip to the Shan States had relieved the boredom in no uncertain manner!⁸⁶

We had written to Charles Ackers telling him of our activities and asked

84 Letter, E. W. Gray to John Lawrence, 5/1/59.

85 Letter, Ray Greet to Trish and John Lawrence, 12/12/58.

86 Letter, Ray Greet to Trish and John Lawrence, 23/5/59.

for news of his girls. He wrote on 30/1/59. They were growing up far too fast. He had taken Helen (10) and Torill (12) away from their school last summer and had found a far better, closer school for them in Cheltenham. They were going well and working hard, and he had every hope of them going to a school he had chosen for them in Malvern. His 'two steps', however, were a different matter. He saw nothing of Christine, the elder, who still hankered after being a doctor and yet could not get down to work at any of the 'ologies'. He hoped the younger, Evelyn, would grow out of her present 17-year old phase. She worried him 'with such a discontented expression too often'. He had been very lucky in getting hold of a really nice, wise secretary who was very fond of his two and was very interested in wanting to help Evelyn. 'It's a very big job I have been left by my wife who I miss – well I cannot say how much.'



David Lawrence



Trish and David



Trip to Snowy Mountains



Snowy Mountains Hydro Electric Authority - T.I. Power Station; Ron Gilbert tour organiser



SMHEA dam



Damming of Lake Ecumbene by SMHE



National Capital War Memorial and Houses of Parliament



David Lawrence



Our flat, McDonald Street, Harbord



View of Harbord - our Morris Minor in foreground



Trish and David - Harbord Beach



Christmas in the Bega flats

Chapter 3

Completing the Research Project

Family

My father took his annual holidays from the Commonwealth Bank in January, 1959. He and my mother stayed with us for a fortnight from the beginning of January. I took a complete break from my work while they were with us, and we all had a great time together. We showed them the sights of Canberra and its surroundings, they met our various Canberra friends, and we had a very happy family occasion with the Sutcliffes. The day after my parents left us, David practised going up and down the balcony step at the flat by himself, a skill my mother taught him. It was David's first encounter with his paternal grandparents since just after his birth, and although I had faithfully recorded his progress for them in my regular family letters, this was obviously a poor substitute for seeing first-hand his development. For us seeing a human being develop from birth had been a new, wonderful experience which we would have loved to have been able to share with them directly. My parents had, however, seen first-hand the development of Jim and Sheila's Richard and Christopher, who were still living in Adelaide – no doubt reminding them of their own sons' development in Mount Gambier in the early 1930s. I was especially privileged to be working at home so much in Canberra, for I had much more direct contact with David than would have been the case for most fathers.

My sister Marg was still living with my parents and giving them much pleasure. They could not have been more delighted at her academic success, her basketball blue, and her job at the university. Marg was now very friendly with Dean Southwood, a medical student, and they liked him and his parents. Dean's father was a psychiatrist, an uncle of our friend Dick Southwood. Trish and I enjoyed catching up with Adelaide news, but felt no desire to return there to live. My parents left us to stay with Unc and Auntie Mabel Butlin in Melbourne, unfortunately in the middle of a heat wave; my father for a week before returning to work in Adelaide, and my mother staying on for another week.

On Sunday, 18 January, the Wall family came from Sydney to stay with us until Thursday, 22 January, and we all fitted in the flat surprisingly well. Both Jean and Tim Wall liked Canberra very much and if a suitable job turned up

for Tim in Canberra, I would not have been surprised if he were to apply for it. They went to see the film 'The Bridge on the River Kwai' at Queanbeyan on Wednesday evening, and we saw it the next evening with the Haymans after having dinner at their home. (Margaret Evers was again our babysitter.)

Back to Work

After the break with my parents, I returned fresh to my work indexing material I had collected in Sydney, and pressing on with relevant reading, such as Gordon Hamilton's *Theory and Practice of Social Case Work*,¹ *Social Services in Australia* edited by W. G. K. Duncan,² and Elizabeth Macadam's *The Equipment of the Social Worker*.³ Macadam's book covered most of the major training issues which were still of worry to us. It dealt with the UK, but there was also some reference to the USA and Canada. Ida Cannon's *On the Social Frontier of Medicine* (Harvard University Press, Cambridge, 1952) provided an account of pioneering medical social service in the US.

Margaret Evers had lunch with us on Sunday, 25 January, and we all had a swim in the Canberra swimming pool. An enthusiastic Duncan Anderson dined with us the next day before visiting Ruth who had just produced their first child, Ingrid Erica.

On Tuesday, 27 January, I discussed my Sydney material and the current research situation with Bob Gollan, and he was satisfied. Next day, I had a long session with all of my supervisors, Bob Gollan, Professor Borrie and Bob Parker. I reported fairly fully on my Sydney efforts and we discussed the coming few months. They were in complete agreement with my tentative plans and Bob Gollan wrote a memorandum, approved by Professor Hancock. I would have a further fortnight in Sydney, we would stay in Melbourne for three months from the beginning of March, and then we would drive on to Adelaide and stay until mid-August.

Kathleen Woodroffe

Also on Tuesday, 27 January, I talked at length in Canberra with Kath Woodroffe from the History Department in Adelaide. She was writing a PhD thesis on the history of social work in the UK and the USA, from the COS onwards. Her work would be very much on the 'trends in ideas' level, whereas mine would be much more institutional and factual, and she was not touching Australia at all. She had collected her material while on study leave in the UK and the USA, and hoped the work would be complete in August. I anticipated her work would be an extremely useful background for my own

1 Published by Columbia University Press for the New York School of Social Work, 1940, second edition 1951.

2 Papers at the Australian Institute of Political Science conference in 1939 – 'The Nature and Purpose of Social Services', 'The Educational Services', 'The National Health Services', 'National Insurance', and 'An Appraisal of Results'. Only the last paper, by F. A. Bland, mentioned the need for trained personnel.

3 First published in 1925 by Allen and Unwin in London. She brought this up to date in 1945, with *The Social Servant in the Making*. These provided 'the only survey of the development of the movement for training for the social services' in Britain.

work. She shared with me the very helpful comments she had received on her thesis in a long letter from Charlotte Towle, a professor in the University of Chicago's Department of Social Service Administration.

Our friend Pauline Dick from Adelaide came to stay for three days on 28 January and Kath Woodroffe joined us for dinner and a most enjoyable evening on that day. Kath was excellent company. She had taught me at the University of Adelaide and her family owned the soft-drink factory I had worked for in the holidays in the early 1950s. On Thursday, 29 January, Bruce Kent also came to dinner. He was a new arrival in the History Department, a likeable Victorian Rhodes scholar who was in Magdalen when I was there. I went with Duncan to the hospital the next evening to see Ruth and their new daughter, and on 2 February, with Duncan, I drove them home from the hospital. Duncan was taking a fortnight's leave. On Sunday, 1 February, we went to the Tregenzas' with Kath Woodroffe. John was running behind time on his thesis and was juggling job applications, with Hobart and Newcastle two possibilities.

On Monday, 2 February, I had a further productive work discussion with Kath Woodroffe. She told me how to get access to the American National Conference of Social Work Proceedings and various journals in the part of the National Library housed in the Administration Building. We discussed my thesis outline – presentation would be a problem, there was danger of repetition, only a chronological account was to be avoided, and dealing with personalities would be a difficulty (nothing would be gained by muck-raking and also there was a danger of sounding patronising). Yet, I commented in the work diary, 'My work will lose its punch and validity if the difficulties connected with personalities are glossed over, or ignored, when they have directly affected the course of social work's development'. I discussed the difficulty over terminology. 'Social administration' sometimes meant social work, sometimes it meant running any socially-useful organisation, and sometimes it meant running an organisation providing essentially social work services. What was the focus of the training bodies?

Possible Action to Improve Social Work Salaries

On Tuesday, 3 February, I spent the afternoon with Alan Kellock, secretary of the Professional Officers Association (POA), and I would most likely be asked to give evidence before a classification committee. George Sutcliffe had rung and put me in touch with him. The social workers in the commonwealth government departments had just been admitted into the POA, largely on Professor Paton's insistence on their professional status, and there was a strong likelihood of the POA taking up their case with the Public Service Board – and this with Uncle George's benevolent approval! George Sutcliffe seemed a bit muddled, however, about medical social workers; he thought they were on a lower rung than the general social workers. I undertook to talk to him to clarify the situation. The social workers in the CDSS would be taken as a test case. It would have to be proven that they bore greater responsibility than do the physiotherapists, OTs etc. Social workers should not be grouped with

the medical 'ancillaries'. It would be a great advance if social workers could be separated from these in the eyes of the salary-setting bodies.

On Sunday, 8 February, I had a long satisfactory discussion with George Sutcliffe about the case for raising social work salaries in commonwealth government departments. He was convinced that full professional salaries should be asked for. His fellow commissioners (Keith Grainger and Sir William Dunk) were conservative. Specialist advice was needed. Get Lyra Taylor to make out a strong case (Canadian references would be useful) – differentiate the role of the social workers from that of 'medical ancillaries'; some 'lame ducks' would need to be carried but vision was necessary; and a statement on the productiveness of social work (saving to the community). Treasury had power in determining social services according to budget needs. The new head of CDSS, Goodes, came from Treasury and was ruthlessly economical, but you could sell an idea to him. Rowe was too easily over-ridden, did not have enough drive. Successful public servants were forceful.

Jim and Marjorie Houston baby-sat for us in the evening of Monday, 9 February, so that we could see a Danny Kaye film, 'Me and the Colonel'. Duncan and I saw an hilarious, spectacular cricket match on the Manuka Oval the next day – the PM's XI v. MCC. He and I had started playing our usual well-contested squash together after many months of relative inactivity, and we enjoyed the occasional game of back-yard cricket at the Andersons'. Our son David loved the crawling freedom offered by the lawns at the place they were occupying. Duncan and Ruth, now with Ingrid, would be moving into our flat as sub-tenants again when we left for Melbourne on 3 March – a very happy arrangement on both sides. Duncan's posting was certain to have come before our return from Adelaide in mid-August.

A very pleasant letter came from Mr Ernest Hyde on Wednesday, 11 February telling me that a trained person had been appointed to the Sydney Rotary Club to help with its 'social service work'. My memorandum seemed to have been of some help to him in getting the idea accepted, despite some opposition.

SYDNEY AGAIN

On Friday, 13 February, I went to Sydney by train to stay a fortnight working on AASW federal council material. Beth Ward, the AASW president, who shared a flat with a fellow almoner at Hampden Avenue, Cremorne, provided me with a bed in the sunroom. The flat was at the top of a block called Arcadia, and had a fine view across the harbour and beyond. The material I needed to work on was housed just across the Harbour at Pott's Point, so this was very convenient and became especially so when I was allowed to collect the minute books of federal council from Florence Ferguson and work on them at Beth's flat. Also, I did not want to impose on the Walls again.

I managed to get through the material I wanted to, and as well met and talked with some interesting people. Beth had some friends visiting on Saturday, 14 February (one had been an almoner at the children's hospital in Adelaide),

and we all went to the surf at Harbord. The next day we went with Margaret Grutzner to the surf at Dee Why. Margaret had recently been appointed lecturer in psychiatric social work at the University of Sydney. On Monday, 16 February, our Canberra friend Margaret Evers called in and had afternoon tea. She was attending a course preparing her to teach in New Guinea and was staying nearby. The course was going well and she was enjoying the company it provided. Beth invited her to have a meal with us on Friday, 20 February. On the evening of 16 February, I went with Beth Ward to a party at the University of Sydney for the new head of the Department of Social Work, Tom Brennan. The heads of all the main welfare organisations and departments of the city were there. Tom Brennan was a pleasant, pipe-smoking Yorkshireman. Morven Brown was at the party and told me my memorandum on the social work Rotary appointment became quite central in the discussion.

On Thursday, 19 February, I met Pam Jewett, an American Fulbright Scholar, attached to the Town Planning Department at the University of Sydney. She had a degree in sociology and had thought of going on to social work but turned to town planning instead. She was doing a study of why people lived where they did and was working with the Cumberland City Council. Town planning courses in Australia were shorter and thinner than in the US. She had observed the lack of sociological writing in Australia. By amazing coincidence, she knew of Jack Love who was a friend of her brother, and one of Pam's friends had married Guido Calabresi's brother.

Margaret Grutzner

Margaret Grutzner had been the first secretary of the AASW. Over an evening meal on Sunday, 22 February, she talked about a variety of topics – Jocelyn Hyslop who had gone into some religious order in South Africa; Jean Robertson who was still in Singapore; the conflict between Lyra Taylor and those who wanted the Australian Social Welfare Council to be a voluntary and not a government-dominated organisation; interstate differences in cohesion and conservatism; and the isolation of the University of Melbourne from the field and ill-feeling towards it. Margaret's father was a country doctor in Victoria. She had done a Melbourne University arts degree and social work qualification, and with the aid of Red Cross had completed the Mental Health course at LSE towards the end of the war.

On Monday, 23 February, I spent much of the morning with Kate Ogilvie, had lunch with Norma Parker, and spent from 2pm to 4.30pm chatting with Tom Brennan. Kate talked about social work evolving one method with the three aspects (case work, group work and community work). They were desperately short of students; so far only eight had enrolled in first year.

Tom Brennan

Tom Brennan told me his staff was somewhat under-employed at present, therefore they could do some research. He envisaged a sociological analysis of social administration in its many aspects (including social work) in the NSW community. It was highly doubtful people like Hicks (head of the Child

Welfare Department) had a philosophical position. The equivalent person in the UK would have and be able to discuss it. Mr Brennan commented on the dearth of sociological material in Australia. Did overseas findings apply here? Professor Trethowan was seemingly an 'expert' on many things. Tom Brennan was interested in my work and was willing to read the first draft.

To my family, I reported:

I like Tom Brennan a lot. He seems to be honest, frank, personally stable (wife and three boys must help!), with ideas, and pleasant and easy in his personal relationships. It was incredible how many of his ideas coincided with my own. Occasionally I thought I was listening to myself talking!

I returned to Canberra by train on Saturday, 28 February. David had grown a lot and now took about eight steps unaided. He was a bit uncertain about me at the station but by the time we got back to the flat he was wildly excited. Staying with Beth Ward in Sydney had proved most successful. She was a kind, good person whom I was glad to have the chance to begin to get to know. In the following years, she became one of our most valued friends and remains so more than fifty years later. In her retirement from heading the Social Work Department at the Royal North Shore Hospital, she married John Cliffe, the widower of one of her best friends. John had been a senior official in the Immigration Department and was a particularly likeable person.

In the afternoon of 28 February, we called on the Andersons, Sutcliffes and Tregenzas to say our farewells before being away from Canberra for five and half months. On Sunday evening, 1 March, we went to the Houstons' for dinner. An English couple (David was a botanist with CSIRO, and his wife was a teacher at Jim Houston's school), and an ANU philosophy student were also there. Afterwards we looked at coloured slides in our flat. David had some excellent shots of the flora and fauna at Heard Island. On Monday, 2 March, we sent two suitcases by goods train to our new Melbourne address, and I made arrangements for our trip away – with the bank, the University, the car registrar and so on. Duncan Anderson called in after work and we made our arrangements about the flat. It looked as if they would be in it almost the whole time we were away.

MELBOURNE, 3 MARCH - 31 MAY, 1959

14 Castella Street, East Ivanhoe

We left by car for Melbourne at 2am on Tuesday, 3 March. David was awake for a while, but managed to get off to sleep again on his mattress on the back seat. For much of the trip it rained quite heavily. We arrived at Anne and Murray Gordon's home in Balwyn in Melbourne at 3pm. In early February, we had asked Mr Berry who was going to stay with the Gordons, if he would mind taking replies to an advertisement we would be putting in the paper seeking a flat in the Balwyn area. On 13 February, we heard from him that there had only been one reply – from a man who had been teaching at Ivanhoe

Grammar School for twenty years and was going on a caravaning holiday with his family for precisely the period we would be in Melbourne. His place was in East Ivanhoe and Mr Berry thought it was ideal apart from its accessibility to transport. Since I would be able to leave Trish with the car whenever she wanted it and anyway would be working at home a lot, we said we would take it. The house was about 4 miles north of Anne and Murray Gordons' and was about 10km north-east of the city.

At 4.15pm on 3 March, we went through the inventory with the agent and then moved into what promised to be a very comfortable home. There was plenty of room, both inside and out – a garden and lawns, two bedrooms (a third one and a library were locked), a dining room and sitting room, and all modern conveniences. We were paying a rent of nine guineas a week. The interior was dark at first, but taking down some lace curtains helped. The shops were not far away and it seemed a prosperous, fairly recently developed area.

Geoff Sharp

On Wednesday, 4 March, I had lunch with Geoff Sharp, the acting head of the Department of Social Studies. Ruth Hoban's letter offering full cooperation in my project made him feel free to give access to departmental material, and he gave me minutes of the Board of Social Studies to work on at home. Although the local situation was difficult in many ways, he cooperated well with me. He felt he had been placed in an invidious position. Until recently all he wanted was to be left alone to pursue his own interest (social organisation with a leftist bias). His interest did not lie in social work; the department was convenient for him.

There was strife within the staff. Ruth Hoban had collected academic ornaments around her to upgrade her course, but had not been able to use their talents and they had become dissatisfied. She accused them of intrigue and being disloyal. An incompetent staff member, the groupwork lecturer, had stayed loyal and this caused further strife. A number of staff had resigned. Arthur Livingstone and Audrey Rennison had been blocked by Ruth Hoban when they applied for further positions. Livingstone was virtually exiled. Both had written to Geoff Sharp about this. The board, of late years, had become just a rubber stamp, but Ruth Hoban's relationship with the chairman (Professor Max Crawford) had been going for about ten years. Because of this she insisted upon referring on practically everything, and this annoyed her staff. The emphasis placed on rigid rules, such as no part-timers, deluded her into thinking this was keeping a high academic standard. Many of the supervisors attached to the university took on the airs and graces of university personnel, but did not have the knowledge to justify it.

Ruth Hoban was not history-minded. She had recently scrapped a lot of material. The filing system in the department was poor. There was no continuous analysis of students' backgrounds. Ruth Hoban was good in arguing and demolishing a case. She had a Methodist background and saw things in black and white. Geoff Sharp was a sociologist but according to Professor Oeser, sociology was just social psychology, a branch of psychology.

Laurie McBriar

In the late afternoon on Wednesday, 4 March, I had a long talk with Mrs Laurie McBriar, a social historian in the Department of Social Studies at the University of Melbourne. She had spent nine months at LSE. In her teaching, Australian material was just a bit tacked on about the development of charitable organisations, after the UK had been dealt with. She mentioned Young and Ashton's *British Social Work in the Nineteenth Century* (Routledge & Kegan Paul, London, 1956), but thought it was a 'dull, poor book'. I collected from her material of the Victorian Council for Social Training.

Until recently Laurie McBriar had kept out of social work wrangles. Now, however, because the department was so short-staffed she was drawn in. Geoff Sharp was in a terrible position. Ruth Hoban's contribution was to go all out for academic standing. The quality of students had markedly upgraded in Laurie's time; some were very good. An 18-year old girl was more mature than a boy of that age. The course must become a degree course eventually and the standard of supervision in the field was vital. Ruth was not really in the academic or the practical social work camps. The almoners were against her particularly; she should have kept them on side.

Married women were coming back into the field. In the early days, agencies were much concerned with single, rootless men. I should see Dorothy Bethune, who was 'a character'. She was still doing some work, was intelligent and talkative. Greig Smith was, however, somewhat dispirited and a dull personality, whom it was hard to get to talk. He had a 'we must have been mistaken' attitude. Jocelyn Hyslop was a mixed blessing – attractive, intelligent, erratic, a money cadger. Was she still in holy orders?

Lyra Taylor

On Friday, 6 March, I drove to the city to see Lyra Taylor at Central Office of CSSD. I told her of my conversations with George Sutcliffe about social work salaries. The case was out of her hands at present. The director-general, Mr Goodes, had been approaching each of the three commissioners about it.

Miss Taylor commented on a few other matters. Community activities were much stronger in Sydney and Adelaide than in Melbourne where people couldn't care less. In Australia there was a general reliance on government, yet government employees were treated like dirt by the average untravelled Australian man. Frank Rowe had had a great respect for social work and what it stood for, but had been a very sick man in his last three years. The present director-general was able. Miss Taylor had tried to work closely with the Immigration Department but gave it up. Two men, Brennan and Bettinson, now headed schools of social work in Australia. When she came to Australia, almoners were the only form of social work life and they had a close link with the medical profession. A national social welfare conference was a good thing but perhaps was not possible earlier.

Dorothy Sumner

Miss Taylor introduced me to Miss Dorothy Sumner who had just arrived from the New York School of Social Work to act as a social work consultant in the CSSD for four months. She had been on the staff at the Department of Social Studies at the University of Sydney immediately after the war. Lyra Taylor had given her my thesis outline. What would be the main focus? 'Social work' was used for a wider group in the USA. Her sociological friends at Columbia told her social structure studies were only recent in sociology. Many of the questions would have to stay as questions. Teaching material was not kept. Miss Sumner agreed when I said we were 'just scratching the surface in Australia'. There was still sex prejudice in the US although women were supposed to run things. She was willing to talk at greater length later.

Professor Boyce Gibson

On Friday, 13 March, I collected from the University of Melbourne large quantities of material of the Almoners' Association and the Almoners' Institute to work on at home. A fairly brief session with Professor Boyce Gibson on Monday, 16 March, was productive. He had been on the board of the social studies course at the University of Birmingham. I found him enlightened and intelligent.⁴ He had been chairman of the Victorian Council for Social Training for six years and had been central in the negotiations when the University of Melbourne absorbed the social work course in 1941. He was chairman of its Board of Social Studies from 1943 to 1947, and remained on the board until 1958.

The first director of the social work course in Melbourne, Miss Hyslop, who came to Melbourne in 1935, was controversial, but she had any amount of go and enterprise, was highly qualified, had high standards and was intolerant of incompetence. She had a big program for social work; was a grand planner. Yet she had a cutting tongue, trod on people's toes, and was unstable. Greig Smith was very good and took her well, acting as the bridge. She went into an Anglican order, and her health was not good. There was much more practical work in the social work course (than in the UK), and not the tremendous weight on psychiatric social work here. The approach was much more environmental in Australia.

Ruth Hoban was a scholar with an equable temperament. There had been an emphasis on academic standards when the course came into the university. It was better that the course was not post-graduate. Professor Boyce Gibson did not understand the rift between Ruth Hoban and the field. The almoners were the great difficulty. The industrial welfare courses had involved a lot of negotiating. Miss Robertson was intellectually brilliant. Ruth Hoban was highly regarded in the university.

In response to a specific question, Professor Gibson said the university members of the Board of Social Studies did not keep up with the social work

4 He was educated at the Universities of Melbourne and Oxford, he lectured at Glasgow, Oxford and Birmingham 1923–35, and succeeded to his father's chair of philosophy at Melbourne University in 1935.

literature. In 1939, there was definite hostility to professionalism in social work, but not now. He commented on the great 'casualty rate' amongst the students and in the social work field.

Eva Winter

On Wednesday, 18 March, we had Miss Eva Winter to dinner and spent the evening talking about the local medical social work scene. She was an almoner at the Royal Melbourne Hospital and was the current secretary of the Almoners' Association (Victorian Branch) – shortly to be incorporated into the AASW. I had known her in Adelaide and she had been helpful when I had visited Melbourne with one of my CSSD cases in 1957.

Eva made observations about student placement in hospitals, Miss Daw running the Children's Hospital, the latest salary rise but no upgrading of pioneering jobs, and the mixed fortunes of medical social work at the Ballarat Hospital. Eva had a great regard for Miss Bethune, who was regarded with respect by the medical social work group. She was very alert and sensible, and kept up with things.

Alison Mathew had a similar reputation to Kate Ogilvie's, but had faded out of the almoning picture. There had been a row with the University and the Melbourne Hospital. People were lusty for power. There was tension between the Alfred Hospital and the Melbourne Hospital. Social workers always accused almoners of thinking themselves superior. Almoners were a small group and personal factors were prominent. There was tension between Ruth Hoban at the University and the field generally. Almoners thought the school prejudiced students against medical social work, with the work in hospitals being short-term and mostly not real casework. Honoraries did not know what social workers do. A lot of people found Ruth Hoban difficult and intellectual, and many found her cold. Margaret Kelso was very intellectual, and expected very high standards, but was sarcastic and did not get on with doctors. She painted a terrifying picture of never getting the cooperation of doctors. Yet Eva said only the exception among the doctors did not think of patients as people. Younger doctors and general practitioners were using almoners more. Margaret Kelso had great trouble with Ruth Hoban; she did not get a clear definition of her job.

Eva had respect for Kate Ogilvie; she was the oracle. There was great deal of interstate rivalry, although people did not know much about the Sydney set-up. The group work lecturer at the University of Melbourne was ineffectual and students knew little about group work. The only way to specialise in it was in field work. Lorna Hay was responsible for lectures in psychiatric social work and some field work placements. She carried a few psychiatric cases at the Melbourne Hospital. Opinion was divided about Cynthia Turner. She lectured in criminology. Ray Brown had only been in the department for just over a year. He was well liked by the students – sensible and down to earth. Geoff Sharp, a sociologist, was rather vague, but he had started research projects in the department. Finally, Eva said the meetings of the Almoners' Association were poorly attended and badly chaired, but the executive was not lethargic.

On Thursday, 2 April, John and Diana Hopton came to dinner. John was an Anglican padre at the Alfred Hospital, and we had a long chat about how he might fit into the hospital set-up. He was finding it difficult to do anything much that was worthwhile. Much of the strife seemed to lie in a lack of a clear definition of function. He felt acutely how inadequately trained he was for the work. He felt greatest kinship with the Almoner Department, but even there he was not sure where he fitted.

Geoff Sharp Again

Geoff Sharp and his wife Nonie came to dinner on Tuesday, 7 April, and their four-months old Alan was stored away in a bedroom. After dinner Geoff covered many topics, and I found it very interesting talking with him.

Audrey Rennison was formally adequate but avoided hot issues, and was strongly self-protective. The literature of bureaucracy was relevant in understanding that boards tended to become rubber stamps, with a decline in faculty emphasis. A transition was occurring with more pushing for open viewpoints. Max Crawford was very influential on the professorial board.

There had been a rift between the department and the Victorian Council of Social Service (VCOSS). The National Council of Women, a body of high-status ladies, was a strong anti-body to VCOSS. Lyra Taylor and Ruth Hoban were at logger-heads over student supervision in CSSD. There were gaps in communication between social workers and the university yet the university would not set up appropriate machinery to rectify this. Alison Mathew (Player) and her husband were vocal critics of the university. A sociological framework for my work would see social work as an institution. Although sociologists were doing specific work, sociology was establishing a theoretical identity which was a concern for structure. Research on the nature of an occupation was not seen.

Social work was still a low prestige activity. Some in the Psychology Department slandered it. The professor told outstanding students they were wasting their time doing social work and the cream were skimmed off. Syd Lovibond and John Western were examples. Geoff Sharp thought professional psychologists were a mistake; what they did should be done by social workers.

I commented to the family, 'It's a pity there aren't more with his (sociological) interests about the place'.⁵ He was reputed to have considerable ability, but was apprehensive what might happen to him on Ruth Hoban's return.⁶ He might suffer the same fate as Arthur Livingstone who had earlier acted as head of the department while she was away. In the event, he did retain his appointment in the department, but he was accused of making decisions that encouraged communist activity in the department and the long-term academic acceptance of the course was shaken. *The Bulletin* inflamed the issue and the university was forced to hold an official inquiry into the allegations which were found to be baseless. The episode badly disrupted the work of

5 Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 9/4/59.

6 See p. 133.

the department in the early 1960s, and was to damage its work for at least a decade.⁷

Nan Bates

Nan Bates was our next work/dinner guest – on 9 April.

She thought older students were rigid except for Alma Hartshorn. Current students were good at analysis. She had been secretary for *Forum* for a number of years. When Arthur Livingstone was editor in 1952–53, it went broke; his ideas were too big for it. The most recent editor Lorna Hay has been more positive and vigorous, than those who had briefly come after Livingstone. Most of the material was solicited and was Victorian, although Dr Peyser had tried to maintain interest in NSW, and Hazel Smith had provided a little from Queensland. There was nothing from Tasmania and South Australia, and mostly news items from Western Australia. Some of the material submitted was quite unsuitable for publication. About half the material was rejected in its original form. Pressure of work was an obvious reason for the lack of writing, but some were reluctant to put their views in print and some of the more recently graduated social workers felt not encouraged to do so. There was too much space between publications for interest to be carried over. A paid secretary was needed. Until recently only articles were included, but professional news from the states had been added, although federal council did not approve.

Marion Urquhart was determined, long-winded, hot on principles, with strong conviction, but nervous. Alison Mathew was a good organiser; did not spare herself. Hamish Mathew's interest in the association was spasmodic; he was fairly rigid, had been a Presbyterian minister. Dorothy Bethune was a respected legend, medical social work was her abiding interest, she had unexpected humour, had a good intellectual background, had retired many times.

Lorna Hay

On Thursday, 16 April, I interviewed Lorna Hay, who taught psychiatric social work at the university and was the editor of *Forum*, the embryonic professional journal of the AASW, about to become the *Australian Journal of Social Work*.

There was any amount of stuff in Victoria for the publication, but people needed prodding. Spontaneous comment did not exist. Making the journal quarterly in the near future should help. She always preferred students older than those who had just left school, although there were of course exceptions. It was worth losing some students because of an older intake age. What was the social work profession? Were the points of contact within more significant than those without? There was a great gap between the psychotherapy end and manipulation almost on the political level at South Melbourne (Council). Social workers doing the former were closer to play therapists than to other members of the profession. The division of

7 R. John Lawrence, 'Australian Social Work: In Historical, International and Social Welfare Context', in Phillip J. Boas & Jim Crawley (eds), *Social Work in Australia: Responses to a Changing Context*, Australian International Press, Melbourne, 1976, p. 17.

function within a clinic was according to personalities and performance. You must not confine people within their function. Some psychiatrists were doing their own social work and claimed it was their job. Was it? What about the fruits of division of labour and specialist training?

The present course put a tremendous burden on students – a bit of everything. What was the core professional activity? Some were not suited to casework but were to other social work positions. The generic idea was usually related to setting, but was creeping in concerning method – casework, group work and community organisation being seen as examples of social work method. Many reasons existed for people not joining the professional association.

Beryl Thomas

Lyn and Beryl Thomas had dinner and spent the evening until lam with us on Friday, 17 April. Beryl was the able head almoner at the Alfred Hospital. She said the university department was prejudiced against medical social work – almoners should not be ancillaries to the medical profession. 'We are ancillaries in practice and this should be recognised.' In discussion, however, she indicated that frequently she was not an ancillary, but was making her own decisions in her area of competence. The medical superintendent and the lay superintendent were willing for almoners to change their name to 'medical social workers', but the hospital board said we have always had 'almoners' and that was that! The change must come eventually.

Country visiting for the Anti-Cancer Council had revealed a great deal of unmet need for a medical social work service. But if medical social workers were not available should you create a demand that could not be fulfilled? Recording was useful for diagnostic purposes, if for no other. There was some interchange amongst hospitals on the form used, but largely agencies tackled similar problems alone. The Melbourne school was turning out people who had to be carried for a year, but not so in Sydney. Within the agency, only a few in the group were contributing; others were not motivated to. A high proportion of medical social workers came from professional (often medical) families. The work was socially acceptable. Many viewed it as a useful fill-in until marriage, a good preparation for committee and other community activity later. Being a female group, the medical social work group had not been seen as a threat to medicine. The group had leant heavily on the benefit of being allied to doctors, who had a high status. Some of the medical arrogance and exclusiveness had rubbed off onto the medical social workers.

The National Council of Women had moved quick smart ahead of VCOSS who had been discussing family problems for ages and had set up a family agency. Beryl Thomas participated in a weekly television panel, with a congregational minister and a psychiatrist, referring on or handling queries from the community.

Lyra Taylor gave the impression of being eminently reasonable, but was a dangerous woman. She had fallen out with Ruth Hoban. It was difficult to get social workers to think widely. Beryl and Helen Clarke reported back fully on AASW federal council meetings, but found it was time-consuming and unproductive. The professor of surgery at her hospital was admirable. Medical social workers were asked to take part in the clinical teaching of third-year medical students.

People would not write for *Forum*; in the US, publication of articles counted when applying for positions.

Sir Alexander Carr-Saunders

On Tuesday, 21 April, I had an hour with Professor Sir Alexander Carr-Saunders in Professor Downing's room at the University of Melbourne. He was a visiting professor at the ANU, a very distinguished social scientist who had been the director of LSE 1937–55, following Beveridge. A joint author of a well-known British book on the professions, published in 1933, he wrote suggesting we might meet when he visited Melbourne for I was working on a subject which had much interest for him. At our meeting, he expressed a great amount of interest and regretted I would not be back in Canberra while he was there so that we could have further discussion. He seemed quite elderly, but in fact was only 73!

Len Tierney

On Monday, 27 April, I had lunch and spent half the afternoon talking with Len Tierney at the University. Len was director of the Citizens Welfare Service and lecturer in Social Work 111 in the Department of Social Studies. He was to become both a respected professional colleague and a friend in the years to come. This first contact with him was time well spent.

The COS had the only social work library. Greig Smith was important in Melbourne. His idea of social work was casework (essentially investigation). He was in the same job at COS from 1908 to 1957, this was a key position, he ran early training schemes, he always carried great weight, but was quiet and deferential, set a pattern of being a kindly gentleman. Pre-war notions of social work were those put out by Charles Loch (in UK). In Victoria, social work training was not seen as a need, and this was still the case in the child welfare field. Any number of able social workers in the field had got out, because the job was impossible in the Child Welfare Department. Psychologists were being used. Municipalities tended not to use trained social workers. The unmarried status of social workers was used as an excuse to hide differences in competence. Social workers did not have 'certainty of touch'.

VCOSS was not an active and effective body, unlike the National Council for Women, ex-service bodies, the Country Women's Association, and church organisations. In addition to Church of England orders, Presbyterian, Methodist, Salvation Army organisations, and the unsectarian Melbourne city mission, lady benevolent societies played a major part in the growth of welfare activities, and these societies were in constant touch with their members of parliament. 'I'm not paid' was seen as a strength. 'Social worker' was now understood in government circles. A seminar was being held next month on 'problem families'.

VCOSS was languishing until Geoff Sambell took over (he was its president 1956–58), but its future was still uncertain. Its impetus came from untrained people. David Scott was fighting for the use of trained social workers all over the place. Sambell and Scott were key figures in the Brotherhood of St Laurence. The

tie up with the Anglican church was stronger than was apparent.⁸

Social work lacked leadership and suffered from indifference and ignorance. People would not speak to each other; there were violent personal conflicts. The Brotherhood of St Laurence and Ruth Hoban were not on speaking terms, yet Sambell was outspoken and influential. There was no powerful association and policy was not being influenced by social workers. Whatmore, an ex school-teacher, wanted trained social workers but could not get them. They would only be performing administrative functions. State departments were empire building. Dr Lindell wanted sister welfare training to deal with social factors. Social workers had an inferiority complex; were overwhelmed by the seeming competence of other people.

Social work was one of the few professions judged as a whole. Older workers were under-equipped, over-burdened with problems, and lacked recognition. Social workers could not act as advisers; the untrained person hammered one thing. There was big opposition to social work recruitment in the education department. Ruth Hoban had a close personal relationship with various headmistresses in private schools.

Len Tierney had spent four years abroad and had been in the doctoral program at the New York School of Social Work. In studying political science, he became very interested in the work of the Webbs in public administration. He did the 'social studies' course 1946–47, at the University of Melbourne, at first not knowing about field work placements and was horrified when he found out he had to do home visits etc. He worked for three years in the old Family Welfare Bureau and then went to Columbia University Social Work School in New York, largely self-financed but also had a fellowship. He qualified as a psychiatric social worker and did a thesis on retirement programs. He was then going to do a PhD with Simey at Liverpool but it did not work out; he discovered Simey was not on speaking terms with any of his departmental staff, who were tied up on short-term appointments. He worked in preventive medicine at Leeds before returning to Melbourne in 1955 to work in the field and teach two classes a week in Social Work 111. There was a strong misunderstanding about US social work, by people who had not been there and whose basic training was so inadequate that they were not aware of the journals etc. 'They slide off into a pseudo-sociological approach'. Social work was talked about as an institution, but there was no real understanding of what went on. Those who had been abroad were overwhelmed by seeing competence and had relative respect, but tended to want to imitate. A lot had done shortened courses. There was no real understanding of community organisation and research, and casework was seen as an abstraction.

8 David Scott was a social welfare activist who was executive director of the Brotherhood of St Laurence 1969–80, and whom I got to know well when he was president of ACOSS 1972–78. He was a relative of Geoffrey Sambell who had played a major role in reshaping the brotherhood as director of its social services from 1949 and as executive director and deputy-chairman of its board from 1956. Sambell began employing trained social workers in 1953, which promoted cooperation with government welfare agencies. He was appointed an Anglican archdeacon (1955), bishop (1962) and archbishop (1969). He chaired the federal government's National Consultative Council on Social Welfare, 1976–80. Colin Holden, 'Sambell, Geoffrey Tremayne (1914–1980)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Vol. 16, Melbourne University Press, 2002.

Margaret Kelso

In the evening of 27 April, Margaret Kelso came for a meal and stayed late. She was lecturer in medical social work at the University. Field supervisors were insecure when only through a short time although the recent graduates were better trained. Supervisors needed to be better trained. They were examining students on different standards. Supervisors had to be matched with the supply of students. Supervision was a negative experience. Margaret Kelso had trained in Melbourne, gone to England in 1952 and worked in locums for three years, and returned at the end of 1956. After a locum at the Royal Melbourne Hospital, she had a joint appointment which did not work out, because it was difficult to control the hospital work-load. She was now working four days a week at the hospital, and doing university work on the other day, liaising with other hospitals, doing her own reading and lecturing. The fairly full program of visits of observation covered a wide variety, but had run into program difficulties. Students felt insecure about their professional status. There was tension between spreading a medical social work service or withdrawing it to give a better service to fewer cases. Definition of function was needed.

Cynthia Turner

I had lunch with Cynthia Turner, lecturer in criminology at the University of Melbourne, on Wednesday, 29 April. Her appointment was two-thirds in the criminology department and one third in social studies.

Whatmore had not been able to get professionally qualified males and now had a 'postgraduate' course for graduates. The penal department in the state department was mainly responsible for salary rises, yet they had a lot of untrained officers. Voluntary probation officers were still very much in the field. The value of citizens doing this worthwhile work spare-time was stressed. Recently in their news-sheet, Paul Tappan was strongly criticised for advocating training. There were plenty of jobs for qualified men in the state public service; the few qualified men that were in had shifted from job to job.

The National Council of Women was a very influential organisation, particularly with the present government. Two of its nominees were put on the parole board in spite of recommendations of VCOSS.

A lot of the tensions and gossip was due to the social workers being women. One woman was a trained probation officer attached to the Children's Court. The newspaper *Now* of the Brotherhood of St Laurence was a competitor of *Forum*, the social work professional journal.

Cynthia Turner had studied Greek and Latin in an arts degree at the University of Adelaide. She went to Canberra in the first group of permanent women graduates in the commonwealth civil service, worked in the Immigration Department, and then did the social studies course at the University of Melbourne. She became interested in criminology, and was offered a tutorship at the end of her course so had not worked as a social worker.

On Friday, 8 May, after a couple of weeks, I finished working on material in the 'dungeon' at the University beneath the office of the registrar, and was

glad it was over. I had been noting the minutes of the Board of Social Studies, 1940–58. I had still to get through noting the minutes of the Victorian branch of the AASW, 1935–58, and some other material before the end of the month, so was hard at it. I had not had time for any real exercise for weeks.

Kathleen Crisp

On Monday, 4 May, Kathleen Crisp came to dinner. She was to be Lyra Taylor's successor in the central office of CSSD.

English names like 'social studies' and 'social administration' were used in Australia, but the pattern was more American. Social administration referred to 'the administration of social services'. In social action, where do we put the pressure? Communication lines were non-existent. The most vital point of pressure was the political party groups. Good, well-documented articles by the AASW were useful. Voluntary agencies needed to understand the statutory framework. Many social workers were in the Australian Social Welfare Council, but they did not understand how statutory bodies worked; a direct approach was made to the minister. Mr Rowe the director-general of CSSD had not been able to get the cooperation of the state governments. Over the last three years, Lyra Taylor and Miss Crisp did not know what was happening. The ICSW was a non-government agency of the United Nations, and a member of its Economic and Social Commission. The AASW would not lend its support. There was distrust, almost jealousy. VCOSS was becoming a very limited pressure group. Now, the publication of the Brotherhood of St Laurence was bringing social action into disrepute. Archbishop Sambell confused functions, being both president of VCOSS and behind the Brotherhood.

Miss Taylor's personality would not appeal to everyone, but she had made a tremendous contribution to social work. She was thought to have influence with the director-general when she had none. Mr Rowe began to feel sure of himself in international social work. His personality changed three to five years ago. At the end of 1945, Miss Taylor had a lot of influence on Mr Rowe, and he had great influence in establishing the AASW. Miss Taylor gave a magnificent speech at the first AASW conference, but she began to get sour with the AASW when the next conference, in Melbourne, did not say what she wanted. Her library in CSSD and international contacts meant she was often the first with international social welfare news, which was distributed widely. Ruth Hoban had had a row with Lyra Taylor over student supervision in the department. The former was seen as not having practical experience.

Marion Urquhart

I collected Miss Marion Urquhart at the Maternal and Child Welfare Section of the state Health Department, on Wednesday, 6 May, and brought her home for dinner. She was very prominent in the early days of trained social work in Victoria⁹ and during the last war was director of rehabilitation for the Australian Red Cross. I drove her home to East Malvern at the end of the evening.

9 She was secretary of the Victorian social workers' association 1935–37, and 1941–43.

Miss Urquhart had been running girl guides in Richmond when she read an article by Miss McIntyre. She came in at 23 or so in about 1932, without yet having had a job. Most of the work in the early stages was doing practical jobs. Jocelyn Hyslop had a very English voice, was intelligent, very capable, on many committees, and did a great amount as president of the Social Workers' Association. She worried a great deal about her talks, had some difficulties with relationships, was cynical and had clashes. Men were not used to women with her intellect. She was a lonely sort of person. Later she was washing floors in places run by the Church of England sisters of the holy name. Jean Robertson from Scotland and Jocelyn Hyslop got on well together. She was a small intense person, worked tremendously hard; went from state to state on the industrial welfare courses.

Sir John Newman Morris was a person of tremendous vision. He had been a family doctor in the country. He was president of the Victorian Institute of Hospital Almoners, and of the Victoria Council of Social Training, and was federal chairman of Australian Red Cross from 1944. He was responsible for social work in Red Cross, an organisation with big names. Sir Owen Dixon was on the first rehabilitation committee of Red Cross. Miss Urquhart was asked to become the national director of rehabilitation for Red Cross, because of her rehabilitation work at the Crippled Children's Society, 1936–41. This was one of the many organisations Morris had been involved in. She resigned from Red Cross in 1950. Its rehabilitation work had been taken over by the army and CSSD. The university used Red Cross for family casework placements, but she had become isolated from casework practice because of her administrative responsibilities. Ruth Hoban was without practice experience. The present picture would have been different if Kit Jacobs and Helen Egglestone had remained on the university's staff. Both had left to be married.

Miss Macintyre was an outstanding person, with wide interests, was a tremendous character and had none of the personality difficulties of Jocelyn Hyslop. Miss Macintyre, Joan Brett and Helen Rees were outstanding people. Joan Brett was the 'least good'. She had agreed to come out to Australia for two years. She was engaged before she came. Her husband was in the police force in Malaya. Joan Brett was very attractive and able, made a contribution amongst the medical staff at the Melbourne Hospital, and helped with the Victorian Council for Social Training.

In her present position, at first Miss Urquhart received only agency referrals, but now about ten per cent came from infant welfare sisters. Dr Cunningham Dax 'kept down' psychiatric social workers in the mental hygiene department.

Alison Mathew (Player)

On Tuesday, 19 May, I had lunch and a long talk with Alison Mathew (Player). She had succeeded Dorothy Bethune in directing almoner training in Melbourne, was president of the Australian Association of Almoners, 1950–52, and was the second federal president of the AASW, 1953–59, following Norma Parker. I took on board her comments on various personalities, adding them to my accumulating data on key personalities in the Australian social work story.

Jocelyn Hyslop was brilliant and vivid, inspiring at her best, but highly variable and could get very depressed, feeling quite desperate. She was a very disturbed

person; had psychiatric treatment over a long period. She gained a lot of warmth of feeling and respect, but antagonised a lot of people. She was very ill, and had some sort of religious experience in a Church of England hospital. After becoming a novice in the House of Mercy, it was mutually decided it was not really for her. She had been quite scornful of religion and was sure it could play no part in social work. Jean Robertson in industrial welfare work was very petite, Scottish, and like quicksilver, with an alert mind, very keen wit, and high sense of responsibility. She was, however, a bit intolerant. Dorothy Bethune was 'a wonderful old soul', with intense devotion. For her, the medical profession, the Institute of Almoners and the Royal Melbourne Hospital were sacred. She developed a strong drive for power, but it was clothed. Her quiet, gentle, humorous, sedate manner gained her almost complete control. She developed a lot of high standards, had a complete devotion to the individual but had exaggerated respect for the medical profession. This retarded development on broader lines. She was against higher salaries and status. Community activity filled her with horror – the undesirability of personal advertisement. Two people were trained up for her mantle, but both married. Alison Player was approached when she was director of the Family Welfare Bureau in Sydney to be Bethune's successor in 1945. Bethune had thought medical social work was quite different from other social work.

Greig Smith was appointed the COS secretary in 1908, in his early 20s, and was still in that position. Businessmen, individuals, hospital administrators, and government departments regarded him as the person in Victoria who knew about social work, and he was endlessly used as a consultant. In the forefront of all the training movements – the almoners, the Victorian Council for Social Training and the University's Board of Social Studies – he always trained students and lectured at the University. He tried to get in trained social workers without displacing his fine untrained staff, but his schemes did not work out. Eventually both he and the agency were failing. Len Tierney was appointed director of social work and research to succeed Greig Smith, and untrained workers were helped to get jobs elsewhere. Greig Smith was most unusually generous in spirit, had a delightful sense of humour, had sound judicious common-sense, and was modest and humble about himself. He was in all sorts of developments, was the father of social work and social workers, and was most unself-seeking. He recognised that he was working with different methods.

Betty Govan in Sydney was sound, strong, and devoted, and developed the school there as well as possible. Professor Stout was much liked and respected. Professor Crawford in Melbourne had given a tremendous amount of time and work to the Board of Social Studies. He was much influenced by Ruth Hoban, who was very able and had done a lot in the community. She was demanding an increasingly high academic standard. People were not happy working with her. She was a highly defended person with rigid defences. She was the daughter of a leading Methodist clergyman who had developed social services in the church. Ruth's mother was badly crippled, and although they had a house-keeper, she bore the burden until her mother died. Ruth's rift with the field was long-standing. In her speech, she spoke of 'you' and 'we'. The majority in the field thought she did not really understand what social work was. Amy Wheaton had breadth and warmth in her early days. She had a wide interest in the community as a whole.

At her best, she had done a lot. Kate Ogilvie was a vigorous personality. The majority thought no-one in the world was like Kate; she was bigger in everything. She terrified some, but less so now.

Alison Mathew had tremendous admiration for Norma Parker. She had a fine mind, provided leadership, and had great drive. Every person was worth bothering about; had a great interest in lame ducks. Kate concentrated on students of better ability. Len Tierney had a real feeling for people. There was no-one to touch him in Australia – in skill, knowledge and vision. He had achieved a great many reforms; had real humility. Arthur Livingstone did a lot, was vigorous, broad-minded, and progressive. Finally, Miss Taylor had a mind not equalled by many women in this country, but had deep depressions at times. She was most impressive in many ways and Alison Mathew had tremendous admiration for her, but she was paranoid and power driven.

Helen Rees

On Monday, 25 May, I had a parting lunch at the university with Geoff Sharp and Margaret Kelso. I spent most of the day with Helen Rees, who had been directress of training for the Institute of Hospital Almoners in both New South Wales and Victoria.

Kate Ogilvie had the socially acceptable people on her side in Sydney. Fizzie did not, but was in with influential people. Professor Tasman Lovell was extraordinarily obtuse concerning Fizzie. According to the vice-chancellor, the University Board of Social Studies was in no way connected with the former board of social studies and training. Betty Govan was placed in an unenviable position. She did well, however. Dr Telfer was a source of strength at the Sydney Hospital, but it was Kate working through the Hospitals' Commission that was largely responsible for the setting up of the Institute of Hospital Almoners in New South Wales. Some of the Board of Social Studies and Training were good but learnt nothing from Fizzie.

Helen Rees had just been in Malaya, helping the government to introduce in-training for social welfare officers. Jean Robertson was at the University of Malaya. Helen Rees commented on a dreadful UN report on medical social work which was illogical and ill-informed, and confused social workers with health visitors. Often the biggest obstacles to the progress of medical social work were those doctors who took an active interest in their patients. She agreed, however, that other professions could also take on the overall comforting role of the doctor. All the doctor could hope to cope with were organic factors. There must be division of labour.

In social administration in the UK, the trend was towards degrees in social studies, undermining professional social work interest, but emphasising wider aspects of social administration. Social administrators (sociologists) were tending to take over as directors of social work training schools. This was the danger in Sydney. Helen Rees agreed with my analysis of the situation, saying it needed saying quite quickly. I argued social work and the study of social administration were distinctive and should not be confused.

Geoff Sharp had told Helen Rees that graduates with a short probation officers' course were being classified as social workers in the state public service, but there had been no really vigorous protest from the AASW. The authorities were

convinced, however, that the full social studies course was necessary, and cadetships were to start soon. Helen Rees thought that the generic emphasis would be modified; particular settings had specific necessary professional knowledge. Perhaps Sydney would be in advance through being behind. They will have missed a phase of development.

Titmuss at the LSE was very worried about the child care course and other social work training matters. In the UK there were not enough trained social workers to go round, therefore case aids were being contemplated. But how would they be used; would they be under social work supervision? Fortunately human beings were resilient. There was a tremendous dearth of male practitioners. Recently in the UK the job of secretary of the FWA was a wonderful opportunity, but eventually a not very able but very nice male was appointed.

Jocelyn Hyslop was antagonistic to almoners right from the start. Perhaps she was right that almoners wrongfully thought themselves superior to other social work groups. Miss Rees thought the usefulness of history was enormous. There was reliance on the memories of individuals that something was thrashed out at a certain time and a certain decision was reached. She had thought of writing a history of the almoners in the UK.

A Successful Visit

When we drove to Adelaide on Sunday, 31 May, I still had about a week's work of noting minutes of the Victorian Institute of Almoners, but otherwise had achieved a reasonable cover of data to write about the history of professional social work in Victoria. In November, 1958, when I was collecting data in Sydney, Dr Gollan had written that he had had a talk with the social studies people in Melbourne about my needs there.

They were a little worried that you might be going to "muck-rake" – apparently there is plenty of sediment. However, I think I left them happy about you. But they did say it would be helpful in dealing with their committee if the Sydney attitude ... was brought to their notice.¹⁰

In the event, I did experience considerable help and cooperation in Melbourne, although clearly there were divisions and hostilities which would mean I had to handle the data particularly carefully. As already indicated, the Sydney story was also far from straight-forward. Perhaps this was not unusual for people trying to write contemporary history, or even any serious history of social affairs.

Family and Friends

During our time in Melbourne, we were in no way bereft of a social life, thanks to contacts with both family and friends.

Trish and David went to the Gordons on Friday, 6 March, to celebrate Penny's second birthday. David seemed to be getting on well with other children. The next day, the Gordons left their Susan with us while they went to

¹⁰ Letter, Robin Gollan to R.J. Lawrence, 24/11/58.

the Trade Fair. On Monday, 9 March, a holiday, we had trouble starting the car and the handbrake was jamming on. This made us miss the 'Moomba' parade on the television (Murray was commentating for the ABC). In the afternoon, Murray and I worked on the car and had a game of squash at Balwyn. On 11 March, John and Dympie Laurie came for a meal. They seemed much the same; it was good to have them living in Melbourne. John was having a run with the Old Melbournians.

On Friday, 13 March, the Gordons had lunch with us. The next day, Trish and Anne went to the Grammar Centenary Fair, meeting Helen Thwaites there. I worked at the Gordons' and in the evening we looked at television with them. (Basil Rathbone as Sherlock Holmes in 'The Hound of the Baskevilles'.) On Sunday, 15 March, we had a chat with Whimpy and Mary McLeod; they were on their way to Queenstown in Tasmania where Whimpy had a mining engineering job. It was a very pleasant surprise seeing them again. We had afternoon tea with Unc and Auntie Mabel Butlin, whom we always enjoyed visiting – they were good, generous people. Thanks to Billy Graham, their children Faye and Geoff were not there, nor was Faye's fiancée, Alan, whom they were very happy with. In the evening, Athol Lidgett visited us with one of his two current girlfriends. We met the other when he invited us to dinner at a private hotel, Myora, on Tuesday, 17 March, and they spent the evening with us in our home afterwards. We had left David asleep at Anne's and he did not wake when we brought him back home. The next evening, the Lauries showed us their excellent coloured slides of North America.

When Trish wrote to my mother for her birthday, she reported we were loving having a garden and also the house, and it was also lovely being near Anne and Murray. David and Penny had had two 'swims' in the pool. David loved pottering about in the garden and went up and down the steps at the back quite easily now.¹¹

On Sunday, 20 March, the Gordons' doctor could not find anything obviously wrong with David who was very miserable, and we were relieved when spots from German measles appeared on Tuesday. By Friday, he had fully recovered. The Mathews were unable to come to dinner at the last minute on Tuesday, 24 March, so Athol Lidgett and Elizabeth Hills came instead. I was enjoying the occasional game of squash with Athol, and he took us for an enjoyable drive down the coast to Port Leo with his other girl friend Judy. On Saturday afternoon, 28 March, we had a chat with Erica and Peter Reade at the Gordons'. My mother had sent with them from Adelaide an Easter parcel of crystallised fruit and things for David. On Easter Day, 29 March, I went to a local church at 8am and looked after David all day while Trish went to a party lunch and the christening of Anne and Murray's Susan.

On Saturday, 4 April, I shovelled earth from the Gordons' nature strip which they were going to plant with grass, and we went on to the Lauries' for a meal and the evening. John had rung me a couple of nights before very miserable. He had pulled a muscle at football training, just when he thought he was at last fit again. On Sunday, 5 April, our young medical social work friend Rosemary

¹¹ Letter, Trish Lawrence to Mother L, 20/3/59.

Nicholls came to dinner, and Anne Gordon and her children came for the afternoon. Rosemary had known the Berry girls in Adelaide.

The Hoptons invited us for a barbecue lunch on Saturday, 18 April. They lived at St Kilda in an old house set amongst magnificent trees and lawn. (Its previous occupants had been Beryl and Lynn Thomas.) The other guests were Anne and Murray Gordon and their two children, and Helen and Graham Polkinghorne and their two boys. All of us had known each other in Adelaide. The children had a great time particularly when they found a heap of fine dirt could be used as a sand pit. Tipping spoonfuls of the stuff into each others' hair seemed to be the favourite ploy. We drove on to Brighton where Rosemary Nicholls lived, with a dusty, blissfully happy child. At Nicky's he was bathed and fed prior to a dinner party she was having. I eventually managed to get him off to sleep, but a phone call woke him and we all had his quiet company until we came home early.

On Sunday, 19 April, David was completely at home with Auntie Truda and Uncle Les Butlin, when we went there for an excellent dinner. With them, we listened to a recording of 'The Messiah', with William Herbert as a soloist. In the evening, Anne babysat for us while we went to Eva Winter's for a meal and the evening. Eva shared the flat with Margaret Rendell, who was there with a pleasant friend Frank. So too were a very pregnant Rosemary Baker and her husband. The evening went with a swing and we were sorry when it ended. Janet Stonier and Anne with their respective children came for the afternoon on Wednesday, 22 April, while I was at the University working on some old records.

For my birthday, Friday, 24 April, the Gordon family came to dinner. Next evening, Johnny and Helen Thwaites joined us for dinner. They were both in good form, with Helen due to produce another child at the end of May. Johnny showed us interesting coloured slides taken in Canberra and Hobart. On Sunday, 26 April, Claire Stonier was christened in the Doncaster church, with an afternoon tea full of cream cakes with Janet and Ken Stonier afterwards. On Friday, 1 May, I lunched at the University with Brian Ellis, Professor Smart's prodigee whom we had got to know quite well when we were at Oxford. He was very contented in his job as lecturer in the philosophy of science. That evening the Thwaites had us to dinner; their new hi-fi radiogram was a delight to listen to.

On Saturday, 2 May, I went with Athol Lidgett to the Melbourne Cricket Ground to see Melbourne beat Collingwood in a really tough exciting game, watched by about 50,000 spectators. We spent the afternoon at the Lawsons' on Sunday, 3 May. Their daughter Leslie and her husband, a tutor at the Art Gallery were also there. David got on particularly well with Mr Lawson and this helped to make our visit a great success. We had met the Lawsons in Canberra at the Sutcliffes' home. They were distant relatives. On Saturday, 10 May, Rosemary Nicholls babysat for us and stayed the night to allow us to see 'My Fair Lady' with Anne and Murray Gordon followed by coffee in a city dive. The next day we watched the FA cup final at the Gordons' – it did not have the sustained excitement of a close, important Australian rules game.

ADELAIDE, 31 MAY - 17 AUGUST, 1959

During this period in Adelaide, we again lived at 13 East Terrace, Blackwood, in the Adelaide hills but not very far from my parents' home at Hawthorn, on the Adelaide plain. I think my mother was hoping we might stay with them, particularly for them to get to know David, but we decided I was likely to get more work done in our own place, and we could make sure that we spent time as much as was feasible with them and other members of our families. In the event, we thoroughly enjoyed our times with them all, both severally and at family get-togethers. It was our first chance to begin to get to know Dean Southwood, Marg's special friend, and Sheila and Jim's two boys, Richard and Christopher. It was a pity for David's sake the latter two did not live closer on a continuing basis.

On Wednesday, 3 June, I wrote to Dr Gollan reporting on my current situation. He was glad that I was satisfied with what I was getting done, but said not to report in detail – 'your job is make the most of your time on the documents'. O'Farrell and Tregenza had completed their theses and moved on, but Bowes had moved on with still some work to do.¹² I wrote also to Miss E. Williams, secretary of the WA branch of the AASW, requesting her to send me WA material while I was in Adelaide. I approached Pam Ringwood about access to the records of the SA branch of the AASW and the SA branch of the AAHA. I also saw Dr Ray Brown, now the director of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Adelaide, and he undertook to ask permission for me to have access to the Board of Social Studies material. In reply to my best wishes on his appointment, he said;

I am looking forward to Adelaide, and I hope we shall have something to offer Australian social welfare. Much the same can be said about your thesis. It is an important step forward, and one in which we can all feel vicarious pride. I am sure the Adelaide Department will give you all the help it can.¹³

On 9 June, Dr Brown reported that the chairman of the Board of Social Studies, on Mr Edgeloe's direction, had indicated access could not be granted. Mr Edgeloe was the University's registrar. I rang him and he changed his decision, provided information concerning personal details was ignored. On Wednesday, 10 June, Mr Edgeloe gave me access to the university copy of the board minutes and also to a box of material of the SA Board of Social Study and Training. Miss Ella Webb, president of the SA branch of the AASW, reported I had permission to have access to its records. I collected these from the Red Cross, and Helen James's room in the Department of Social Studies at the university.

Trying to Improve the AASW Membership Records

On 26 June, I wrote to Florence Ferguson,¹⁴ federal secretary of the AASW. She

12 Letter, Robin Gollan to John Lawrence, 5/6/59.

13 Letter, Ray Brown to John Lawrence, 6/10/58.

14 See p. 111.

had invited my comments on a proposed membership card for the association.

It is essential for well-informed development of professional social work in Australia that the Association should have at its finger-tips, both at federal and branch level, accurate, detailed information concerning its membership. Your card is a welcome move towards this. At present there appears to exist a somewhat chaotic situation, with no standardised procedures of record keeping ... a state of affairs which ... is undesirable and makes for inefficient running of the Association's business.

I then suggested in some detail a scheme of two over-lapping and complementary records, a card and a larger sheet, kept on each member with copies held by the federal secretary and the relevant branch secretary. When the data was complete in each year, someone like Mary McLelland should be called in to do a statistical analysis of it and this should be published in the following issue of the professional journal. Such a yearly publication indicating the nature of the professional body would be of inestimable value to all who were interested in the overall development of the profession.

I would not have written at such length if I did not place great store upon the AASW and upon this aspect of its activities.¹⁵

The executive officers of the AASW were 'delighted and most appreciative' of my help, and my proposals, slightly cut were sent to all branch secretaries and federal council members for consideration.¹⁶

Ray Brown and his wife came to dinner on Monday, 6 July, a mainly social occasion. On the next day, I completed noting and classifying the minutes of the Board of Social Science/Studies at the University of Adelaide, 1942–1958, and began doing this for the minutes and other material of the Social Workers' Association in South Australia.

On July 22, I interviewed Professor Duncan, Syd Lovibond, and Joy MacLennan.

Professor W. G. K. Duncan

Professor Duncan had taught me political theory in my honours year at the University of Adelaide in 1953, and headed the Department of History and Political Science at that time. He was now the professor of political science heading a separate Department of Political Science.

Professor Duncan commented on the slowness of sociology catching on in Australia as a respectable discipline. He was convinced it was a genuine subject; perhaps the poorness of the universities in Australia had meant the exclusion of this sort of subject. He agreed with the suggestion that emphasis on an economic minimum had sidetracked people's attention away from genuine welfare problems – the strength of the Labor Party, etc. The real new need was for a higher educational level in the community and he mentioned the university extension classes¹⁷ – there

15 Letter, John Lawrence to Florence Ferguson, 26/6/59.

16 Letter, Florence Ferguson to John Lawrence, 10/7/59.

17 Professor Duncan had had extensive experience in adult education. See Vol. 1, p.88.

was a need for university activity to be closely related to community needs. Social work was a nebulous field, untidy and inchoate from a job point of view. Professor Bland would know about the difficulties with Miss Fitzpatrick in Sydney – the things that did not get into minutes.

Syd Lovibond

Syd Lovibond had done the two-year social work course at the University of Adelaide, 1947–48, and then went to Melbourne University to specialise in group work in 1949, where he said he was the first group work student under Alice Hyde. He did not stay in social work, however, but transferred his allegiance to psychology, where he had a notable career – a chair in psychology at UNSW, an honorary fellow and life member of the Australian Psychological Society, and a member of the Academy of Social Sciences in Australia (elected 1972).

He told me in the interview in July 1958, in social work you had the feeling you did not know what the hell you were doing. There was a lack of theoretical basis. In casework you could get by with commonsense, but not so much in group work. The existing books were not much use. Work at the Exhibition Youth Centre and at the Fisherman's Bend Community Centre was worthwhile, but what the hell were you doing? Mrs Wheaton said before he went to Melbourne, do your degree. (He had not matriculated.) He had an interest in social psychology, was interested in social welfare problems. In Britain in the air force, he became interested in community centres, and had organised local community centres in the Adelaide hills, which were still going.

Practitioners needed to write. As a student he did not know about human behaviour. The complicated mathematical models of group dynamics were almost irrelevant now. Social psychology was just coming to grips with the real problems – Asch's view in his book on social psychology. Social work was floundering; it must make use of relevant knowledge from other fields, e.g. psychology. In team activity, there was a definite hierarchy of psychiatrist, psychologist, and social worker. Clinical psychology usually lacked thorough knowledge. Taking over the psychiatrist's role, the psychologist was a second rate psychiatrist, and the social worker a third rate psychiatrist. Apart from this was their respective techniques. Was it necessarily so? They were rationalising what they would do on empirical grounds. Until psychology had a general behaviour field, good work could not be done; it must be thoroughly based in general behaviour.

Considerations of salary entered a bit. Personality factors played a part. Syd Lovibond had a tremendous respect for Amy Wheaton, although she deteriorated badly in the end. Her's was a very good course when he did it. Her social psychology was far more relevant than the existing social psychology course, and her sociology was also good; she related it to the social work lectures. Mrs Wheaton had no idea of putting a case on a committee. She was not a politician in the midst of a situation of power politics. She antagonised people and was very paranoid at the end.

Joy MacLennan

I had sent my thesis outline to Joy MacLennan, Helen James and Peg Norton in Adelaide.¹⁸ Joy MacLennan spoke of Stella Pines in the mid-1930s, who took the initiative to found a training body for social work in Adelaide.

She was a trained nursing sister of World War I, with a great interest in the practical aspects of social work, who established a mental hospitals auxiliary at Parkside Mental Hospital – a form of occupational therapy. (She had spent some years in North America, including a period in Ida Cannon's Social Service Department at the Massachusetts General Hospital.) She hoped to be the director of the new training body, but over-reached herself by being very direct and uncompromising and fell foul of academic people on the board. Amy Wheaton was written to by Professor Sir William Mitchell and other members of the board. She had all the new ideas. Professor McKellar Stewart, was very keen and made the training initiative respectable through his interest. He was the professor of philosophy, a Scot with an interest in psychology.

Amy's father had died when they were on the land and her mother brought up 5 or 6 children. Amy started in the medical school, but switched to arts and did an MA. She married before going to England, completed her BSc, with a major in sociology, at LSE, did settlement work and COS work, and went to Germany. Amy said they wrote and urged her to come. She put her whole life into it early on, starting at about 32 or 33 years of age. The venture began on a 'friendly family' basis. R.J. Coombe (the treasurer 1936–41) was a rather retiring quiet person. Dr Penny (the honorary secretary 1938–41) was more pugnacious and very keen. Joan Lupton was an aggressive person and pushed Amy; she was always dependent on someone. Amy's husband Ralph had good work prospects in Melbourne, they had a nice house in Toorak and help in the home. Ralph had submerged himself in Amy's ambitions. They lived in Strangways Terrace, then Kensington Gardens. Ralph was a figure in the background. Their three boys all attended St Peter's College.

Joy MacLennan believed that women were best suited to casework, among the areas of social work – community organisation, administration, group work and casework.

On 23 July, I received the annual reports, minutes and some other material from the Western Australian branch of the AASW, sent by Barbara Evans the branch president. I was very grateful that she and the secretary had managed to collect most of the material I had requested, but material on the state council of social service was still to come and there was very little material for me to keep. I returned the WA material on 10 August, having copied and classified it by hand – as I was forced to do with a great deal of my basic documentary material.

On 27 July, I wrote a report¹⁹ requested by my supervisor Bob Gollan, for a meeting on 30 July 'to review the state of the work of members of the department'.²⁰

18 See pp. 79–82.

19 Letter, John Lawrence to Bob Gollan, 27/7/59.

20 I included what would be covered by 17 August when we would be returning to Canberra from Adelaide.

The introduction in my report read:

The first formally trained social worker in the Australian community arrived from England in the late 1920s. This thesis on 'the development of professional social work in Australia' will cover the period from that date to 1958. It will define professionalism in social work in terms of an identifiable formal training and the developing of a common Australia-wide professional association with certain aims and achievements. The work is therefore primarily concerned with the history of those Australian institutions which have been established to implement the idea of professionalism in social work – i.e. the training bodies and the various professional associations which have become the one federal association. The story of individual social agencies (both government and non-government) employing social workers will be told only when it is relevant to the general theme of an emergent professionalism in social work expressed through the training organisations and the professional associations.

I detailed the organisations from which I had collected my material, and stated that all of the material had been placed in a framework which gave me ready access to it by state, by organisation, by date and by subject. Hardly any of the basic material had been available other than from the relevant organisation or from individuals who had been connected with the organisation. In many cases even the annual reports of the organisation had been very difficult to locate. Changing honorary executive officers and lack of historical awareness were two obvious reasons for the difficulty. However, most of the basic material was now in my hands in a fairly organised form. By some time in October, provided the Tasmanian and Queensland AASW branch secretaries were prompt in sending me their material, I should have all of the basic material in my possession. The next step would seem to be to draw up a detailed master-plan for the whole thesis, with very close reference to the material to hand. Finally would come the writing stage. Collecting all the existing basic material and over-all planning before doing any writing seemed to be the wisest way of tackling such a subject as this.

It has proved to be a fairly highly inter-related yet diffuse story, which could easily get out of hand in the telling unless it is kept under the strictest control.

On 29 July, at the University of Adelaide, I visited Dr Laurie Brown in the Psychology Department, and interviewed Miss Helen James, and Dr Ray Brown. I had first met Laurie when I was working as a social worker in CDSS.

Helen James

In a response to my thesis outline, Helen had suggested that I should cover something on 'our recent breakthrough into community development as distinct from community organisation', and had sent me her paper on the subject. She had thought my thesis was going to be a valuable contribution at this stage of our development. On the question of the role of women in the profession, she wrote that in her experience, there were plenty of examples where social workers had done a much better job when single than when married and

continued to work. 'Women place different values on their functions these days, since society has given them opportunities for development which did not exist in former times. Most of us remain single in the face of many opportunities of an alternative nature, and are therefore at peace with it.' I had responded to Helen that it was important to keep distinct, the existence and extent of the unfavourable attitude towards single women and whether the attitude was justified.²¹

In my interview on 29 July, Helen James mentioned community organisation books – by Murray Ross, by Campbell G. Murphy, and by Stroup. She also referred to Harley Trecher's *Group Process in Administration*, and *Concepts and Methods of Social Work* edited by Walter Friedlander, and UN publications on community development.

Social welfare organisations were mainly in the community organisation literature. In connection with the development of a national social welfare body, Mr Rowe (the director-general of CDSS) could have done much more to encourage voluntary participation. There were seven years of promises. He himself was content to call the national body. When the Australian Red Cross and the AASW asked him to give help with the national body and send people to represent Australia internationally, he made promises but did not act. Lyra Taylor and Kathleen Crisp were all for government leadership. The government was to be left to initiate the body if and when it chose. At the Madras International Conference (1954), Kathleen Crisp had assumed leadership of the Australian delegation, but the elected leader was Helen James not Kathleen. Now there is provision in the constitution of ASWC, a non-government body, for government representation, but if CDSS comes in most other government departments won't. As a representative of the state council of social service, Helen was keenly aware of the politics of establishing a social welfare umbrella body at the national level in Australia. The social welfare section of the library of the Australian Red Cross Society had been built up by Miss Urquhart, but the CDSS library (under the control of Lyra Taylor) had been allowed to take over.

Ray Brown

Ray Brown talked about the lack of opportunity for males in social work, pressures in the university and other impediments to the development of the profession.

Casework in voluntary agencies did not appeal to men. Little attention was paid to outcomes in community organisation. Helen James was interested in training community organisers. The biggest demand at present was for caseworkers, but the output did not even keep pace with deaths, trips overseas, and marriage. The intake of students was so small in other than Sydney and Melbourne, and resources were not enough, that there was no hope of all specialisations in casework, let alone in community organisation, administration, and group work. With the present intake, perhaps there could be two general main lines. Ruth Hoban had emphasised

21 Letter, Helen James to John Lawrence, 7/7/58. Letter, John Lawrence to Helen James, 27/7/58.

generic training. Tappan had asserted that ordinary casework training was not enough for probation officers. Running an institution was a highly-skilled job. In South Australia, the chief secretary wanted a third year in medical social work, and there was pressure for psychiatric social work. Ray identified a number of pulls or pressures – to improve academic standing (most professionals had a degree), to meet the requirements of vocational training, to specialise, the increased pressure on students (laboratory work in science subjects, the great reading in arts subjects, and practical work in vocational subjects). The pulls on students were tremendous. There was a need for a more integrated course.

In the evening of Wednesday, 29 July, I attended a meeting of the state branch of the AASW to hear Amy Wheaton talk about her UN job at Lahore.

Amy Wheaton

On 31 August, we had Amy to lunch at our home at Blackwood, and I spent a fascinating afternoon listening to her account of many of the things in which I had a great interest. I have already indicated, the role she had played in part of my own education, and clearly she was the key figure in the founding stages of social work education and professional social work in South Australia. She was a complex, extremely intelligent person with a searching wide-ranging mind, who was an Australian pioneer in recognising the importance of sociology as a social science. She had, however, failed to get the university recognition needed to establish social work as a degree-level education, and with some justification felt very badly treated. I wondered what my interview with her would produce.

Amy had recently returned from the USA, where she said social work had just re-discovered sociology. The New York School formerly used a psycho-analytic body of knowledge alone. She received the publications of the Council on Social Work Education, and it had switched right over to social science as a background, with social psychology and so on in the courses. Many schools had switched to educating multi-purpose social workers. Amy wanted this when she unsuccessfully asked for a group work teacher in the early 1950s.

Stella Pines was an Australian who trained as a nurse. She had been away for years in North America. She went to Brisbane after her time in Adelaide (where she had persuaded people to set up a social work course, but had not been appointed the founding director). She was a very unstable, paranoid person, for whom economics and other subjects were a hurdle. It was because of Stella Pines that Amy eventually accepted the job. J. T. Massey (chairman of the committee for studies of the SA Board of Social Study and Training) wrote to Amy, but she replied they should develop the agencies first. She had been away for 12 years or so from South Australia. When Amy met Helen Rees in London, Helen reminded her of her origins in South Australia and that she was a fourth-generation South Australian. Helen had met Stella Pines and urged Amy to take the job in Adelaide.

Amy had wanted to do medicine, but her father had died and she was the eldest of 6 children. She completed 18 full subjects at the University of Adelaide – including biology, botany, physiology, German, philology, English, history, social studies and languages. Because of her family situation, she taught in schools up to

leaving honours while doing her MA which she completed in 1923. She was fluent in German and for a time in French. At the beginning of 1925, she went to the UK and travelled quite widely on the continent. She had letters of support for her doctoral work from Sir William Mitchell, Sir Archibold Strong and Professor Tilley. In 1927, she entered LSE as a doctoral student, but experienced difficulties. Professor Hobhouse was old and Professor Ginsberg was overworked, and they were not interested in her subject 'Problems of Immigration'. (She was ahead of her time.) W. G. K. Duncan was in the same department and had the same experience as a doctoral student. He made a fuss and transferred to Professor Laski's department.

Eventually Amy took a degree majoring in sociology and social psychology. In addition, she did a certificate course in social studies at LSE run by Miss Eckhart. Social work was not called by that name at the time. Field work was mainly observation, quite unrelated to the course. Amy had covered the academic side on a much higher level. People from the field, e.g. club leader, probation officer, social service worker, and so on, gave special lectures. The American word 'client' was still not used much, though it was beginning to be. In 1931, she returned to Melbourne where her husband had a good job in a bank and they had three years there. In 1935 she went back to the LSE to get the 'new stuff' in its mental health course.

J. T. Massey, secretary of the YMCA, had a lot to do with the pioneering training body. He was a fine, intelligent man. In 1950, when general secretary of the YMCA, he was appointed coordinator of the commonwealth drive to accelerate the assimilation of migrants. Professor McKellar Stewart was a vice-president of the BSST 1936–41, and chairman of the board in 1942 when the university took over the course.²² Sir William Mitchell and McKellar Stewart got the course into the university. Amy had topped Mitchell's psychology course and when he heard originally that Amy was to have the job as director he had confidence in it.

In Sydney, Miss Fitzpatrick fell out with the almoners. The school there had a big grant from Carnegie. When she took students to America, she wangled her fare out of Carnegie money and this caused trouble. Fitzie was very intelligent, but it was used in her own interest. Difficulty occurred in 1950 when Fitzie misled ISS Geneva entirely about the ISS situation in Australia. Helen Rees was easier than Kate Ogilvie. Amy used to stay with Kate in Sydney. Kate said to Amy recently that from the age of 23, she was in charge of everything. There was tension between Kate and Norma Parker. In Adelaide, relationships had been good until the advent of vice-chancellor A. P. Rowe.

Amy knew Jocelyn Hyslop in Melbourne very well, better than she knew Fitzie. She was very able, but affectively unstable. Older more intelligent students who could think for themselves came into conflict with her. She evoked resistance etc. – from a psychoanalytic viewpoint this was perhaps desirable. She would have got this viewpoint from her mental health course at LSE under Miss Clement Brown who had trained in America. Kate used the English almoner pattern of supervision through fear, in contrast to the American pattern of supervision through emotional

22 He continued as chairman until 1953. In 1945–48, he served as the University's vice-chancellor. He was the son of a farmer from Scotland who settled in Victoria. He had a doctorate in philosophy from the University of Edinburgh. After teaching philosophy at the University of Melbourne, he came to a chair of philosophy at the University of Adelaide in 1923. J. J. C. Smart, 'Stewart, John McKellar (1878–1953)', *Australian Dictionary of Biography*, Vol. 12, Melbourne University Press, 1990.

dependence. When Kate, Helen and Amy were together, Kate was dominant but the atmosphere was happy. Jocelyn brought tension. Jocelyn almost died; she had an amazing spiritual revelation on the point of death and this changed her completely. This was an unstable period of her life; she was probably menopausal. She liked pretty things. Lovely clothes were perhaps an emotional outlet for her. She sought power over her students; wanted to create emotional dependence. If she could not get it then it was resistance. She was artistic. The nun's habit did not work for her. She was in some open order in South Africa working amongst natives. Jocelyn was the daughter of a clergyman and schoolmaster. She made a thorough switch from cynicism about religion. She had lost all her family except for her step-mother. Amy got on very well with Jocelyn but it needed tact.

Jean Robertson had intellectual ability, had personal vigour and was down-right, but she hurt people's feelings. Amy had tried to get her when some Red Cross money was available. Her Glasgow training was only about a year. She was perhaps too vigorous a person to get on with Ruth Hoban. She had done a good job when she went to Malaya. Betty Govan in Sydney was able and hard-working. Amy had stayed with her recently in Toronto where she was on the staff of the University of Toronto School of Social Work. Professor Stout in Sydney was alright, but Professor John Anderson was the difficulty there. Professor Boyce Gibson in Melbourne was fairly sensible; he appreciated the importance of values. Alison Player only taught the psychoanalytic theoretical system; she did not have a degree. She had fallen out with Ruth Hoban. Perhaps this would have happened anyway; Ruth could be a martinet.

Amy had no time to write anything, and it was the same for those few who had the ability to do so.

When A. P. Rowe arrived to be the vice-chancellor of the University of Adelaide in 1948, his predecessor Professor Mackellar Stewart was appointed his advisor for a year. Rowe humiliated and insulted Mackellar Stewart, 'a Christian gentleman', and Amy would not go near him after that. Amy was the first person to be attacked after Mackellar Stewart, who had told Rowe that Amy Wheaton was a person who got around the community a lot and was of good quality. Amongst other things, Rowe was against diploma courses. Amy's answer was make the social work course a degree. A 4-year undergraduate degree was in line with current overseas developments. Professor Peter Karmel and Professor Duncan asked why not have your own degree, but there was no understanding by a group of young academics, which included Professors Smart and Jefferson. A committee of the board responsible for the course was established to investigate the need for the course, but it took four years and Amy 'did not get a darned thing' - when she was trying to be at the spearhead of developments.

Amy mentioned Beryl Prince, Joy MacLennan, Helen James, Father Roberts and Peg Mengerson for their contributions to social work on the local scene, but 'most of the good ones were married and gone'.

Amy had given the first sociology course in Australia. Professor Elkin in Sydney used to give some under another guise. Her social psychology course was the first in any training course. Morven Brown's doctorate was in the education field not in sociology.

Women did pioneering work in the voluntary social services. Social work salaries

reflected the tradition of voluntary service. At first it looked as if the possibility of jobs was not there. Amy was told by the Crippled Children's Association, a girl could well afford not to be paid. Community organisation would have fitted far better in Australia than the American 'intensive casework pattern'.²³ Women's organisations were pioneering bodies, upgrading women. They provided an outlet for married women. As women get more status, they develop wider welfare interests. The male point of view had led to a lot of segregation of activities. All the attractive able women got married. Girls were attracted by medicine etc. but there were more able females than males in social work. There were a few able males, like Cyril Harris, but he did not push on to get a degree. In Japan, nearly all the trained social workers were men; and it was the same in Pakistan. Able, mature women were needed to cope in a male world. Lyra Taylor had had to cope with personal insulting jibes from people in the CDSS about her not being married. She had been engaged when young but lost her fiancée in WWI.

In the USA, practitioners were completely under-educated. In the UK, at the head of schools were academics, with tutors for the professional side. Amy suggested I write to the Council on Social Work Education in New York to get their publications. Growth and development courses now integrated all the relevant knowledge, and not just the psychoanalytic story. Amy's own biological knowledge was widening all the time from reading research journals and medical journals.

I asked Mrs Wheaton about the name of her department at the University of Adelaide – Department of Social Studies. She said 'social work' was not a satisfactory term. International action was needed to change it. There was great dissatisfaction with it in the US. No other profession used 'work' in its name. 'Social studies' was a wider term than 'social science' – it included philosophy and values material. It was best to use it until the vocational side was clearer. By then perhaps a new term would be available.

Peg Norton

On 5 August, I had discussions with Peg Norton and Judith Shaw, social work lecturers at the university. Peg Norton had decided to matriculate while in a secretarial job in the public service, and this opened the way to doing the social studies course at the University of Melbourne 1945–46, with almoner training in the third year. After working at the Royal Melbourne Hospital, she did a full-time year to complete her commerce degree in 1949, was a tutor for a year in commerce, and worked at the Prince Alfred Hospital in 1950. She heard about social studies from Jean Anderson, a country social worker with the Crippled Children's Society. Miss Hyslop was on her selection committee; it was Ruth Hoban's first year as director, but Peg did not get to know her well. She mentioned the rift between the field and training in Melbourne. Ruth had separating qualities. In the US, Peg Norton was a student at the University of Chicago and worked in the lower ranks of a large family casework agency (the United Charities of Chicago) concerned with efficiency considerations. Here, individuals were never called to account. In the US, members of the profession

23 She mentioned Professor Arthur Dunham's recent book on community organisation.

were in very strategically important jobs. 'Profession' emphasised a community context for the work.

Judith Shaw

Miss Judith Shaw was trained at the University of Natal in Durban, South Africa, and at McGill University, Montreal, in Canada. After two years in the Family Welfare Association in Canada, she had five years back home in the Social Services Association and ran the Council of Social Agencies, before having three years of teaching at the University of Natal. She was surprised by the absence in Australia of the social sciences – the lack of sociology and anthropology in the training, but was impressed by the amount of practical training people could fit in. In Natal there was academic decrying of the applied; a real balance was difficult. In South Africa, chairs and departments of sociology were in all universities. Australia was seen as a homogeneous society, its universities mainly influenced by Oxford and Cambridge. It was difficult to find out what this place was like. The impact of immigration on a society we knew nothing about? 'Shifting Heart' and the '17th Doll' pointed up enormous social problems. With only diplomas where were the research people to come from? Social workers as a group were outnumbered by board members of community agencies. Social workers in the field were overburdened.

I returned the WA material to Barbara Evans on August 10 – having completed noting and classifying the minutes of the AASW branch, and having had typed copies made of other material with the assistance of Mr Berry's office and our friend Mary McLeod. On Wednesday, 12 August, I talked with Vivian Salter at the Royal Adelaide Hospital and spoke to the Almoner Department social workers at the hospital. On Friday, 14 August, I had lunch with Margaret Ramsay and Pam Perrins, my former colleagues at CDSS. Pam had just returned from the UK. She commented on the greater sense of community spirit there and the many special groups.

We left for Canberra at 5.30am on Monday, 17 August. I was reasonably satisfied with my data collection on the visit, we had enjoyed seeing old friends and family again, and David had benefited from interacting with his cousins Richard and Christopher. After heavy fog in the Adelaide hills, we emerged into sunlight for the rest of the day. Our car was not performing well, however, and at Dimboola we had a burnt-out valve fixed, which delayed us for four hours. At 9pm in Bendigo, we were lucky to get a cancellation at the Shamrock Hotel. We left at 5.30am next morning, at Shepparton had to get a new tyre, and limped into Canberra at about 7.30pm with the car getting progressively slower. David was very tired of the trip by the time we arrived. On Wednesday, 19 August, we collected three cases we had sent by train and bought a pusher.

Flat 1, Forrest Flats, 14 Fitzroy Street, Forrest

Back in Canberra at our university Bega flat, we had a chance of getting a university flat like the Tregenzas' at Forrest – Trish was pregnant with our second child, and being on the third floor at Bega flats was rather restricting for David's development. We viewed the Forrest flat on Monday 24 August,

decided to take it and moved the same day. This would be our accommodation for the rest of our time in Canberra – my travelling to get data was done. The flat was on the ground floor of one of the two-storey buildings arranged around a courtyard. The road beside the flat led straight into the entrance of Manuka oval. Almost opposite were some squash courts, and opposite was Dr Evatt's house. The Manuka and Kingston shopping centres were quite handy. It was a great boon to have a room for my work, and there was plenty of room for visitors. John and Joyce Cooper lived a couple of flats along from us. They were very helpful, David enjoyed the company of their two boys, and we could babysit for each other. I had known John from football at the University of Adelaide.

Gareth Roberts

In the afternoon of Saturday, 29 August, Pam Jewett called in, accompanied by Gareth Roberts, an English architect/planner from Liverpool, who had joined the National Capital Development Commission in 1958. They had afternoon tea with us and David and I went for a drive with them to the Cotter Dam. When we farewelled Pam at the airport, David was fascinated to see a Fokker Friendship jet take off. Helen James and Roma Fry, who were in Canberra attending a meeting of the Australian Council of Social Service, came for dinner.

I played squash with Gareth in Canberra; we were evenly matched and I enjoyed his company. After the Development Commission, he was professor of architecture at the University of Queensland (1968–72), professor of architecture and dean of the Faculty of Architecture at UNSW (1972–84), and deputy vice-chancellor of Macquarie University (1984–88). It was he who persuaded me to take up bowls in 2008, but sadly he died suddenly in 2009.

The next day, David loved the freedom of the Sutcliffes' garden, resplendent with blossom, when we visited them in the afternoon. Relatives of Auntie Trice were there. Mal Lyon and his wife Robin came for the evening on Monday, 31 August, and Bruce Kent had a meal with us on Friday, 3 September. I had known Bruce at Magdalen; he had now joined the History Department as a PhD research scholar at the ANU. On 4 September, the Radfords, very good friends of my parents, called in for a brief visit before a dinner engagement. They were excited by the new Canberra they were seeing on their holiday. Later on Saturday, the Coopers and Joyce's parents, the McIlroys, came for a mutual slide evening. John Cooper's slides on Broken Hill were particularly interesting. On Sunday, after watching a poor football semi-final on the Manuka oval, I helped Mal Lyon plant a row of shrubs at his home at Yarralumla.

On Thursday, 10 September, I attended a fascinating lecture at the ANU by Professor C. P. Fitzpatrick on 'The origin of the chair in China'. I had lunch at University House with Bruce Kent, followed by a game of squash. Robin Lyon sat with us and watched Ainslie beat Manuka in the football on 12 September. Mal Lyon played for Ainslie. The next day I went to one of Bishop Arthur's last services at St John's. He was being transferred to Wagga and would be missed in Canberra. Bill and Vera Langshaw and their daughter Margaret came to midday dinner. In the evening, Ainslie and Betty Igue, who lived in

a flat on the other side of the courtyard, looked at some of our slides. Ainslie was on study leave from Edinburgh. He knew Graham Jeffries quite well. I occasionally baby-sat for them. On Monday, 14 September, Mal Lyon showed us and a couple from the German Embassy coloured slides taken when he was attached to the Australian Embassy in Bonn. I saw 'The Horse's Mouth' (Alec Guinness was superb) on Tuesday evening, and Trish saw it the next evening with a couple of other wives from the flats. On Thursday, I attended an ANU lecture on secret societies in post-war Japan and had another much-needed game of squash with Bruce Kent. David was in fine fettle. His current favourite phrase was 'All gone now'.

Trish enjoyed a university wife's luncheon on 24 September, but I did not particularly enjoy a lecture on archeological evidence concerning a certain period of Chinese history. In the evening, we saw 'Paris Holiday' at a drive-in theatre. David's vocabulary was rapidly expanding. He was revelling in his own small sand-pit – we had collected the sand from the Murrumbidgee in our rubbish tin and a couple of bags. On Sunday, 27 September, an Indian Herbert Samuel called in. Pam Jewett had given him our address. 'Sam' went from country to country auditing the accounts of the Indian embassy. We took him for a drive. On Thursday, 1 October, was the usual weekly lecture, followed by my game of squash with Bruce Kent. In the evening 'Sam' came for dinner and we looked at some slides afterwards; he was a keen photographer. Bill and Deidre Murphy joined us in the evening. Bill played in one of the football teams when I was at the University of Adelaide. He had just commenced a PhD research scholarship at the ANU. The Murphys lived in the same block of flats. Jane their daughter was just a little younger than David, and Deidre was producing another child at about the same time as Trish.

We saw an excellent film 'Room at the top' on Tuesday, 29 September. When I wrote to the family on 2 October, Jim was on his way to Chicago. I was delighted my parents had decided to go to Melbourne for Fay's wedding to Alan Morrison, and was sure the family in Melbourne would also be delighted. My mother sent me a cutting about the death of Mr Cameron, the exceptional school-master at St Peter's College, and had thoughtfully sent flowers from us, because both Jim and I were not in Adelaide to do it. I enjoyed particularly hard games of squash with Gareth Roberts on 3 and 9 October.

On Sunday, 4 October, we called in on Des and Felicity Moore, who were friends of Noel and Brian Stonier and whom we had met in England. Des had moved to Canberra to work in Treasury. They had a boy a little older than David. In the evening the Coopers had us and other friends for an enjoyable meal and evening. The next day, 'Sam' called with a friend from the Indian high commission office (possibly the high commissioner himself!), took moving film shots of David, and left some cans of beer. Bill Murphy and I went to see 'The Old Man and the Sea' on Wednesday, 7 October. Some of the photography was incredible.

Work

A loose end from the Adelaide visit was the minutes of the SA branch of the Australian Association of Hospital Almoners, which I had collected from Miss

Sullivan at the Adelaide Children's Hospital on 14 August. I managed to return these to her on 29 August from Canberra.

On 27 August, I wrote to Vera Raymer in Queensland and Dorothy Pearce in Tasmania, who were the secretaries in the respective state AASW branches, requesting their assistance in sending me minutes, annual reports, council of social service and other materials relevant for my research, with a promise to return the minutes and anything else requested after three weeks or so. I had decided it would not be possible to go to WA and these states, but needed data from them for my national study. Both Vera and Dorothy already knew about my historical project and were very willing to cooperate. I discovered, however, that Vera was no longer state secretary, and received a letter from Kathleen Gunnew. My letter had been discussed – they did not wish to let the minute books out of their possession, and both the establishment of the council of social service and of the school of social studies required local research. They were willing to send me copies of annual reports of the AASW branch, but urged me to come to Queensland to make a definitive study. I replied that I understood their viewpoint and would try to come to Brisbane to cover the necessary ground, but from the university's point of view it was not possible for me to come before some time next year. I requested they send me the annual reports in the meantime. The material I requested from Tasmania finally arrived on 16 November and I managed to return it on 24 November.

At a supervision session with Bob Gollan on Monday, 24 August, I learnt that there had been a change in departmental policy – greater supervision and more set lectures in the future. Bob Parker had suggested that I write a paper on what I meant by 'professional social work'. I was happy to do this in a couple of months' time. Bob Gollan said there were two main types of thesis – the departmental report, and the book which was readable and relied on appendices a great deal for imparting factual information. He much preferred the latter; he looked continually for the generalisation which elucidated a great variety of complicated events. With generalisations drawn from a great number of sources it was pedantic to cite them all – cite the main ones and indicate the remainder in general terms. The 100,000 word-limit was fairly strictly enforced.

In preparation for the suggested paper on social work as a profession, I read and noted R. D. Goodman's ANU PhD thesis, 'Teachers' Status in Australia' (420 pp) and the pioneering British 1933 book *Professions* (536 pp), by A. M. Carr-Saunders and P. A. Wilson. I then moved on to a variety of relevant books and articles – British and American, but none Australian. These included R. H. Tawney, *The Acquisitive Society*; T. H. Marshall's 'Recent History of Professionalism' (1939); MacIver's sections on occupational associations in his textbook on sociology; articles in the *American Sociological Review* (1955) on the nature of unionism among salaried professionals in industry by Bernard Goldstein, and on sociology and the practising professions by Donald Young; Ray Lewis and Angus Maude, *Professional People* (1952); Esther Lucile Brown, *Social Work as a Profession* (4th edition, 1942); and Philip Klein's chapter on the social theory of professional social work in *Contemporary Social Theory* (1940) edited by Barnes, Becker & Becker.

At a 20-minute session with the history department staff headed by Professor

Hancock, on Tuesday, 22 September, I discussed my work and undertook to complete the paper on professionalism and social work before the end of October. This should help me get my chapter headings clear in my thesis. That evening I attended a very interesting meeting of the sociology society in the senior common room at the Canberra University College. Dr George Zubrzycki spoke on methodological difficulties in a recent survey of migrant groups in the La Trobe Valley in Victoria.

On Friday, 16 October, I discussed my completed paper on professionalism (31 foolscap pages) with Bob Gollan. It met with his approval, and he undertook to get it typed and roneoed for a work-in-progress seminar. He agreed that the next few weeks should be spent going through the filing cabinet folders noting their content in general terms. A writing plan would follow this. The seminar discussion on 5 November was, I thought, poor, but both Gollan and Parker subsequently found my brief restatement on professions 'perfectly acceptable'.

Norman MacKenzie

I spent a very profitable afternoon with Norman MacKenzie on Friday, 13 November. He had been commissioned by the Australian Social Science Research Council to conduct a pioneering two-year survey of 'The role of women in public and professional life in Australia'. Norman, his wife Jeanne, and their two daughters, lived in the university Reid flats, and we got to know them quite well. We found we shared very similar values. In February 1960, I noted in my work diary:

Norman MacKenzie is a bit fed up with women and their organisations. His findings could be summarised as follows: "Women do suffer under disadvantages in public and professional life in Australia, but until other biological arrangements are made for the reproduction of the species, this state of affairs is likely to continue."²⁴

Norman's project was published in 1962, as *Women in Australia*. He had been assistant editor of the *New Statesman* for twenty years in the UK. In 1962, Professor Asa Briggs asked if he would be interested in the new University of Sussex,²⁵ and he was appointed lecturer in political sociology and later professor of political and social science, retiring in 1982. Jeanne's time in Australia also produced a book, *Australian Paradox*. In later years, they wrote and edited several biographies – of H. G. Wells, Charles Dickens, Beatrice Webb, and others. A book by Norman on *Dreams and Dreaming* in 1965 was said to be badly flawed because of its lack of referencing. These were lively and interesting people. I recall Norman telling me that Titmuss in the UK thought he and his social policy graduates could have more influence on social well-being than social workers. Norman himself had always had an academic interest and had originally intended to teach at LSE.

On 9 December, I flew to Sydney and stayed overnight with Beth Ward,

²⁴ John Lawrence, 'Work Diary', 4/2/60.

²⁵ Asa Briggs was its professor of history and dean of the School of Social Studies, and pro vice-chancellor, becoming the vice-chancellor 1967–76.

the federal president of the AASW. We discussed the future of the association. The next day a sub-committee of federal council discussed priorities in the program of the AASW, with four coopted people – Tom Brennan, Professor Morven Brown, Norma Parker, and myself. I had already started writing and had a first draft on Australian social services and social service work up to 1930. This met with Bob Gollan's approval on 11 December and I moved onto writing about antecedents abroad. Bob Parker read a draft of this just days before he left for an absence of a year! His replacement would be Dr George Zubrzycki. It was a relief to at last start writing after all of the data collection. I had spent almost the first two years in data collection and background reading. As I have indicated, thanks to the cooperation and generosity of many people I had learnt a great deal, but I now had to write a thesis, and make a coherent story out of my data, so that it could be seen as 'a contribution to knowledge' and not just to my personal enlightenment.

Brother Jim's Career

As indicated, our two and half months in Adelaide enabled us to catch up with the family there. The timing proved most fortunate with Jim and his family, for shortly afterwards they left for the USA. Jim had had a productive time as Barker Research Fellow, working on haematology research with Professor Robson in the Department of Medicine, and acting registrar at the Adelaide Hospital. He had visited us overnight in Canberra on 4 June, 1958, on his way home having successfully completed the clinical section in Sydney of his examination for membership of the Royal Australasian College of Physicians. Professor Bob Kark from the University of Illinois in Chicago visited Adelaide when Jim was already 'partly turned on' by kidney disease and Kark had reinforced this. The college of physicians awarded Jim a nationally-competitive Lilly travelling fellowship at the University of Illinois for 1959–61 to work with Kark. I wrote on 4 September, 1959:

It must be very satisfactory, Jim, to have arranged the work side with the man with whom you are going to be working, before you leave for the States. Professor Kark's English contacts should stand you in good stead, and he sounds to be the sort of man who will stimulate and test you to the full, and not allow you to pass unnoticed. ... Chicago may not be so attractive a place to live, but I'm sure it won't lack interest, and in any case the people you will meet and become friendly with will surely compensate for any ugliness in your physical surroundings. Good luck with the boys, Sheila, and with your domestic arrangements. It will be an unsettling and demanding period for you all but I'm certain it will be worth it long-term.²⁶

On 17 September, on the off-chance it might prove helpful, I called in at the US Embassy and collected some material to send to Jim, and they undertook to get their people in Sydney to send him direct additional material, particularly on Chicago and the US medical services.

Towards the end of 1959, my archives of family correspondence runs dry

²⁶ Letter, John Lawrence to Lawrence family, 4/9/58.

for a number of years, even though we did not stop writing to each other. I will therefore no longer be able to provide as much confident detail of our lives in this next period. The general outline, however, can be continued from other documentation and personal memories.

Overseas Correspondents

At the end of 1959, I wrote Christmas letters to: John and Joyce Orton, Leigh and Jill Wilson, Norman Blake, David and Margaret Stout, John Silvester, Jack Love, Ray Greet, Graham and Elizabeth Jeffries, Astra, and Herbert S. Samuel ('Sam').

Norman Blake

Norman Blake had completed his BLitt at Oxford, and had been teaching as an assistant lecturer at the University of Liverpool since October.

The University is very different from Oxford and there is much I don't like about it. There is little contact between the staff and students, who tend to look up too much at the lecturers. ... The students have to attend all lectures and they really have little time to think or to read any books. ... The department of English language consists of four ... but everyone seems to keep very much to himself so that I find there is very little intellectual stimulation or cross fertilisation. A rather large emphasis is put on research here to the detriment of teaching. ... I find the teaching (what there is of it) interesting, but by and large I am getting a bit dubious about spending the rest of my life in a provincial university here in England. We never seem to get the really good people, who no doubt are drained off by Oxford and Cambridge, but we do get a lot of very good second-bests.²⁷

For Christmas 1960, we sent a card and a photo of our two children to Norman. In his response, he said he was getting to like Liverpool more as time progressed. 'I think at first it was such a shock (no doubt a healthy one) after Oxford that it took me some time to acclimatise myself.' During the summer he had made the long-awaited journey to Iceland, where he stayed on a farm for six weeks. He worked on the farm in order to learn the language and enjoyed many new experiences such as sheepshearing and haymaking. Otherwise he spent a little time having a look round the country at their glaciers, volcanoes, geysers, etc. He was wondering where he could go this year which would not appear like an anti-climax; he did not think it would be Australia, unfortunately. He did not have much news of our contemporaries, but told us Guido Calabresi was getting married in May and might well come to Europe for his honeymoon. The letter finished with: 'Isn't it about time you made a visit to England to introduce your kids to the motherland'.²⁸

Sam had written warmly to us in October, 1958, saying 'The highlight of my visit in Canberra was meeting you both', and he urged us to keep in touch. After his current assignments he might either get a posting to London, or a desk job in Delhi.

²⁷ Letter, Norman Blake to John Lawrence, 10/12/59.

²⁸ Letter, Norman Blake to John and Trish Lawrence, 11/1/61.

Ray Greet

Ray Greet wrote on 4 January, 1960. Their two years in Rangoon would be finished on 23 September, and they hoped we might share the next Christmas with them back home in Canberra. Jenny was pregnant with their first child, due in August 6 months later than our second child. Ray was hoping she would produce a footballer to carry on with Manuka; he himself was under pressure from Jenny not to play in the 1961 season, and reluctantly he had agreed. While in Burma he had immensely enjoyed trips away from Rangoon on five occasions – to the Tanasserin coast (towards Thailand), to the Southern Shan States, to the Delta (a network of waterways and paddy fields), to Mandalay and across the Irrawaddy to Pagan (an ancient city of pagodas, some dating to the third century), and again to the Delta. He promised to show us his slides. Burma was a vast, rich country, largely underdeveloped and with widely differing features, which he briefly described. The politics in Burma were reaching another climax. On 6 February, the army would be handing things back to the politicians. U Nu was likely to win the general election but would have a pretty mediocre cabinet, and the army would continue to have a pretty strong say for the first few months. After that how firmly would parliamentary democracy have been established? The Burmese civil service was not too bad, but the moral scruples of the professional politicians were so well below par that the system would probably degenerate all over again. The same situations were paralleled in Laos, the Philippines, Thailand, etc.²⁹

Leigh Wilson

Leigh and Jill Wilson were in London in 1958, where Amanda was born towards the end of the year. Jill's mother was there for three months, while the baby was born and afterwards. Leigh was working as a registrar at the Edgware General Hospital until just after Christmas, and this was followed by a 10-week course at the Hammersmith Hospital. He sent a card for our David's first birthday on 2/2/59, just after a visit to Oxford where he was looking for possible work at the Radcliffe and had met Bob Porter who was about to sit for his last final exams.³⁰ Early in January, they had visited Dick and Debbie Southwood at Leamington. Dick had just passed his primary and seemed settled there, but Debbie was very lonely. They now had two sons. Jim Harris was at the same hospital as Dick.³¹

Our next news of the Wilsons was that they now had twin girls, Kym and Kirsty, born in London on 27 August, 1960, and I was delighted to be asked to be a godfather to Kym. They hoped to have them christened before leaving for the USA. Leigh was going to do further work in hypertension for 12 months at the Cleveland Clinic in Ohio. Jill's mother was again with them for the birth of the twins and was flying to Cleveland with them on her way home. My brother Jim had written to Leigh with a few hints about life in the US. Leigh

29 Letter, Ray Greet to John and Trish Lawrence, 21/2/60.

30 Card, Leigh, Jill and Amanda Wilson to David, John and Trish Lawrence, undated.

31 Letter, Leigh Wilson to John Lawrence and family, 10/1/59.

said, 'There is no doubt now they are leading the world in medicine and we are looking forward to living there and seeing Jim if possible'.³² In December, 1960, Leigh reported the Cleveland winter had come and they had had their first big snow fall. They were missing London already, although its winter was worse than Cleveland's. Jill had her hands full with the three children now and was going to be pleased to get home, travelling this time by ship. 'Kennedy land seems to be taking over very quietly even though the Clinic people still would rather not talk about it'.

Guido Calabresi wrote at the end of 1959:

It seems to be Christmas again – and a good time to say hello to old friends. I have spent this year working for Justice Black of the U.S. Supreme Court, which is really a great way to spend a year. Next year I expect I shall start teaching.³³

Another message at the end of 1959 from the US came from Graham Jeffries. He was still working at Cornell Hospital in New York, doing research with some teaching. Apartment living in New York City was getting a little restrictive for growing children, but they would probably manage to remain in the city until their David would have to go to school. There were no prospects of returning to New Zealand as yet. 'Please come and see us when you visit here! Where are you going when your thesis is completed?' Jack Love had just married in St Louis – to an Elizabeth. He was in a surgical residency in a hospital. Where was Duncan Anderson?³⁴

1960 – OUR FINAL YEAR IN CANBERRA

My research scholarship was extended for a final year to March, 1961. What then? During 1960, I had not only to write my thesis, but also to secure our next step as a family by finding a suitable job for 1961 which paid enough to keep a family of four (expanding to five in July 1961).

Our Second Son – Peter Michael Lawrence

In January, 3 weeks early, I took Trish to the Canberra Community Hospital for the birth of our second child, and my mother flew from Adelaide to stay with us. It was a false alarm. We thoroughly enjoyed my mother's visit and she, as usual, was a tremendous help with David, but eventually she had to return to Adelaide before our second child was born on 4 February. In the event, there were no complications with the birth, and the doctor did not get to the hospital in time to deliver the child. This time I was allowed to be present. Witnessing a human birth was incredible, and I was thrilled when the very experienced nurse who did the delivery handed our second son to me to hold and show the doctor when he did arrive. We called him Peter Michael. We were now a

32 Letter, Leigh Wilson to John and Trish Lawrence, 12/9/60.

33 Card, Guido Calabresi to John and Trish Lawrence, undated (December, 1959).

34 Card, Graham, Elizabeth, David and Peter Jeffries to John and Trish Lawrence, undated (December, 1959).

family of four. David was a lively two-year-old, who seemed to have survived reasonably well being the first child and the disruptions of living in Canberra, Sydney, Melbourne, Adelaide, and again Canberra. He now had a companion with whom to play, and made an impressive start in this direction when he offered Peter his favourite toy when he first saw him. As the second child, Peter's parenting was more confident than David's, and we did not monitor his development quite as closely as we had David's. Again, working at home in Canberra meant I had the privilege of being involved with the very early stages of Peter's life much more than fathers who were absent all day from the home.

Congenial Interesting Neighbours

Living in the University's Forrest flats was proving most successful. We were part of a very congenial, interesting group of people, many of them with young children like ourselves. Max and Peggy Neutze came to live in the flat above us and we became good friends. Max was a New Zealand Rhodes scholar who had been at University and Nuffield Colleges in Oxford and had just completed his DPhil. He had been appointed a lecturer in economics at the ANU. It was the start of a significant career at the ANU, culminating in his appointment as a deputy vice-chancellor in 1988, and director of the Institute of Advanced Studies in 1991. In 1967, he was senior fellow in charge of the Urban Research Unit of the Research School of Social Sciences, professorial fellow in 1974, professor in 1979, and in 1980 the director of the Research School of Social Sciences.³⁵ John and Kerry Lovering and children lived in a nearby flat. John was a research fellow in the Department of Geophysics at the ANU. His wife was also a geologist; her father was the Australian poet R. D. Fitzgerald. John had completed his PhD at Caltech in the USA, interacting with top-line scientists. When rocks were brought back from the moon in 1969, he was a principal investigator for the samples. He became professor of geology (1969–87) and head of the School of Earth Sciences (1975–87) at the University of Melbourne. From 1987–95, he was vice-chancellor and professor of geology at Flinders University in Adelaide.³⁶

Other flat-dwellers with whom we were friendly included the Murphys, the Coopers, the MacKenzies, the Reeves, and the Wettenhalls. Peter Reeves was researching Indian history and we enjoyed our conversations together. On 15 December, 1960, he wrote from Lahore:

Your work must be in the final stages now. I've missed out on my episodes! Did they ever really catch the villain? (Fitzie, I mean ...)

He enclosed a review of a book on the nursing profession,³⁷ in case I had missed it.

... it is a bit lonely over here. Rather soul destroying in fact. In short, interesting as

35 *Register of Rhodes Scholars 1903–1995*, Ralph Evans (ed), 'G. M. Neutze', p. 226.

36 For a full account of his career, see internet interview by Professor Robyn Williams, 20/7/10 – Australian Academy of Science: Interviews with Australian Scientist.

37 By Brian Abel-Smith, one of Titmuss's colleagues at the LSE.

it is, I'll be glad to get back. Both India and Pakistan are fascinating at the moment – in about the same lethal way that cobras are, or the compulsive that a street brawl is. ... The worst problem is still their relations with each other, especially (as I have found it) the pathological hatred of India by most Pakistanis. It will take a lot – certainly much more than a solution to Kashmir – to purge it I think.³⁸

Peter specialised in the modern political and socio-economic history of India. He subsequently taught at the Universities of Sussex, Western Australia, Michigan and Curtin where he was emeritus professor of south-east Asian history. He became a fellow of the academy of the humanities of Australia.

Roger Wettenhall was doing a doctorate in public administration and was long-term scholar in the area, eventually holding a chair at the University of Canberra. The Pappes were another couple in the flats. He was working on a monograph on J. S. Mill, later published as *John Stuart Mill and the Harriet Taylor Myth* (MUP, and Cambridge University Press). Norman MacKenzie talked to me about H. O. Pappes's interest in Mill. The university flats were a stimulating, satisfying environment, in which to work.

A Memorable Social Occasion

On 7 November, Trish and I attended a dinner of the Oxford Society at the Hotel Ainslee – Rex. The toast to Oxford University was proposed by Robert Menzies, the long-serving Australian prime minister,³⁹ and the reply was by Trish's former physics teacher, Professor Huxley, now the ANU vice-chancellor. We had heard the latter freeze in mid-sentence giving a vote of thanks to Professor Asa Briggs at an ANU public lecture and wondered how he would cope following Menzies who was renowned for his verbal skills. Speaking from notes, Huxley did well. We had known his son George when we were in Oxford. (Just before Professor Briggs left the ANU, I met him and he expressed regret that I had not discussed my PhD with him for he was interested in my topic. Unfortunately he had visited the ANU when I was away collecting data in the states. I am sure I would have benefited greatly from his extensive knowledge of British nineteenth century history.)

A Description of My Project

In February, 1960, a letter from Grace Myles, the organising secretary of the planning committee for the first national conference of social welfare in May, requested details of my research project and asked if a report on its progress might be suitable for a session devoted to Australia-wide research projects. I described the project as follows:

This study, which I hope will eventually be published in book form, is an attempt to meet what I think is an urgent need in Australia, not only for professional social work but also for social welfare in general. It should help professional social workers, interested citizens, related professions, and civil servants, to see Australian social

38 Letter, Peter Reeves to John and Patricia Lawrence, 15/12/60.

39 He was Australia's prime minister 1939–41 and 1949–66.

work in its peculiar historical, cultural and geographic context. There is a poverty of writing about all types of social services in Australia. This study concentrates on the development of an increasingly important aspect of them – the growth in them of a professional occupational group. (“Professional” here is used in its more significant sense, as when it is applied to occupational groups, such as medicine, law, architecture, and engineering.) It will open with an analysis of features found in recognised professions, and will close with an assessment of the extent to which the relevant features are evident in the professional group after thirty years of development – from the late 1920’s to 1958. It will be a record of the main people and organisations involved – of their achievements and their difficulties.

... The linked movements of education for social work, professionalism in social work, and co-ordination and rationalisation of social services will be examined.

Inevitably there will be many themes. All that can be hoped is that at least in a few areas the work will be definitive and for the rest suggestive enough to prompt further studies.

I wrote that I would welcome the opportunity to arouse interest in the project, but it would be undesirable to report on any actual findings at that stage. A report covering the general conception of the work, the kinds of questions being asked, sources, the difficulties of making it Australia-wide, the problems of writing contemporary history, and so on, might well prove of interest. I wished to attend the conference anyway, and enclosed my registration fee.⁴⁰

In March, 1960, my main supervisor Bob Gollan had his book *Radical and Working Class Politics: a Study of Eastern Australia, 1850–1910* published by the Melbourne University Press for the ANU. At a party to celebrate the occasion in a book shop at Green Square in Kingston, I can still recall Bob insisting there were observable patterns in history which the historian could reveal. I had developed considerable respect for his scholarship and integrity in the course of his conscientious supervision of my own work, and felt some collective pride in his achievement.

On 30 April, I received a letter from Mary McLelland asking for help on the use of ‘social work’ in Australia, for the introduction to the ACOSS report to the International Council for Social Welfare. I replied in seven pages of foolscap.

A Future Job?

Early in April, I wrote to the registrar of the University of Sydney asking for more details about a new advertised lectureship in social administration (closing date for entries, 21 May), for the position might be a very appropriate one for me to apply for. I also wrote to Tom Brennan asking him if there was any point in my applying; I would not be free for employment until the beginning of the next academic year, in 1961. ‘I am now thoroughly immersed in the writing stage of my work, and the problems of presentation are immense. It’s a pity you and others are not closer for me to consult.’⁴¹ Tom Brennan replied:

40 Letter, John Lawrence to Grace Myles, 12/2/60.

41 Letter, John Lawrence to Tom Brennan, 12/4/60.

The lectureship is being advertised now because I wanted to attract applications from Britain, and as you know, this is the only time of the year when it can be done. There will be no teaching in the subject until March 1961, and though it would be of advantage to the person concerned to have time for preparation, I personally would not mind if they could not start earlier than January. ...⁴²

Another letter I sent on 12 April was to Ruth Hoban.⁴³ I would be in Melbourne for the national social welfare conference beginning on 23 May, and was keen to discuss both my thesis and my employment future with her.

I would prefer, from the point of view of experience and personal development, to be either in Melbourne or Sydney, next move, but of course so much depends on what is offering at the time.

I told her I would seriously considering applying for the University of Sydney lectureship in social administration, if they meant by 'social administration' what I thought they did. I presumed it would be futile applying for the new advertised position of assistant director of social studies at the University of Melbourne (closing date for entries, 31 May) – I had not had 'extensive practical experience in professional social work', expected of an applicant. Was there any likelihood of a suitable vacancy in Ruth's department for next year, or alternatively in the community which would keep me in touch with the university? Finally, I mentioned that I had heard something of her joint long-term plans concerning work on the social conscience in Australia, and was keen to hear more about it.⁴⁴

Ruth Hoban suggested I might apply for both the Sydney and the Melbourne jobs.⁴⁵ This did not commit me in any way, and if I had second thoughts, I could always withdraw my application. If possible, they did want to appoint someone with a fair bit of practical experience, for they were keen to strengthen that side of the course, but at this stage she had little idea of what applicants would be offering. No other lectureships were vacant at present, but she would certainly let me know if one suddenly occurred. The Social Welfare bill was before the state parliament and would soon be through. A Department of Social Welfare would be set up and was likely to advertise some senior administrative and other social work posts, which might interest me, but, these developments would not come about for perhaps a few months yet. 'In any case, in the long run I would imagine it is a University post you should aim at'. She would very much like to see me and invited me to a meal at their flat in Camberwell, just before the national conference.⁴⁶

After Ruth Hoban's letter, I decided to apply for both the new assistant director position in Melbourne and the lectureship in social administration in Sydney – aware that the former was an unlikely possibility and had obvious

42 Letter, T. Brennan to John Lawrence, 22/4/60.

43 Letter, John Lawrence to Ruth Hoban, 12/4/60.

44 This was to be with her historian husband, Professor Max Crawford, who had sent some information about it to his brother Professor John Crawford at the ANU. Sadly, I do not think this promising ambitious project ever bore any published fruit.

45 Letter, Ruth Hoban to John Lawrence, 2/5/60.

46 Trish and our two children would be visiting Adelaide while I was in Melbourne.

problems, but it was preferable to have more than just the one possibility. The family's future was obviously at stake and not just mine. It was difficult to decide, because I did not know what else would be offering at the time, particularly in the field.

References and Testimonials

On 8 May, I wrote to Norma Parker, supervisor of professional training in the Sydney department, about the respective merits of the two possibilities, and asked if I could name her as one of my referees for the Melbourne job. Although she had had no experience of my actual professional practice, she did know something of me through our many discussions together and must have formed an opinion of my grasp of the social work field and its educational and professional problems. Perhaps, if she wished, she could compare notes with others like Kate (Ogilvie). Hers would be a most appropriate reference for the position, and no-one of any professional weight knew me better.

The Sydney lectureship would enable me to get together lecture material of long-term usefulness, it would keep me in very close touch with the community, and it would prove excellent preparation for a community organisation job if that were to be my subsequent move; further, I would thoroughly enjoy working closely with Norma Parker and others in Sydney. On the other hand, for the family, Melbourne would be preferable, for we had many more personal friends there, and it was much closer to Adelaide, and living would be easier if we were on the lower senior lecturer level. Apart from these considerations, the Melbourne position could be wonderfully extending and stimulating, and give me wide opportunities to help professional social work. The duties were vaguely stated, but they included some teaching, research in the field of social work or related fields, and sharing with the director responsibility for the department's administration. I was interested in all three kinds of activity. Again, I would have to make sure that I kept closely in touch with those in the field and the wider community. I did not know if I would emerge unscathed working so close to and under the general direction of Ruth Hoban, but that would be a chance I would have to take.⁴⁷

On 18 May, Norma Parker replied at some length. She was glad to act as a referee, but had been thinking quite a lot about me and the possibilities. As she was not going to be able to go to the national conference,⁴⁸ she was writing her thoughts for my consideration. She could understand very well the points of view expressed in my letter about the two posts, but all the same, found herself feeling strongly that I would be making a considerable mistake to go to Melbourne at this point.

The kind of contribution I could best make to the profession in Australia – one which needed to be made – was in social administration – in the kind of area Titmuss was working in Great Britain, helping to educate social workers to be able to take their part in social planning, development of social policy

⁴⁷ Letter, John Lawrence to Norma Parker, 8/5/60.

⁴⁸ She had another operation in the long vacation, and though she was now well, had to take the chance of a university break to rest.

and so on – working both on Commonwealth and state levels. My background was ideal for this and our job would be the best possible introduction.

If you are going to make the outstandingly good contribution which you should be able to make and do it in any other area, I honestly think you would have to go and put a lot more time into study and practice of whatever professional area you chose. There is a body of theory in each of the methods by this time and you can't really get it purely or simply by unaided effort and I'm sure you haven't got it sufficiently well from Adelaide. I hope you won't mind me saying this. I don't believe you can get it sufficiently well in Australia. I see a danger of diffusion all over the place in this Melbourne job and since I believe very firmly in your potential for a very good contribution to social work and I want it badly since the field needs it so much, as you are only too well aware, I feel I should put this to you.

... If you come to us, you would have a very big opportunity – firstly of working with Tom Brennan who is an excellent person to work with... and with the rest of us hard-headed female social workers who have between us an extensive professional background.

If you are aiming at the director's post in one of the schools, as you should, I think you would have more chance of one from our post where you would be writing and working with the professional field which is most closely allied with the academic, than you would have from assistant director in Melbourne. ... You would have a good chance of publication with us as we are about to realise the dream of years to bring out a journal – title not yet decided but it will be something like 'The Australian Journal of Social Issues'. It is not to be a narrow professional journal but one round the discussion of social problems.

... You would almost certainly not have to start at the beginning of the lecturer's range if you got our job. And you can apply for a senior lecturer's post after a few years. ... Generally about finance, while it would be hard to manage for a longer time on a smaller salary, it is possible that in the long run it would be worth it because you might get further this way.

I hope you can read this and that you won't mind my writing in these terms. I am thinking of you, I think, as much as of our department. I think your chances of getting our job would be very good – you never can tell for sure, of course. I don't know what your chances would be in Melbourne.

Finally, she drew my attention to the number of fine people who no longer had any contact with the Melbourne university department. She asked me to keep these comments to myself, but urged me to think long and hard before buying into the department.

Of course, it's alright with me, if you think these views of mine are haywire and decide to take no notice of them. But I feel better for having got them off my chest.⁴⁹

I thanked Norma for her 'thoughtful and helpful' letter.

I thoroughly endorse almost all you say – in fact, Trish said when I read your letter

⁴⁹ Letter, Norma Parker to John Lawrence, 16/5/60.

to her, 'that is exactly what you have been saying'. You have stated the case fully and I think fairly for the Sydney position, which of course includes the disadvantages of the Melbourne one. ... I prefer the Sydney position from a career point of view, though the practical and family disadvantages weigh on my mind a bit.

I felt I must still put in an application for the admittedly much more problematic Melbourne position, and thanked her for allowing me to name her as a referee under the circumstances.⁵⁰ My other referee for the Melbourne position was my main supervisor at the ANU, Dr Robin Gollan, senior fellow in the History Department.

I also had to provide testimonials for the Melbourne job. Colin Gordon at St Peter's College and T. S. R. Boase at Magdalen College had provided closed ones for me when I applied for the PhD scholarship: I now asked for open ones from them. In addition, I provided a copy of Harry Weldon's reference released to me by the ANU after his death.⁵¹

I had heard Colin Gordon was intending to retire as headmaster of St Peter's College at the end of the year and was going to write to him anyway. I took the opportunity to say:

Time cannot erase the memory of your strength and guidance at a crucial stage of my life. I find it difficult to think of the School under other leadership. To me, you – and Mr. Cameron – stood for the highest possible standards in education, and here I am using the term in its broadest, and perhaps only valid, sense. My warmest wishes go with you for the future.⁵²

Colin Gordon provided this testimonial:

Mr R. J. Lawrence has asked me to support his application for an appointment in the Department of Social Studies at Melbourne University, and I am glad to do so as I have known Mr Lawrence well for a number of years and have a very high opinion of him.

When he was at school he had an outstanding record, being a school prefect for his last two years and school captain in his last year. He held an extraordinary number of other senior positions in the school, including being captain of the first XVIII, an under-officer in the Cadet Unit, secretary of the Senior Literary Society, secretary of the Library Committee and assistant organist in the school Chapel. Despite this multiplicity of duties he somehow managed to carry them all out extremely satisfactorily, and this is typical of a devotion to his work which I am sure is still true of him.

After leaving school he went to Adelaide University where, in due course, he won a Rhodes Scholarship, and I have heard from friends of mine who are tutors in his College, that he did extremely well at Oxford.

I have seen him at fairly infrequent intervals since he returned to Australia and cannot speak with any authority about his standing in the field of Social Science, but I am quite certain from my conversations with him that he is extremely sincere in

50 Letter, John Lawrence to Norma Parker, 18/5/60.

51 See p. 32.

52 Letter, John Lawrence to Colin Gordon, 7/5/60.

his devotion to that particular field of work, and I have always found him extremely stimulating in the various conversations we have had.⁵³

In writing to Tom Boase, who was currently the vice-chancellor of Oxford University, as well as president of Magdalen College, I said:

Our Oxford days are getting distant in time only. We still, and always will I think, remember them clearly. Somehow they don't seem as susceptible to blurring as other past periods of our lives.⁵⁴

He quickly responded to my letter:

Here is the testimonial which I hope is the kind of thing you need. It was good to hear news of you and my best wishes to the latest arrival in your family. Trish must indeed have her hands full at the moment.

We are in the thick of term now, with schools coming very near for a lot of people. David (Worswick) and Ken (Tite) both seem very fit, and we are on the point of electing another tutor in economics, as the P.P.E. school continues to grow in numbers.⁵⁵

His testimonial read:

Mr R. J. Lawrence held a Rhodes Scholarship at Magdalen College, Oxford, from January 1954 to June 1956. He was placed in the second class of the final honour school of Philosophy, Politics and Economics in June 1956. There were undoubtedly first class elements in his work and throughout his period here he worked consistently well and intelligently. With the further period that he has had for research he should now be very competent and well qualified in social studies. He is a keen and energetic man, thoroughly responsible and with good powers of concentration. He played a considerable part in general College activities and makes easy and rapid contact with very varying types of men. We all had a high opinion of his ability and character and he would I am sure make a reliable and pleasant colleague.⁵⁶

Whatever the future held, it was gratifying to know that I had such positive general support from people whose judgements I greatly valued.

In my application for the Sydney job, I nominated Dr Gollan and Professor Morven Brown as my referees, and enclosed a copy of the reference which my senior tutor at Oxford T. D. Weldon had written for my research scholarship. Morven Brown was 'very happy to act as a referee' and was 'glad indeed to learn of the progress' of my thesis work. He now knew something of me and my work, and I thought a reference from him would be very appropriate for the subject I would be teaching (and Bob Gollan agreed).

53 From the Headmaster: St Peter's College: Adelaide – C. E. S. Gordon, 10/5/60.

54 Letter, John Lawrence to T. S. R. Boase, 7/5/60.

55 Letter, T. S. R. Boase to John Lawrence, 12/5/60.

56 From the President, Magdalen College, Oxford – T. S. R. Boase, 12/5/60.

Lectureship in Social Administration

The advertisement for the lectureship in social administration stated that applicants should have training and experience in the social science field, preferably economic history, with sociology or political science. The salary was within the range £1,500 to £2,100 per annum plus cost of living adjustments, and would be subject to deductions under the state superannuation act. Married men might be assisted by loans to purchase a house.

Information provided by the registrar was helpful. The Department of Social Work consisted of a director, a supervisor of professional training, four full-time lecturers and three tutors. In addition, it received help from teaching from other university departments, principally psychology and medicine.

The Department exists primarily to give professional education to men and women who wish to become social workers but its courses are open to other students who seek to broaden their understanding of social organisation and social problems. Recent changes in the University have made it possible to count some of the courses taught in the Department towards an Arts degree and at present about three quarters of the students in the Department are either Arts graduates or pursuing a combined course for both the Bachelor of Arts and the Diploma in Social Work. The Diploma course itself requires three years study: the combined course requires a minimum of four years.

The lecturer would be required to teach the third year course 'Social Theory and Policy', i. e. three hours of lectures per week during term; to share in the general work of the department, and to carry out research in the development of his subject, particularly in regard to the institutions in the social work field in Australia. A brief description of the lecture course as it stood was then provided. This covered: the development of social policy and methods of dealing with social problems in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries; comparative aspects of social policy and provisions; the application of sociological theories to the treatment of current social problems; and methods of social research and enquiry – a review of particular investigations.

Reasonable travelling expenses would be allowed to take up the position. In order to encourage research and to maintain teaching standards, one year's sabbatical leave might be granted every seven years of thereabouts. The university provided a travel grant in addition to full salary. Provisions existed for long service leave benefits. The successful applicant would be expected to begin work as early as possible.

In my application, I wrote:

One of my main reasons for undertaking the present study is to try and meet, at least partly, a need which I see as being wide-spread and urgent. My hope, therefore, is that the thesis will be accepted for publication in book form. Much of the material I have collected will not be included directly in the present general work, but I intend to use it in subsequent years for supplementary detailed studies, mostly in the form of articles

The current project is directly relevant to at least part of the lecture course, and indicates my general interest in changing social provisions, seen in their historical and cultural context. Further, it has confirmed my impression of the urgent

need for research into and writing on the nature of emerging social problems and provision in Australia.

On 22 June, the selection committee recommended my appointment to the position, but I did not hear officially until this had been approved by the professorial board and the senate which had to confirm the appointment and decide on the starting salary. Tom Brennan told me in advance the latter was almost certainly going to be £1,940 (third year). Finally, on 4 August, I wrote accepting the appointment feeling pleased and relieved that I seemed to have scored an appropriate next step for my career and for the family's immediate future. I had a good discussion on 22 August with Tom Brennan, who was staying at University House.

I wrote to Melbourne University, and to Ruth Hoban, on 22 July, withdrawing my application for the Melbourne position. Ruth Hoban thanked me for writing and felt sure I would enjoy working with such an enthusiastic group as Tom Brennan had there. At this stage, the Sydney lectureship would give me better opportunities than would an administrative job, with little time for teaching.⁵⁷ When writing to Ruth Hoban, I commented that I had just decided to recast what I had already written of my thesis into 'what I hope will be a rather more coherent form'.⁵⁸

Completing the Thesis

When we left Canberra for Sydney in January 1961, I had written 8 chapters of the thesis, and would be sending the remaining two in due course so that I could get critical comments on the whole from my supervisors, Bob Gollan and George Zubrycki, before submitting it for examination. George was away when we called in to say goodbye, but wrote with very best wishes for my career in university teaching and said how much he had enjoyed working with me over the last twelve months or so.

I think you are very fortunate in that your first teaching job is in Tom Brennan's Department. You will find him, I am sure, an outstanding Social Scientist and teacher and, above all, a good friend and colleague to work with.

George warned that it would be necessary to reduce the bulk of my work.⁵⁹ On 10 February, Bob Gollan wrote:

Glad to hear that you are settling in – particularly that things are so satisfactory on the home front. I'm sure that you will find that lecturing has many rewards. It's one thing that I miss greatly here.⁶⁰

Bob Parker also wrote with congratulations on getting the job in Sydney.

I trust you enjoy it and feel it is a worthwhile opportunity to help in your profession of social work.

57 Letter, Ruth Hoban to John Lawrence, 2/8/60.

58 Letter, John Lawrence to Ruth Hoban, 22/7/60.

59 Letter, George Zubrycki to John Lawrence, 10/2/61.

60 Letter, Bob Gollan to John Lawrence, 10/2/61.

He also enclosed a reference on measurement in case work, which he had brought back 'all the way from Manchester' where he got it in a seminar.⁶¹

In early September, 1961, I sent a final draft of the thesis for my supervisors to read. Both read it as if they were examiners and both concluded it needed substantial revision before submission. They were in agreement that it was too long and in places could be productively pruned, and there was insufficient social background provided to the story – it was in a social vacuum. A more detailed description of the actual social provision in the period 1930–1960 would help. Bob Gollan wrote at the end of his assessment:

In my attempt to be brief I haven't commented on the very substantial achievement that the thesis is. It's the result of an immense amount of work – so it must not be spoilt for the want of that extra bit of work.⁶²

He recognised I would not be able to submit on 10 December, my due date, but was prepared to support an extension as strongly as possible. I told him I would certainly do all I could to rectify the deficiencies in the thesis, and thanked him and George Zubrzycki for their careful comments. As soon as my lecture course and the examinations were behind me, I could give the revision my full attention, but not before. In November, I was told I had been given a 3-month extension. On 10 January, 1962, Bob Gollan wrote that he was just about to leave for England on a year's study leave. He apologised for 'leaving' me at this time but his trip had been long delayed. It meant he would not be able to read my revised version, so I would have to depend on George Zubrzycki.⁶³ I did not receive his letter until after he had left for study leave for we were in Adelaide. This was a trip I had decided we could not put off. At least Trish and the children could see a lot of grandparents and friends while I was working on the thesis revision.

On 9 March, 1962, I posted three bound copies of the thesis to the ANU registrar. It was a very much changed version. The text of many of the chapters had been cut by much more than 20%,⁶⁴ there was a fair amount of new material especially on social policy, and the order of some of the chapters had been switched – in fact, about three-quarters of the thesis had been completely re-written. On 12 March, I wrote to Bob Gollan thanking him for all the help he had given me as my supervisor.

The thesis was titled 'The Development of Professional Social Work in Australia'. The summary of the argument, required before the text of the thesis, read:

There are certain features which tend to be strong in the established professions – external and internal recognition of collective rights and duties, a generally acceptable common purpose, shared intellectual techniques, fundamental knowledge, an ethical code, and community service. Important in establishing and maintaining these features are training bodies and professional associations.

61 Letter, R. S. Parker to John Lawrence, 15/2/61.

62 Letter, Robin Gollan to John Lawrence. This also enclosed George Zubrzycki's report.

63 Letter, Robin Gollan to John Lawrence, 10/1/62.

64 Bob Gollan had thought a 20% over-all reduction was both possible and essential.

Within the upsurge of social provisions in modern industrial urban societies a characteristic has been the development of institutions to train some of the people involved in its administration, and the forming into professional groups of people so qualified. In Britain and the United States, this phase of development occurred earlier than in Australia, and their experience subsequently influenced Australian developments.

In the thirty year period from the late 1920s, a period which witnessed a depression, a war, and a post-war reconstruction, social provision in Australia was greatly extended. While this occurred, an Australian training movement was established, and the people who were trained by it became organised professionally.

Social work training began in the largest urban communities. It moved into the universities in the early 1940s. Medical social work, the only independent specialised training which was established, became absorbed within the university courses. The university training was largely generic in character. Preparation of students to work in a specialised field, when it was given at all, was additional to the generic training. Over the thirty year period changes in the curricula, the teachers, the teaching materials, and the students of the training bodies effected improvements in the professional education.

By 1960, social workers qualified by their professional education were employed in many fields of Australian social provision, but the development was limited and uneven, to a considerable extent because of the continued overwhelming preponderance of females. Questions of status, numbers, and sex were closely connected.

Parallel with the growth of the social work training movement, and the spread of qualified social workers in employment fields, was their movement towards more effective professional organisation. By 1960, they were banded together in the one general nation-wide professional association, the Australian Association of Social Workers. This also catered for specialist interests, including those of the medical social workers who were formerly in an independent nation association.

For the professional association to be fully effective it had a three-fold function – to provide educational opportunities for its members, to take action on their behalf on social issues, and to protect employment standards. Despite the generally weak administration of the professional association, there was some achievement on all three counts, although relatively the third function was under-developed.

After thirty odd years, this new occupational group was demonstrating in varying degrees of strength all the features which tend to be strong in the established professions.

18 appendices contained factual information about the training bodies and the professional associations. I was fortunate to be able to employ Val Lyle to type the 466 pages of the total thesis (the text was 419 pages). She was a reliable typist familiar with university work. Her husband was Jack Lyle, a senior lecturer in the Psychology Department at the University of Sydney. The Lyles lived in Balgowlah and Jack and I regularly gave each other lifts to the university and back.

My examiners were Professor Titmuss (LSE) and Professor Borrie (ANU), with Brian Abel Smith serving as an examiner in the event of disagreement between the other two. I was told by the ANU, my oral would not be for some

time because one of the examiners would be in the US until the end of May and would not have time to read the thesis until he returned. In July, both examiners sent in final reports to the registrar recommending the award of the PhD degree, after I had attended a fairly relaxed oral examination carried out by Professor Borrie in Canberra. He had comments and questions from Professor Titmuss. It would, however, be another two months before the relevant university committees had met, but George Zubrzycki took it upon himself to let me know immediately of the examiners' recommendation, 'for I know only too well from my own experience what it means to have to wait for so long'.⁶⁵

Finally, the registrar notified me on 16 October, 1962, that my admission to the degree of Doctor of Philosophy had been approved. Although the examiners' reports were confidential, they were willing for me to see the relevant comments if I wished to prepare the thesis for publication (which of course I did). David Jones Ltd. of Sydney were the usual suppliers of PhD robes. At the conferring of degrees in the Albert Hall on 21 March, 1963, the director of the Research School of Social Sciences, Professor Partridge, presented eight of us to the Chancellor Sir John Cockcroft for our doctoral degrees. At last I had completed my formal university education and it was entirely appropriate that my parents, as well as Trish, were in Canberra for the occasion. Altogether, I had spent nine and a half years at universities, plus the additional time completing my thesis when I was working at the University of Sydney, to get my academic qualifications. Who would have predicted this?

I still had to get the thesis converted into book form to complete the whole project. In 1965, the Australian National University press published *Professional Social Work in Australia*, a book of 241 pages, with just the one appendix, a bibliography, and an index. It concluded with a new chapter on inter-connected contemporary issues – the gender composition of the profession; the need for degree-level education; a greater variety of social work methods, additional to social case work; the very limited availability of the profession's services in the Australian community; better modes of organisation; and much greater numbers in the profession.⁶⁶ In 2016, the AASW's 70th anniversary, ANU Press republished this 1965 book in digital form, reflecting belated awareness of lack of serious historical work on the profession.

The whole project had obviously been a considerable challenge, but it had been made possible by the amount of goodwill and cooperation I had received. The only disappointment was how little serious comment the book elicited subsequently, and its manifest failure to stimulate further historical research into the profession. Only twice since have others asked for access to my extensive data collection for this early period. In 1979, Laurie O'Brien and Cynthia Turner did produce *Establishing Medical Social Work in Victoria* (Department of Social Studies, University of Melbourne), but without any help from my collected data. In 1996, Elspeth Browne produced *Tradition and Change: Hospital*

65 Letter, George Zubrzycki to John Lawrence, 24/7/62.

66 I already had discussed some of this in R. J. Lawrence, 'The Future Role and Development of Social Work in Australia', *Australian Journal of Social Work*, Vol. XV, No. 2, December 1962, pp. 1–7.

Social Work in NSW, at least partly assisted by my 'invaluable archive'.⁶⁷ In 2011, Jane Miller, president of the alumni association of social work graduates of the University of Melbourne spent a few days staying with us to study my files in preparation for her PhD on American influence on social work education in Melbourne 1920–60. This was successfully completed in 2015, and I appreciated the opportunity to give her considerable assistance along the way. Her historical interest had been aroused by realising how little had been written about Jocelyn Hyslop the first director of social work training in Melbourne.

The University of South Australia has had a project to collect material on social work history in that state, and recently I have been told about a joint-AASW and university historical social work project for which ARC funds were being sought. In 1976, I did write an introduction to the published proceedings of the 14th national conference of the AASW in which I brought up to date the historical story of the profession in Australia, but no-one has attempted anything of a general kind since. According to the editors, I was, without question the foremost authority on the history of Australian social work today. It was cold comfort, for I considered Australian society and the profession itself needed a considerable amount of continuing serious historical work by a substantial number of scholars for enlightenment and this was not yet forthcoming. What is obviously needed is for this to be an ongoing group enterprise for social work historians in the schools of social work, working in close collaboration with other historians, and with archivists to develop a national system for adequate social work historiography. Without such a system in place, assumptions and generalisations about professional social work in Australia cannot be confidently grounded.

⁶⁷ Elspeth Browne, *Tradition and Change: Hospital Social Work in NSW*, Sydney, Australian Association of Social Workers NSW Branch, 1996. This was commissioned after a 1995 celebration in Sydney of the centenary anniversary of the establishment by the Charity Organisation Society of hospital social work – at the Royal Free Hospital in London.



Family group, Sutcliffes' home, Canberra



Trish and David enjoying a joke



John and David – Heidelberg house



Lawrences – Jim, Christopher, Trish, Richard, Margaret, David, Grannie L, Grandpa L, and Sheila – Sussex Terrace home, Adelaide



Trish, Margaret Langshaw, David, Vera and Bill Langshaw – Molonglo River



RJL, David, and PDL - flags in front of Parliament House



David L, Jean & Norman MacKenzie and children
- Molonglo River



Trish and Peter



David, Trish and Peter - steps of Forrest flat



Peter L and Anne Gordon, godmother -
christening



Anne Gordon, David, Trish and
Peter - christening



David and John - Molonglo River



Peter in bassinette



Peter and John



Peter and John



Trish with David and Peter



Trish and John PhD graduation



RJL with his parents – ANU PhD graduation, Canberra, April 1963

Chapter 4

Living and Working in Sydney

In January, 1961, Trish (about three months pregnant) and I drove to Sydney with our two children, David (now almost 3 years old) and Peter (almost 1). Our first task was to find somewhere suitable to settle, at least for the next few years. My appointment to the lectureship at the University of Sydney fortunately gave me as a married man access to the staff housing loan scheme, and sale of our block of land in the Adelaide hills gave us a deposit for purchasing a house. We stayed with the Walls in Lindfield, well-located to look for a house on the northern side of the Harbour. John Cameron an architect friend of Trish's father and in partnership with Mr Laurie, Dean Berry's great friend in Sydney, was very willing to help with advice on any houses we were considering. One such house was in Gilda Avenue, Warrawee, not too far from the northern train line, but John wisely told us how much it would cost to do the work it needed and we did not have the money.

26 Dobroyd Road, Balgowlah Heights

After intensive searching in various possible areas, we decided on a newly-constructed house at 26, Dobroyd Road, Balgowlah Heights. This was to be our home for eight years, 1961–68, although we spent 1967 in the USA. The Dobroyd Point Headland was crown land being progressively released for new housing construction. Our particular house had been built for sale by George Gosbell, a Manly real estate agent who happened to be living in the next street. (George's brother had actually built the house.) John Cameron approved of our choice; although the house was not architecturally designed, it was reasonably built and should serve our needs as a young family.

The house was on a sloping block. It faced south looking up to houses on the higher side of the road. The base of the house was built of blond bricks, wide enough on the lower side for two north-facing rooms, although only one of these was fully lined and could be used as a guest bedroom. The other I could use as a study. Brick walls were at the western and eastern ends of the house. The upper floor built between the brick walls was a timber frame with white weather-board cladding. It consisted of three bedrooms, a bathroom, a kitchen,

and a large living area the depth of the house. The roof was terra cotta tiles. The upstairs was linked to downstairs by an external staircase from the kitchen, and we quickly had to put wire netting on the railing pipes of the staircase to make it safer for young children.

Under the living room was an open garage reached by a steep drive from the street. There was room to walk to the backyard on the western (Sonley) side of the house, but not on the eastern (Rose) side of the house. A short cement path led from the footpath of Dobroyd Road to a cement terrace in front of the front door. The front of the property had room for a small lawn and a few shrubs along the front fence. In the backyard Sydney sandstone shelves were prominent. We enjoyed planting native shrubs and a few trees on the property. Bamboo which we planted at the back in a planter box got away from us, and continued to defy elimination from the backyard lawn we planted. We equipped the backyard with a most successful climbing-bar set (A frames with a ladder, a bar, a slippery dip, and a bouncing board), a sand-pit, and very big wooden reel for thick electric cable that we found abandoned at Clontarf. On the wall of the garage, we installed a large cork board on which to draw and for pinning paintings.

The upstairs rooms on the north side of the house provided an extensive inland view of some of the beach-side Sydney suburbs which stretch for 30 miles north from Manly to Palm Beach. Our stay at Harbord had already given us a general fondness for the whole area. Within easy walking distance from our house was Tania Park at the top of Dobroyd Point. This had a children's playground and an oval. Dobroyd Scenic Drive which went around the park provided quite exceptional views. From one lookout could be seen Manly and the inner harbour; across to North Head, the open sea, South Head, and the harbour-side eastern suburbs of Sydney. From another lookout (later called the Captain Cook Panorama lookout) was a remarkable 360 degree view of Sydney, reaching in the south-west to the city. We never tired of showing visitors these views, or enjoying picnics in this area on the top of Dobroyd Point. Also as our children grew older and more adventurous, it provided an excellent rambling area for them in some native bushland. David still has a fond recollection of making cubbie houses, riding scooters on bush tracks, and climbing down a ladder at Grotto Point. We had warned them about snakes, but although they saw skins they saw only the one snake. With them was Kelvin Hutchinson and sometimes David and Ian Rose and other neighbourhood children.

On Middle Harbour adjacent to the south side of Dobroyd headland was Clontarf, looking across to the Spit Bridge which spanned Middle Harbour. Its beach included a netted area for swimming, to keep the swimmers apart from the many sharks living in the Harbour. David still has a keen memory of hearing about the fatal shark attack on a woman in shallow water at Clontarf outside the netted area in 1963. He also recalls exploring Middle Harbour in a tinnie with one of his school friends, Craig Gibbons. Clontarf was an attractive nearby-beach for us with a young family. As the family grew older, we regularly went to the surfing beaches at Manly and Queenscliff. Geoff Sonley, our neighbour on the west side, was a keen, very competent body surfer. Often he and I, and various other members of our families had a surf at these beaches,

and not only at the week-ends. The beaches were only a short car drive away from our homes. David recalls Trish's egg and bacon breakfasts after morning surfs which helped them to tackle the 20-minute walk to school.

Neighbours

Geoff Sonley and his wife Isobel became good friends. Geoff was a very fit, big and strong, fair-haired man. He had a German mother and an English father, and had been brought up in Melbourne, where he had attended Melbourne Church of England Grammar School. His work in Sydney was selling perfume oils and flavouring compounds for Firmenich, a Swiss company. A person of considerable energy and initiative, he was enjoying the life-style that Sydney offered. As well as being an excellent swimmer and surfer, he played competition squash, fitted out and sailed his own boat (a Hood 23) in Middle Harbour, and designed and built his own home in Dobroyd Road – while holding a full-time job. Laying concrete was a common pass-time in our new area, and Geoff had become very good at it, covering much of his property with coloured concrete to avoid too much gardening, he said! He led a group of us in 1966 to lay concrete for a new Anglican church hall to service the area. All Saints' Balgowlah held a service for the laying of a foundation stone for St James' Balgowlah Heights on 3 July, 1966. Geoff's 'give it a go, can do' attitude provided a great positive example for our children.

Geoff played high-grade squash and usually won when we played together. I have a cup awarded as a member of the team which won the C-1 competition in Spring 1961 at the Manly-Warringah Squash Courts. Dave Bills from Adelaide was also a member of the team. Geoff had suggested I might play with them when they were short at one point. I can recall once seeing Heather Mackay, the remarkable Australian world champion, playing one of the A-grade male players at the Courts. Another squash memory is playing a game with Alan Ramsay, who later became the very well-known political journalist, who was renting the Sonley home for a period when the Sonleys were away overseas.¹ When the Sonleys acquired a television set, they invited us to look at some of the shows like 'Mission Impossible'. At one stage, I learnt to play chess with Geoff. Our wives were puzzled by the apparent hilarity of our games.

When we were away for the year in 1967, we left our dog Timmie with the Sonleys. Timmie was a cross between a border collie and a kelpie. We reared him from the puppie stage and our children appreciated his company. The only difficulty we had with him was his tendency to chase cars which I managed to eliminate by hitting his snout with a rolled-up newspaper. Trish and I were very sad indeed, when Geoff wrote to us that Timmie needed to be destroyed because he had started snapping at the children of the neighbourhood and could be dangerous. It was the only occasion I can recall in the upbringing of our children when we were not truthful with our children. We felt very bad

1 In 1976, they went to live in England, where later they owned and ran a hotel in Brixham. On Geoff's retirement, they lived for much of the year amongst English ex-pats on the south coast of Spain where Geoff could enjoy his sailing in Mediterranean weather.

that our absence had caused the problem, and that the Sonleys had had to cope with it.

John and Deidre Adams lived in Curban Street, in the house the other side of our back fence. Their son Garry played with our children. John was a cancer researcher at the University of New South Wales. Next door on the eastern side of our house was the Rose family. They were Jewish; their sons David and Ian were a bit older than ours. Further up the street were the Hutchinsons, and their son Kelvin became a friend of David's. They were in the same class at the local primary school. Ken and 'Witsie' Seale and their young daughter lived on the corner of our street and Beaconview Street. We got to know them through the Sonleys and they helped to look after our children when we went to Canberra for my graduation in 1963. Amanda Gosbell lived in Nolan Place the street above ours. She came to our boys' birthday parties and they to her's. Misha and Erna Ciopak, and their daughter Mary lived on the other side of the Sonleys in Dobroyd Road. They were migrants from Roumania, had settled well in Australia, and were amongst the first migrants to purchase their own home. Isobel Sonley had an excellent relationship with Mary who was intellectually disabled (she had a mongoloid condition). Every Boxing Day, we would collect at the Ciopaks to watch the start of the Sydney-Hobart boat race.

During our time in Dobroyd Road, thanks to Trevor Jones, we discovered that Jim and Anne Hardy and family lived on the other side of our street almost opposite the Seales. When Trevor Jones was headmaster at Sydney Grammar Preparatory School at St Ives, he invited the Hardys and us to dinner, a very pleasant reminiscent occasion. I had not seen Trevor, who had played a crucial role in shaping my career path, for some years, and I had not seen Jim since school days at St Peter's. Jim Hardy had come to Sydney in 1962 as resident director of the South Australian wine-making company, Thomas Hardy and Sons.²

Transport

Balgowlah Heights was not very well served by public transport. Buses to the city were infrequent, but between 4pm and 6pm, there were five buses from Barrack Street, which I could use when needed. Buses running past the University of Sydney ran along George Street, Broadway, and Parramatta Road – about 2 miles south-west of central Sydney. The Department of Social Work was in the Mackie Building, on the right-hand side of Parramatta Road; a bus-stop was nearby. Sharing lifts with Jack Lyle who lived in Balgowlah, near Sydney Road, eased the burden of car travel to the university. Jack was a likeable, rather eccentric psychologist who lectured in the Psychology Department at the University of Sydney. As mentioned, his wife Val typed my PhD thesis for me. Jack's car was a small Standard not in particularly good condition; mine was at first our aging Morris Minor. David recollects that we had to take a run down Condamine Street (from Sydney Road) and would only just reach

2 James Hardy was an outstanding yachtsman – a member of the Australian Olympic yachting teams in 1964 and 1968; three times the America's Cup skipper, 1970, 1974, and 1980; and reserve helmsman and team adviser to John Bertram, Australia 11, which won the America's cup. In 1981, he was Australian Yachtsman of the Year, and was also knighted for his services to yachting and the community.

Ernest Street at the top of Condamine Street, near our home in Dobroyd Road. Clearly we had to get a stronger, rather larger vehicle – especially after Ruth's arrival. We anticipated we would be needing a reliable car to drive to Adelaide to see our families. Our next car was a Ford Zephyr which served us well. It was a Ford Zephyr Zodiac Mark 1. It had a six-cylinder engine with a top speed of 80mph, two-tones of grey paintwork, leather trim, a heater, and spotlights. In June 1966, we had to replace this because of the cost of repairs. We bought a 1964 Falcon sedan from a cousin of Isabel Sonley, who was changing to a station wagon. It had done 13,000 miles and was in good condition. When we were overseas, we kept it stored at the Linklaters' in Randwick, with the NRMA periodically checking it.

The University was about 17 kilometres (10.5 miles) away. To get there, Jack and I would drive along Sydney Road to the Spit Bridge, up the Spit Road towards Military Road, down a back way parallel with Military Road, joining it near the Harbour Bridge, and after the Bridge, York Street and a back way to the Mackie Building at the university where parking in the nearby streets was not a problem.

Our Daughter

On 26 July at Dee Why Delmar Private Hospital, our daughter was born. I could not be present at the birth because I had to look after our two young sons, but I was singularly unimpressed when the nursing sister in charge hurried me away as if I had nothing to do with what was going on. I learnt that we now had a daughter on the public telephone at the end of our street! Trish and I were overjoyed, and having a daughter admirably completed our family. My class at the university bought her a rattle which they wrapped and tied with a large pink ribbon and placed on my desk when I came into the lecture room. (A couple of that class, Jenny Day and Norma Hennessey, still remember the occasion!)

With three children under the age of five, Trish had her hands very full. I helped when I could, and at least I was not locked into a daily 9 to 5 job. Ruth Margaret was only 18 months younger than Peter, and they became quite close. Having two elder brothers was a positive influence on Ruth's development. As the youngest, she had to learn to hold her own and became perhaps the toughest of them. She had Trish's lovely fair hair, and I thought she was adorable.

The Cuban Missile Crisis

During the Cuban Missile Crisis in October, 1962, when the Cold War came closest to turning into nuclear conflict,³ I was deeply troubled. Should we have been bringing children into the sort of world that now existed? The shadow of nuclear weapons suddenly became very threatening, although this particular crisis was on the other side of the world. Some fifty years later, despite the build-up of national capacities for nuclear destruction and numerous armed conflicts, nuclear conflict has still not occurred, and our children have, in turn,

3 See 'Cuban Missile Crisis', Wikipedia article on the internet.

produced children of their own. The Cold War has gone, but the need for nuclear disarmament has become even more acute.

THE CHILDREN'S SCHOOLING

As parents we would have preferred to send our children to good, tax-funded schools which drew their pupils from all sections of Australian society. The socially segregated and privileged nature of private or independent schools concerned us, even though we had both benefited from independent schooling ourselves.

Trish remembers the primary school at Balgowlah Heights, within walking distance of where we lived, as 'ordinary, rigid, and basic'. It was 'awful' compared with the year of primary schooling our children received in the USA in Ann Arbor in 1967. The headmaster was not liked by the children, and he saw us as 'academic parents' who believed their children were brighter than their results indicated. The half-yearly reports were minimal.

Burns Park School, Ann Arbor, USA – an Admirable School

Our children attended the Burns Park School in the Ann Arbor public school system. Because the funding and control of public schools in the USA was locally based, the quality of this system reflected its location in a university town. Parents interacted freely and productively with the teachers assisted by excellent reporting from the school. The spring and autumn written reports on each child contained subject-by-subject descriptions of the program for the grade concerned and the teacher's comments on the child's progress and on personal and social behaviour and work habits and attitudes. Parents were invited to ask for additional information and clarification. Our children were made very welcome by both the teachers and other students. When Peter joined his class, the teacher got out the map of the world and showed the class where he came from. In Ruth's Fall (Autumn) report in November 1967, Mrs Gooch reported:

Ruth has good ability in all areas. She takes responsibility well and is always willing to help others. Her contributions to the group are good. She has made many friends and works and plays well with all the children.

We will miss her when she returns to Australia. ...

Ruth loved Mrs Gooch and was unhappy when we took her away to return home.

At Burns Park School, each of the children had to cope with a split academic year. Ruth had to complete half a year in kindergarten and then the first half of year one; Peter the last half of year two and the first half of year three; and David the last half of year four and the first half of year five. Thanks to the school, each of the children progressed reasonably well. Although he was the youngest in his class and easily led by his older friends, Peter's November report said he could function quite well in the class-room; his work habits and attitudes were improving. He had a definite artistic flair and loved the various

art projects, and was capable of good participation in musical activities. David's November report described him as a happy child who tried hard to get along with all of the children. He was a cheerful group member and was well liked. There was constant improvement in his school work. In science, he had worked hard on building a machine of his own creation. He enjoyed both art and music.

In the summer of 1967, we went for an extended tour with the family down south to the Smoky Mountains, up through New York to Maine, and then across to Quebec and Montreal in Canada, before returning through Detroit to Ann Arbor. At the end of the year, we travelled across the USA by train to San Francisco, and then down the west coast to Los Angeles where we caught a ship up to Vancouver in Canada before going across the Pacific back to Sydney.⁴

There is no question that 1967 made a significant contribution to the education of each of our three children although it disrupted their schooling in Australia. In 1968, they reluctantly returned to their state primary school at Balgowlah Heights, with a new awareness of people and places elsewhere in their world.

At the end of that year, my appointment to a senior academic position gave us the opportunity financially to review the educational options which might be open to our children. We had enjoyed living at Balgowlah Heights but were worried about the secondary schooling of our children, and this was a major factor in our decision to move at the beginning of 1969 to a house within walking distance of the Turrumurra railway station. Our children would then be able to go to school by train.

Seeking Appropriate Secondary Schools

Trish and I were aware of the educational benefits we had received from attending our respective schools in Adelaide – the Wilderness School, in Trish's case, and Westbourne Park primary school, Unley High School, and especially St Peter's College, in mine.

St Peter's College?

The demand for St Peter's was such that we had to put down the names of each of our two boys soon after birth, to keep open this option should we be back in Adelaide. Mr Cameron was tutor for admissions in 1958, when I applied for David's admission as a day boy in 1970 when he would be 12 years of age. He suggested we put his name down for Grade V in 1967, when there would be the biggest intake; we could always postpone the proposed year of entry without loss of priority.

I was most interested in your news (of David's birth and your relocation to Canberra) and although sorry to learn that you have left us, I realise that you must follow your star. ... I shall expect to be looked up if you have the time when visiting Adelaide.⁵

4 See pp. 339–43, 347–9.

5 Letter, R. E. Cameron to J. Lawrence, 19/3/58. Sadly, he died the next year before we could see him again.

In 1965, we withdrew our applications for David and Peter at St Peter's, and were assured by Mr Symons, who was then tutor for admissions, that we could always put their names back on their lists for admission if in the future we returned to Adelaide.

Shore?

As soon as we moved to Sydney to live in 1961, we put down the names of David and Peter for admission to their secondary schooling (in 1970 and 1972 respectively) at two of the reputedly best private schools – Shore (Sydney Church of England Grammar School) and Sydney Grammar. At first, Shore had a place for Peter, but the waiting list for David in 1970 looked hopelessly long, and they advised us to enrol both of the boys at Grammar. At Grammar, their names were first on a provisional list but in October, 1961, they were placed on the definite lists. At Grammar, before entry to first year, the boys would have to attain a satisfactory standard in a qualifying examination when they were in sixth class.

The Abortive Warringah School

In March 1962, I had a discussion with Professor Connell, the professor of education at the University of Sydney, about a new private school being planned for the northern beaches region of Sydney. We became interested in the possibility of enrolling each of our three children for their secondary schooling at the proposed co-educational Warringah School, and paid the membership fee of £25. The parents of over 2,000 children were interested, and people like Professor Connell, Professor Harry Messel, Peter Abeles, and B. H. Travers (Shore headmaster), were honorary members. The school planned to be 'a little ahead of educational thinking in concept, so setting an example for Australia with the highest standard in all its work'. It would be non-denominational but would have the support of a number of Protestant churches. Its fees would be comparable with those charged in other independent schools in Sydney. Funds permitting, it hoped to take its first pupils in 1965, building up to the full complement of 1,000 in stages.⁶ In June 1966, the Council reported very little progress since it last met in December 1964. This interesting initiative failed and eventually had to be abandoned.

Sydney Grammar?

During 1968, we made a couple of abortive attempts to see Trevor and Pat Jones to return their hospitality to us. Shortly before they left for the USA, I managed to have a very helpful phone conversation with Trevor on 15 November about David's educational situation. (It will be recalled that Trevor Jones was now headmaster of Sydney Grammar St Ives Preparatory School.) Entry to his school was an unlikely possibility but he suggested that we complete an application form in case it was decided David should repeat his sixth grade in

⁶ Letter, L. C. Cotton, chairman of council, the Warringah School, 17/5/62.

1970. He thought it was advisable to get an independent educational assessment of David and suggested Ron Chambers, who was a reliable educational psychologist who did work for Shore.

On 16 November 1968, we had a discussion on David's schooling with our good friend David Prest. Since 1963, he had been headmaster of Wolaroi College in Orange, and he was just about to become principal of Scotch College in Perth. (From 1972 to 1991, he was principal of Wesley College in Melbourne.) While we were living at Balgowlah Heights, we had stayed with the Prests in Orange, and they had stayed with us in Sydney. David and Jean Prest had a family similar to ours – two boys (David and Ian), and a girl (Lydia). David thought that even if our David showed up alright in the educational assessments of him, perhaps Sydney Grammar would be too selective – he would be better in a school with a more even distribution of ability. He did not think all prep schools were full and we should not have trouble getting David admitted in the following year. The heads of both Newington and Cranbrook were good, humane men, and might be worth talking to. The new head of Knox Grammar School, Dr Ian Paterson, also looked promising, and I found him impressive in an interview I had with him, but he could hold out no hope for enrolling the boys there – their lists were full, and waiting lists were hopelessly long.

Definite Offers at Shore

On 5 December, 1968, the enrolments master at Shore told us that he had been able to arrange definite enrolment for David in 1970 and Peter in 1972.

An Independent Educational Assessment

Ron Chambers referred us to his psychologist colleague, Geoff Fox, at Guidance Services at Milson's Point in North Sydney. His report on 9 December described David as a quiet but competent lad, alert and co-operative. His articulation was excellent, humour good, co-ordination good, and he showed no signs of mannerisms and 'handicaps'.

... David has a potential for scholastic achievement which is not being achieved. His placement in 5B represents, however, the difficulty he has in scholastic learning processes. ...

School changes and teacher attitudes are significant in cases like this, and David's experiences in these situations may be aggravating his adjustments.

I am confident that if David could receive remedial assistance in verbal expression (especially writing expression) he could gain much more confidence in his ability to communicate, and become more relaxed in school work. Eventually he will find it easier to express his knowledge through examinations, and results will represent his ability much better.

In 1969, the three children were enrolled at Warrawee Public School. In the earlier part of 1969, David received remedial educational help from a psychologist at Guidance Services and responded well.

A Traumatic Experience

In July 1969, something happened at school which made David refuse to go. He had never been enthusiastic about attending school, but this was the first time he refused to go. He remembers that at primary school, apart from the year we had in America in 1967, he disliked school. He did not like being told what to do; and a lot of it seemed a waste of time, it was very protracted from a learning viewpoint. We finally persuaded him to go after I promised to take up the matter with the teacher concerned – in writing, and then in person if necessary. This teacher had used humiliation tactics, making 6th class children parade their ‘stupidity’ before 3rd class children to ‘encourage’ learning! After my letter, David reported that the teacher’s behaviour had improved.

On 26 November 1969, we heard from the principal of Warrawee Public School that approval had been given for David’s enrolment in form 1 at Normanhurst Boys High School. Regrettably this was not, however, highly regarded educationally. Despite our general reservations about independent schools, we finished up sending David (1970–75) and Peter (1972–77) to Shore. Ruth went to Abbotsleigh (1973–77), and then Barker College (1978–79) for her two senior years. In the second half of 1974, the children went to independent schools in York in England – the boys at Archbishop Holgate’s Grammar School, and Ruth at the Queen Anne Grammar School.

Sydney Church of England Grammar School (Shore School)

The school traced its origin to a grant of Crown land in 1845 for a school in the city. When the government resumed the land the compensation provided funds in 1886 for the foundation of a church school to perpetuate the original grant and its purpose. The school’s governing council consisted of 17 members, six clergymen and six laymen elected by the Sydney Diocesan Synod and five members elected by the old boys of the school. The archbishop of Sydney was its president and there was an honorary chairman who was not a clergyman.

Shore was in a fairly secluded location overlooking Sydney harbour, just west of the bridge. North Sydney railway station was nearby and it was well served by buses. A modern senior school block had been completed in 1964. It had a large assembly hall, a senior reference library and study room, a general library, and a chapel. There were also art, woodwork and music rooms. Five boarding houses, a common dining room, a cricket ground, and tennis courts were also within the school grounds at North Sydney. A short distance away at Northbridge were 22 acres containing two pavilions, a first-class senior oval and four other good cricket or football fields. The school had a boatshed on Looking Glass Bay off the Parramatta River at Gladesville.⁷

In September 1971, we answered in confidence the parental questionnaire sent to a wide sample of those associated with the school, to assist in the review of the school’s policy and objectives. This gave us the opportunity to express our views on a number of matters. I kept a record of our comments, but not of the questionnaire itself.

⁷ *Sydney Church of England Grammar School Prospectus*, reprinted 1969.

- The objectives in the school's prospectus and as expounded by the headmaster tended to err on the 'safe' traditional side – in contrast to some of the more progressive purposes expressed by some of the younger staff. Preparing students to cope with a rapidly changing world, preparing them for a full range of possible vocations and preparing them for a full range of adult roles⁸ could well be explicit objectives.
- The emphasis on 'moral training' and 'training for character' might be expressed more appropriately – perhaps, 'the fullest development of a boy's personality including a capacity to make moral judgements'. Blind adherence to conventional moral standards is not true morality. Further, there is no mention of being a responsible and participating community member.
- There are two basic lacks in the social preparation for adulthood provided by Shore. It is not co-educational, and there seems to be much less emphasis on the performance of other adult roles besides work roles.
- Our son strongly resists going to church on a Sunday because he 'has it during the week'.
- Within the system, considerable care seems to be taken with each boy, but subject choices are restricted.
- The school's counselling service would be more effective if it employed professional social work staff.
- We enjoyed the talks by the headmaster in 1970 and the meetings for parents in 1971, although Shore could scarcely be described as 'an experimental school', the way the latter was described in the program.
- More professional information on the teaching staff would be of interest.
- The 'Cadets' are a relic from the past. Surely the educational objectives being pursued through them could be achieved in other more appropriate ways. For example, couldn't the boys undertake, under professional guidance, various community service jobs?
- A modern school library should be an information centre at the hub of the school's intellectual life. This has not yet been developed at Shore.
- Internal controls fostered in boys are far more important than external ones.
- Prefect systems in general may be of some benefit to the boys who are actually prefects, but are of dubious value for other senior boys, and these are the majority.
- We are as worried about the future as about today. Boys need to learn far more about the social and political processes of a modern industrial society.
- More comparative religion could help to stimulate our son's insight and interest.
- What is the educational rationale for the lack of choice of winter games? (Boys were expected to play rugby, the headmaster's game of choice.⁹)

We also suggested that possibly the boater could be eliminated because it was hot in the summer and very difficult to manage in the wind.

8 Why are only 'the learned professions' and 'country' and 'commercial' occupations mentioned?

9 Mr Travers played rugby for Oxford, New South Wales and England. He was an old boy of the school and a Rhodes Scholar.

David at Shore

Because of David's somewhat broken and unsatisfactory primary schooling, he was placed in one of the lower classes in first year at Shore. His results progressively improved, so that by 1973 he was not far from the top in a higher class. We received very positive reports on his attitudes from the grammar school he attended in York in the second half of 1974. His form master said it had been a pleasure having him in the form; he quickly made friends and had been consistently cheerful. In spite of a difficult timetable, he had shown steady industry. The headmaster wrote:

He has brought a real breath of fresh air with him. I admire the way in which he has set about making sure of the appropriate timetable, and not taking "no" for an answer, but without giving the slightest hint of offence. It has been a pleasure having him.

Back at Shore in 1975, his form master Mr Doig observed that in some areas the period he had missed had placed him at a disadvantage, but he was completely conscientious and eager to perform well. At the end of the year, he was placed in about the middle of the whole of the sixth form year of 147 boys, and Mr Doig commented that his consideration of others, willingness to listen and lack of envy were noticeably admirable traits. 'I am sure that he will give a good account of himself wherever he goes and at the same time be a good influence on others.' Vocational guidance assessment by Ron Chambers had indicated industrial design or architecture. Industrial design needed both science (physics and chemistry) and art as essential subject pre-requisites and it was Ross Doig, who made it possible for David to do this at Shore, thus opening the way to the new four-year degree in industrial design at the Sydney College of the Arts.

David grew into a tall teen-ager. He was called 'Stretch' at Shore because his height was useful in the rugby line-outs. Rowing, however, became his main sporting interest at the school and he competed at the senior level as a member of the school's successful second four. We enjoyed going to the various colourful school regattas in his senior years.

Sailing

All three of our children continue to have sailing as a major recreation and have their own boats – in Ruth's case a 28-foot S80. Each is a competent sailor. The foundations for this were laid in 1971. In Melbourne, on the way back from visiting our families in Adelaide, we called in on Dick and Enid Bennett and their family. They had built a Mirror dingy from a kit and strongly urged us to follow suit. We were amused when Dick said 'I'm not very good with my hands.' (He was a professor of surgery at St Vincent's Hospital in Melbourne!) Building and sailing the Mirror was a very successful family affair. Trish's father was visiting when we launched it with the name 'Amy', his mother's first name. We could put the Mirror on the top of our car and sailed in Pittwater, a wonderful stretch of water leading up to the mouth of the Hawkesbury River and the open ocean. In 1973, our children became new members of the Bayview Yacht Racing Association.

Peter's Progress

When Peter left Balgowlah Heights public school at the end of 1968, he was placed in the middle of the 87 pupils doing the third grade. At Warrawee Public School, at the end of the year in 1969, he was described as working well and achieving very satisfactory results. By the end of 1970, his conduct and application were both said to be excellent, and his results had noticeably lifted. In the tests at the end of 1971, Peter came about 10th in the A stream class of the sixth grade at Warrawee Public School. Peter's interest in music was very evident. In 1970, he began learning the guitar and music theory at the Bainbridge-Reeves Academy of Music in Pymble. In September 1971, he gained a credit in the first grade for the piano.

Peter at Shore (and elsewhere)

Peter was placed in the third class of the five classes in each year when he went to Shore in 1972. He 'made a good start in his new school' and was described as 'a keen and enthusiastic boy in all he does'. In 1973, 3rd in his form, he was seen as 'quietly competent'.

At the end of Peter's term at Archbishop Holgate's Grammar School in York in 1974, we received these comments: from the form master and the headmaster:

He has a good sense of humour and has stood up well to the expected leg-pulling. A very pleasant boy who takes interest in his work and has settled down well. ...
(form master)

In being ready to take full advantage of what we could offer him, he has greatly enlivened our company. He will be remembered. (headmaster)

While at this school, Peter made 'a very impressive start' learning to play the cello. He had decided he would like to change from the guitar to a different musical instrument. Typically, he read about all of the options in the library and then said he wanted to play the cello. The cello became his great musical love, and back in Sydney in subsequent years he and his sister Ruth attended many music camps, where they learnt a lot from people like Richard Gill and made good friends. Peter played the cello in the Sydney Youth Orchestra, the Sydney University Orchestra and the ABC training orchestra. Just before his 23rd birthday, Peter's playing was at a standard to warrant selection in the Australian Youth Orchestra, but this proved to be his undoing. Very long and demanding practice for playing a Mahler Symphony for an AYO concert in Perth exacerbated RSI (repetitive strain injury), which permanently prevented him from playing his cello. He was devastated. Some years later, however, he discovered he had a promising singing voice. My mother in particular was delighted. When she first heard his singing voice, she was reminded of her brother Les's voice.

Returning to Peter's schooling at Shore 1975–77. In June 1975, we received a vocational guidance report from Ron Chambers:

The personality test which Peter completed shows him to be a sensitive, imaginative,

artistic, rather shy kind of person. He is moderate in his thinking and behaviour and is happy to go along with accepted practice. He is independent-minded, however, and tends to make his own decisions and to take action on his own.

Peter is intellectually capable of completing a University degree course.

Peter's major area of interest is artistic. People, in a social welfare setting come next in his scale of interest. He tends to reject activities which require him to adopt a more directive or persuasive attitude towards people.

He appears to have potentially very superior capacity to appreciate and solve problems in technology.

Obviously, the University course which most suits his pattern of aptitudes, interests and personality is Architecture. ...

Arts (incorporating Fine Arts), or one of the courses at the National Art School, were mentioned as alternatives.

In his final year, 1977, Peter came in the top 15 of his year in his high school certificate, and received an excellent report from his form master, Mr Doig.

It has been a pleasure to be associated with Peter. His natural ebullience of spirit, integrity, and ability to study abstracts in depth have been quite remarkable. His range of talents should stand him in good stead in the future. I wish him well.

He described Peter's submitted art work in his final year as outstanding, and it was one of the HSC art works chosen to be put on public display.

Both David and Peter greatly appreciated having Ross Doig as their rather unconventional art master and also their form master in their senior years at Shore. They later made a point of attending his retirement dinner organised by well-known architect Philip Cox, a former student. Tim Storrier, another outstanding former student, was also there. They and other former students paid great tribute to the encouragement and influence of Ross Doig to students with a creative artistic bent. We certainly were grateful that both our sons had come under his care and influence.

Peter's HSC consisted of 3-unit maths and modern history, and 2-unit English, art, general science, and physics. His mark of 142 out of 150 for history was excellent. In the statement of Peter's school record and achievement sent to us in November, 1977, the headmaster described Peter as 'a very sound hardworking scholar who is maturing well'. At Shore, before we went to York, Peter had played cricket and football, and was in the 14 A's basketball team. In his final years, he played squash. He was well suited to basketball because, like his brother, he was tall and slim, although he continued to grow taller well beyond adolescence.¹⁰ His extra curricula activities were listed as 'school orchestra, chess club, and orchestra club'. Learning to play music was a major interest. In October 1976, he passed the sixth AMEB piano grade and in 1980 passed seventh grade in cello. Peter had a scholarship in cello at the Sydney Conservatorium of Music for one year round about this time.

10 In adulthood, both of the boys were very tall, Peter levelling at just under 6'5" and David slightly less, though broader.

Abbotsleigh Church of England School for Girls

Founded in North Sydney by Miss Marian Clarke in 1885, Abbotsleigh moved to Wahroonga in 1898. In 1924, it became a church school, governed by a council controlled by the synod of the diocese of Sydney. The school was one of the oldest girls' schools in Sydney; it admitted both boarders and day girls. The main school was located on 21 acres in a prosperous residential suburb about 14 miles north of the city. Wahroonga Railway Station was nearby. It had two fields for hockey and cricket, basketball courts, swimming pool and tennis courts. Betty Archdale was the high-profile headmistress 1958 to 1970.

In 1969, we wrote to Miss Archdale seeking admission for Ruth in 6th class in 1973, but were told that she could only be on a waiting list as the class was already full. She did, however, also put her on the waiting list for first year of the senior school when about 20 girls would be admitted by an entrance examination. Although Ruth was achieving excellent results at Warrawee public school, there was no guarantee she would get a place at Abbotsleigh in 1973, so we decided to send her there in 1971 when we found there was a vacancy; we only had to pay half fees because Trish was then teaching at the school. Kath McCredie had taken over from Betty Archdale as headmistress. Ruth's first school report in June 1971 indicated she had 'settled happily into her new school', and that her general progress was very good. Mrs Lugton reported that in music she had 'fine ability, she should do very well'. In the December 1971, her form mistress described her as 'a keen, enthusiastic student' who had attained a good standard, and 'a helpful class member'. Her violin teacher (Mrs Lugton) described her as 'talented and a pleasing pupil'. In her first grade piano examination she achieved an honours level result. Ruth's love for and talent in music was particularly appreciated at Abbotsleigh, which placed great store on the school's music prowess.

In May 1974 before we went to York, her form mistress Mrs Seymour described her as 'always enthusiastic, co-operative and well behaved. She is contributing to the musical activities in the school, and her work is of a very good standard.' At the Queen Anne Grammar School in York, Ruth was 'an enthusiastic and reliable member of the school orchestra'. Her form teacher described her as 'a most reliable and conscientious pupil in all subjects. She is popular among the group and is always polite and cheerful. It has been a pleasure to have her here and we wish her well for the future'. Back at Abbotsleigh, Mrs Seymour the school's director of music described Ruth, a member of both the school's chamber orchestra and its orchestra, as 'a deeply musical and gifted girl'. She continued to do well, both in her school work and in her social development. At the end of her last year at Abbotsleigh in 1977, the school graded her subject results 1 to 10 according to state-wide standards. She was in the top grade in English, mathematics, science, history, and geography; and in the second grade in divinity, French, and music.

In 1977, we informed Miss McCredie that Ruth would be leaving Abbotsleigh at the end of the year in order to attend a co-educational school in the final two years of her secondary schooling.

Barker College

Barker College was an independent Anglican, day and boarding school, located on 26 acres at Hornsby, about 15 miles north of the city and a short distance from Hornsby and Waitara railway stations. Founded in 1890 by an Anglican priest, it moved to its Hornsby site in 1896; its ownership was transferred to the Church of England in 1919.

Amongst its buildings was a modern science building, large specialist rooms for the teaching of art, music and carpentry, libraries, a gymnasium, and a hall with extensive facilities for dramatic and musical performances. It had five fields for cricket and football, basketball courts, tennis courts, and a swimming pool. Land had been set aside for additional playing fields in the future.¹¹

In 1975, a co-educational senior school was introduced for students in years 11 and 12, with an enrolment of 59 students. This followed research by the headmaster Trevor McCaskill which led him to conclude that ‘a separate college for senior students would provide a more appropriate educational experience for young people on the threshold of adulthood, with its smaller classes, its tutorial style of senior teaching, and its introduction of a strong system of academic care which cemented strong relationships between young adult students and those who taught and care for them’.¹² Ruth clearly benefited from this experiment in her final two years of schooling, 1978–79.

In a brief statement of the aims of Barker College as a church school, it was stated by the school council:

- The school wishes to avoid a situation where students are indoctrinated or “brainwashed” under an insensitive dogmatic system.
- The pupil’s integrity as an individual must be preserved and undue pressure must be avoided, recognising that the final decision concerning faith and religion belongs to the individual.
- In broad terms the school’s religious aims may be realised in practice if it has helped the student to:
 - consider seriously the claims of the Christian faith on his¹³ life.
 - accept the need for a system of values as a basis for living
 - be willing to test his opinions critically and honestly.
 - be tolerant of the views of others.¹⁴

Trevor McCaskill was the school’s headmaster from 1963 to 1986. Mary McCaskill was one of Ruth’s best friends. The McCaskills invited us to a meal to meet some of their friends, I wrote a reference for Trevor when he was planning to go to one of the Oxford colleges on study leave, we visited them at their house near Smiths Lake, and I had discussions with their son John McCaskill when he applied for and won the 1979 New South Wales Rhodes Scholarship.

At the end of her two years at Barker, we received an excellent report on her time in the co-educational senior school, signed by the dean of the senior

11 *Barker College Prospectus*.

12 See Barker College website, ‘History of Co-education’.

13 This was obviously prepared before the school became co-educational.

14 *The Aims of Barker College as a Church School*, a brief statement issued by The School Council. (undated).

school, C. S. Strong, and the headmaster, T. J. McCaskill:

... Ruth is an extremely conscientious, reliable and resourceful student whose ability is evident from her Merit prizes in both 1978 and 1979. She is thoughtful and systematic in her work – always eager to succeed.

Ruth has been involved in a wide range of extra-curricular activities. She gained Colours playing for the 1st cricket team this year, participated in the activities of the Bush-walking club, was a member of the Choir and participated with keen enthusiasm in the orchestra and also various Chamber Music groups.

Ruth is a gentle person, sympathetic and sensitive to other people and she has taken an active role in community service activities. She was a member of the Interact Club, gave service as a library assistant, served on the Chapel Committee and helped with group choral activities there and on other occasions assisted with worthy activities.

She had maintained an excellent record of punctuality, attendance and conduct and is immaculate in her appearance.

She has made good use of her opportunities in the school and established herself as a gentle, kind and considerate person, steady in the application of high principles, quiet but open and friendly in her dealings with other people. We wish her well for her future career.¹⁵

This account of our children's schooling has covered the period from 1963 to 1979. It seemed sensible to provide this over-view of the whole process uninterrupted. Trish and I felt a major responsibility for the adequate education of our children and it was not always easy to achieve – their primary schooling was not always satisfactory, and twice we asked them to relocate for an extended period in other countries in the northern hemisphere. We hoped that on balance it would be more than worth it for their broad educational development. Enough has been said to indicate that each of them in fact coped very well in their new, strange surroundings. A major reason for this was the unswerving love and support provided for them especially by their mother. We were also very grateful for the very positive professionalism of the teachers they came under. While it was satisfying that each of the children showed reasonable to very good capacity in their schoolwork, we were particularly grateful for how well they were developing as people. Each had a very distinctive personality, and had his or her own special personal strengths. Thankfully, we did not have particular difficulties with them during their adolescence and were grateful to them for this.

TEACHING SOCIAL POLICY AT THE UNIVERSITY OF SYDNEY 1961–66, 1968¹⁶

An Australian First

My lectureship in social administration at the University of Sydney was, in fact,

15 C. S. Strong and T. J. McCaskill, 'Ruth Lawrence', Barker College, Hornsby, NSW, October 1979.

16 In 1967, I was teaching social policy at the University of Michigan in the USA. See chapter 5.

the first such academic appointment in Australia. (Ray Brown was appointed to a chair of social administration in 1965, heading the social work course at Flinders University which was misleadingly called 'social administration.')

In 1959, Tom Brennan had proposed that social work units in sociology and social policy should be available to arts students, and my appointment was part of this plan. He argued the case for the Sydney University Department of Social Work to be responsible for this teaching in these terms:

Judging from the experience of other countries, bigger improvements are likely to be brought about by improvements in administration than by training better and better social workers. If social work is to make its full contribution it must become an instrument of progress in the running of society as well as an instrument for dealing with the misfortunes of individuals. At present social workers fail to make their full contribution in shaping policy in the Social Services either because they are not in touch with the part of the machinery where policy is made or because they are kept at the bottom of the administrative ladder in their role of specialist case worker; and also because their rather restrictive training encourages them to identify themselves and their work with the interests of their clients rather than with the wider administration.¹⁷

The University of Sydney, founded in 1850, was Australia's oldest. From the outset students were admitted on the basis of academic merit. Its first students graduated in 1856, in 1857 it moved to its present-day site, the Great Hall opened in 1857, and in 1881 the university admitted women. After the First World War, the faculties of arts, science, law and medicine were joined by six new faculties, and from 1924 the university had a permanent role of vice-chancellor as its chief executive. By 1930, three large private benefactions accounted for a quarter of its general expenditure. In 1939, the university's student enrolment was 3,771. When I joined the university in 1961, it had grown to 12,534.¹⁸

Significant social change after the Second World War stimulated both debate and political action on the role of universities in this new society. The university's current website¹⁹ refers to a major debate hosted by the university in 1954 on the role of the university. On the one hand was John Anderson who argued that a university's primary role was the advancement of learning rather than explicitly addressing community or professional needs. The contrary view was that it had a community service role. 'In practice, both sides of the argument existed'. As I have already indicated, I was keenly aware of, and had benefited from, both of these camps or perspectives, in my own university experience. As far as I was concerned, both had a legitimate place in a university, but should not be confused however intermingled they were in university organisation and teaching programs.

My primary role was now the advancement of learning about social

17 Minutes of the Board of Studies in Social Work, 21/7/59, quoted in Michael Horsburgh, *Doing Good Well: Social Work Education at the University of Sydney 1940–2010*, Faculty of Education and Social Work, p. 19.

18 David S. Macmillan, *Australian Universities: a Descriptive Sketch*, Sydney University Press, 1968, p. 77.

19 This provides a brief overview of the history of the University of Sydney.

administration within a school of social work whose primary role was quite explicitly a community service role. Mine was not a 'professional practice' subject, but provided basic data on the social policy and organisational context for such practice. The fact that arts students could take the subject as well as social work students made the distinction obvious. It was also helpful for this purpose that the actual subject I taught was not called social administration, but 'social theory and policy'. The aboriginal activist Charles Perkins, and Peter Jensen (Archbishop of Sydney, 2001–13) both chose my subject because of their general interest in social policy issues. (Many years later, in 1999, my brother Jim reported he had been talking to Charles at a university lunch and Charles said he owed a lot to 'the Lawrence brothers'. He had had many years added to his life thanks to a kidney transplant Jim's unit had done in Adelaide, and he had appreciated doing my social policy subject at the University of Sydney where he was the first aboriginal graduate.²⁰)

Shortly before I began teaching at the University of Sydney, an excellent up-to-date British book in social philosophy was published – S. I. Benn and R. S. Peters, *Social Principles and the Democratic State*, George Allen and Unwin, London, 1959. The authors were involved in teaching students of social studies, sociology and public administration, and had been embarrassed by the absence of a textbook which took account of recent developments in philosophy 'without being too remote from the institutions of the welfare state'. According to the book's preface, initially it was planned that Peters would tackle the ethics and Benn the politics and institutional analysis, but they found their thinking was on remarkably similar lines. The outcome was a coherent integrated discussion for which they both took responsibility, and they took equal responsibility for the book's definite point of view – 'a cautious Utilitarianism which takes full account of the principle of impartiality' – giving reasons for it. In a way the theme of the book was a close relationship between what was implied by 'being reasonable' and the principles and institutions of the democratic state.

Significantly the authors had found that by first tackling the chapters on moral theory and on justice and equality, the rest of the book grew from these. The book was divided into three parts:

- Society: its rules and their validity
 - Society and types of social regulation
 - Moral theory
 - Legal theory
 - Rights
- Social principles and their implementation
 - Justice and equality
 - Justice and the distribution of income
 - Property
 - Punishment
 - Freedom and responsibility
 - Freedom as a political ideal

20 He apparently remembered me as an 'honest, good, straight person', and would like to see me sometime.

- Principles of association and the democratic state
 - Individuals in association
 - Sovereignty and the moral basis of state supremacy
 - The state and other associations
 - Democracy

An appendix on international relations – This stated the book had dealt with the normative orders, like law, custom and morals, which bind us together in society, and with the grounds of their obligations and rights as citizens of states. The appendix briefly considered whether there was any analogous system of rules binding nation-states in an international society, and whether the general principles examined in the book could be applied in such a society.

Both of the authors were in their 30s when they wrote this joint book, and both moved on to senior academic appointments. Stanley Benn had studied political science at LSE and was a lecturer in government at the University of Southampton. In 1962, he was appointed senior fellow in the Department of Philosophy in the Research School of Social Sciences at the ANU, and was professorial fellow there 1973–85. Richard Peters was a reader in philosophy at Birkbeck College, University of London, and from 1962 to his retirement in 1983, was professor of philosophy of education at the University's Institute of Education. I can recall in 1987, asking the American philosopher Virginia Held what she thought of the Benn and Peter's book. 'It's a minor classic', was her response.

I could not have wished for a better social philosophical basis for teaching social policy and its administration in a liberal democratic society. The authors provided a sophisticated but accessible discussion of our normative existence, and the central role of moral reasoning, as they understood it, for trying to justify our social policies and their administration. It confirmed in my own thinking the pervasive underlying importance of moral philosophy or ethics in understanding and justifying human conduct.

When I left the University of Sydney near the end of 1968, my 64 students of Social Theory 11, wrote a clever (if not always crystal clear), departing tribute to me in these terms:

TRIBUTE TO R.J.L.

Subtitled: Revision

"The objectives of Soc. Theory 11", so he says,
 "Do require of you all that you be
 Prepared to accept as the rule of your life
 The procedure of morality.

"Whilst impressing on you 'as a matter of fact'
 My non-moral authority,
 I insist that you learn to sort out for yourselves
 How to think, when to act, what to be.

"For I would like to share with you values and norms –
 They're professional essentially.

In your practice you'll need to be clear about these ...
Are you with me? ", he says. "Mm ..." say we.

"Well then let us press on to the content", he says.
How we hang on his words eagerly!
For behind this prescriptive-description of his
(No naturalistic fallacy!)

Is a sanction so strong it enforces assent
Even though it appears arbitrary
To some members of class who do not share this view
Of Social Work's supremacy.

"A confusion arises, in normative terms,
With respect to "The Book", B. and P.,
Do we take it on faith, or from rational stance
Be prepared to read critically?

"Further, what is a client – a notion? a goal?
Do we use him illustratively?
We're inclined to believe he's a value of yours –
An abstraction of reality.

Can you justify using him as a resource?
Considering impartially,
Is he an end in himself, or a means to our end
Of acquiring a 'huge' salary?

"If he's not in the race on account of the rate
He's extending the race recklessly,
Is the man who produces productive, or not,
If producing unproductively?

"These are problems concerned with the 'snippets' we've heard,
For solution ...? Consult B. & P. ?
Or 'de facto' does 'de jure' power which you wield
Make you 'in' or 'an' authority?

Is the right to control of our fate we impute
You, an aspect of legality?
Could you demonstrate normatively for the class
Your proportionate relevancy?"

"Failing this, Dr Lawrence, I beg, knowing well
The extent of your competency,
That you'd help with advice on an issue of note
Based in 'organisation' theory.

ITS THIS

"Would a Non-sensuous Intuitionist make –
(You will treat this professionally?)
If at thirty I'm 'left in the field' – a good

Utilitarian husband for me?"

"The criteria used in the case you present,
As familiar to you as to me,
Imply that no substantive norm will be found ...
Are you with me?", he says. "Umm", say we.

The procedure this issue of welfare suggests
That you follow unremittingly
Is - 'consider the interests of all that impinge' -
"And do not neglect any.", says he.

"Do the interests of all in this matter conflict?
Can you formulate just policy? -
Would a Logical Positivist better be served
By proposal of matrimony?

"One thing more I must ask - please consider my claim
As you weigh up all grounds judiciously -
Our objective has been to *develop* 'the field' ...
ARE YOU WITH ME ?", he says. "YES !", say we.

The note which was attached to this read:

We would like to share with you this handout; for you to digest the issues involved, and bear with us as we press on seeking the organisation of theory, in order to reach the END.

We thank you for being with us!

THE TERRAIN OF MY SUBJECT

In June 1965, I prepared for ACOSS the Australian contribution to the terminology project of the ICSW. The task was to say briefly how a number of terms were used in Australia. These included 'social service', 'social services', 'social welfare', and 'social work', all concepts centrally associated with the teaching area for which I now had responsibility. My pioneering appointment made me the obvious person to ask. The following conceptual and definitional statements were sent to the ICSW. They reflected considerable personal observation, reading and reflection, but were not the product of a working group. I was, of course, aware that the usages I identified obviously would have been observable in various other countries as well as my own.

'Social Service'

1. 'Social service' can refer to any work or activity which has the object of being of benefit to the society. Occasionally, since 'service' implies actual benefit, the term will only be applied where benefit to the society is actually demonstrated and agreed upon, and not just intended, claimed, or implied.
2. The work may be done by individuals either with or without payment, and with or without special training; and it may be done by organisations either government or non-government.

3. 'Of benefit to the society' in this context usually refers to work which is directly concerned with the personal and social welfare of the individuals and groups within the society and which is seen as being socially desirable.
4. More particularly it is work which is concerned with the maintenance and improvement of general social and living standards with regard to income, employment, education, health, housing and recreation, and with the social and living standards of particular community groups, usually vulnerable ones like the aged, and physically and mentally handicapped.
5. Any of the work or activity indicated above may now be described as 'social service'. For some, the term still conveys only work to help the poor by a charitable person or body; for some, it is used primarily for work done by individuals. Increasingly, however, the scope of the term has been generally broadened, partly encouraged by the existence of the coordinating councils of social service which have adopted a broad interpretation of the term 'social service'.

'Social services'

1. This term is used either with reference to certain organisations whose object is a service to society, or with reference to the benefits provided by such organizations.
2. The organisations or benefits may be governmental or non-governmental, although many of the general public would associate the term only with government provided benefits, and in particular the various income-security benefits provided through the Commonwealth Department of Social Services.
3. Not all organisations set up specifically to provide a service to society are included under the term. For example, transport, public utilities, the defence and police forces, and the Commonwealth Department of Trade are usually excluded. The term normally covers organisations and/or benefits *directly* concerned with the personal and social welfare of individuals and groups within society, whose welfare is of general social concern.
4. More particularly the organisations and/or benefits may be designed to maintain or improve general social and living standards with regard to income, employment, education, health, housing and recreation. Or they may be concerned with the social and living standards of specific community groups, usually vulnerable ones.
5. In most cases profit-making concerns are not included, because any social service function they may have is usually secondary to their profit-making. Insurance schemes with some degree of government subsidisation are normally included, but not self-supporting insurance schemes. (The main income-security services in Australia are tax-supported, not insurance schemes.)
6. The Victorian Council of Social Service publishes a 'Directory of Social Services'. In other States similar publications are called directories of social agencies or of social service agencies. Such directories take a broad definition of 'social services', setting the limits roughly as suggested in this statement. Discussion on what is a 'social service', is, however, rare,

and most people would have a more restricted view and are likely to be inconsistent in their usage. Many would still limit the term to government-provided material and financial aid.

'Social welfare'

1. Used in relation to society, 'social welfare' is a broad term, but it does not normally cover the total well-being of society, including, for example, safety, or the society's economic or political condition.
2. The term may refer to actual or ideal social and living standards of individuals and groups within society, either throughout the society, or of those who constitute problem groups who are likely to fall below socially acceptable minimum standards.
3. The term may also refer to all the social beneficial organisations and policies whose aim is the maintenance or improvement of general social and living standards with regard to income, employment, education, health, housing, and recreation, or who are primarily concerned with the social and living standards of particular community groups, usually vulnerable ones. This usage is sometimes designated 'social welfare services and policies'.
4. Used in relation to an individual, the term refers to his or her well-being as a member of the community, especially his or her living standards and opportunities as compared with others in the community. The type and quality of his or her inter-personal relationships may sometimes be included.

'Social work'

1. As their numbers grow, and they move into new social service and geographic areas, the term 'social work' is becoming associated with the activities of professional social workers – in many places exclusively so. This process is, however, very uneven; it appears to be more rapid in the larger communities, and within social service circles than outside them.
2. Professional social workers tend to see themselves as belonging to one professional group with common knowledge, skills and values. They have a generic university qualification and the great majority belong to the one nation-wide professional association. 'Social work' is sometimes used to refer to 'the social work profession'. The profession's work is social service work, that is it is socially desirable work which has as its primary aim the personal and social welfare of individuals or groups within the society.
3. Other ways in which the term is used in connection with professional social workers are: –
 - (a) Any work which they perform as social workers.
 - (b) One or more of the methods they use – social casework, social group work, community organisation, social welfare administration, research, social action, and teaching people to perform these functions. Since most professional social workers are still primarily social caseworkers, this usage is more likely to relate to social casework than to the other methods – although multiple functions are quite common and in both professional social work education and employment the other methods are gaining increasing prominence.
 - (c) A 'social work' agency is one which has the services of professional social

- workers. The agency's work is social work.
- (d) A subject dealing with the knowledge, skills and values of the social work profession.
4. Other usages which exist either exclusively or alongside the above:
- (a) Any social service work done by organisations or by individuals.
- (b) Sometimes 'social work' is strongly associated with voluntary charitable work for the needy.

THE EVOLUTION OF MY TEACHING SUBJECT 1961–68 – A PIONEERING VENTURE²¹

The teaching course for which I had responsibility was a full third-year subject in the diploma of social work. It consisted of 3 one-hour lectures each week and an hour seminar each fortnight. It was initially called 'Social Theory and Social Policy,' but was renamed 'Social Theory 11' in 1963, when the subject taught by Tom Brennan was now called 'Social Theory 1'. Both of these subjects were now available to arts students. When the bachelor of social studies degree was introduced in 1966, my subject became a final or fourth year subject in that degree as well as a third year subject in an arts degree or a final year subject for the diploma of social work usually in combination with an arts degree.

From the outset, I was fortunate that all of my students were in at least their third year of university study. This meant that they were already familiar with what was required of university-level education, and all had at least passed Tom Brennan's subject which provided essential grounding for my subject. His subject in 1966 was described as an introductory sociology course which included detailed study of family structure and family organisation, some small group studies relevant to administration, a social profile of Sydney, and the sociology of social problems.

In 1966, two-thirds of the Social Theory 11 class were social work students who had completed Principles of Social Work 1 and this had included a general introduction, through observation visits, seminars and a written assignment, to the social welfare institutions of Sydney. Concurrently with Social Theory 11, these students were usually enrolled in Principles of Social Work 11, which included field work under supervision in social agencies, and in Physical and Mental Health 11. The rest of the students were enrolled in a wide variety of arts subjects.

Descriptions of My Subject

In 1962, I described my Social Theory and Social Policy subject as follows:

Social Theory

The method used in this part of the course is that primarily of modern analytic philosophy. Its field was formerly covered by social philosophy, but it also covers a lot of things usually connected with political and legal theory. Through examples

²¹ The material in this section is drawn from my lectures and documents in my work archives.

in the lectures and discussions at seminars, the argument is frequently related to familiar situations in social welfare fields.

The approach is to see human society as something held together by rules, whether they be legal, customary, moral, or religious. The various types of rule systems are distinguished and the relationships between them are analysed. This naturally involves, amongst other things, a discussion of the relationship between morality and legality. The important distinction between prescriptive and descriptive statements is stressed.

Then various concepts such as rights, justice, equality, punishment, freedom, and responsibility, are analysed. These are seen as providing principles for use in constructing, maintaining, and justifying rules which regulate social behaviour.

Finally, there is a discussion of the various principles of association which are found in a modern democratic society. This includes an examination of the relationship between the democratic state and other associations, and the relationship of the individual to all kinds of association.

Text: S. I. Benn and R. S. Peters, *Social Principles and the Democratic State*, London, George Allen and Unwin Ltd., 1959.

Social Policy

An analysis of what is involved in forming and justifying various kinds of rules in general, is relevant to understanding social policy, for social policy is expressed in terms of rules primarily concerned with social welfare. And the rules of course are not just those found in legislation.

In the social policy part of the course, the historical context of social policies in Western countries is traced. This involves a brief examination of such things as industrialisation, urbanisation, political changes, social attitudes, religious ideas, advances in scientific knowledge, demographic changes, the growth of governmental agencies relative to non-government ones, and so on. (Some would classify much of this as social history or social economics.)

Lastly there is a comparative survey of contemporary social provision in Western countries, placing emphasis as much as possible on principles behind the provision and its administration. The various areas of modern provision, such as the social security system, the health services, the penal services, services to the handicapped, are treated in turn.

Throughout the social policy part of the course, much of the material is drawn from overseas literature. Increasingly, however, it is hoped to use Australian material gained either by collecting what is now available but widely scattered, or from original research.

In 1966, I briefly described Social Theory II in these terms:

The course concentrates upon western democratic industrial societies with particular reference to the United Kingdom, the United States, Australia and New South Wales. It has three main sections:

- I. Social Philosophy
 - Analysis of social principles and operative values, actual and ideal, which are used in constructing, maintaining, and changing society's regulations and policies.

- II. The Institutions of Industrial Society
 - Characteristics of such societies which have special relevance for social welfare problems, policies and provision.
- III. The Social Welfare Institutions
 - Discussion and evaluation of society's methods of meeting, through policies and services, selected important social welfare problems.
 - Discussion of the need for coordination of social welfare policies and services, and description and evaluation of existing coordinating devices.

In 1968, I briefly described the content of my subject as 'collective action for the advancement of social welfare'²² (social welfare problems, policies and provision) – what in Britain was called 'social administration', in the USA schools of social work 'social welfare policy and services', and now in Australia 'social administration'. I told the class, that in developing the final section of the course which was specifically focused on social welfare institutions and programs, I aimed to provide a framework and method for studying, assessing and understanding welfare programs and the forces which shaped the provision of services. I used materials drawn from a variety of areas of social welfare, the materials being primarily chosen to demonstrate the usefulness of the method of analysis. Unfortunately most of the materials still came from overseas because of the dearth of Australian ones. I told the class,

Social welfare programs are supposedly set up and conducted for the benefit of clients or recipients of the resulting services. We will be examining factors which determine who are the intended beneficiaries and with respect to what, who are the actual beneficiaries, and who might be the beneficiaries. In other words, we are interested in problems of distribution and delivery – in the extent, the nature and the outcomes of service transactions which take place. Our frame of reference is a national society and its various component parts.

I suggested that any program had a number of key organisational dimensions – their goals, clients and potential clients or users, the resources and potential resources, the auspice or sponsorship of programs, and finally geographic location. Coordination and planning questions were discussed taking into account all these dimensions, which were examined in turn for analytical reasons.

THE SEMINAR PROGRAM

The Newspaper Project

An unusual feature in the subject's seminar program was the newspaper project, which ran each year, starting in 1961. The object was for students to gain experience using the analysis of principles and concepts discussed in the first section of the course; to have some practice in handling diffuse material by means of an index, and dealing with classification problems; to become alive

²² This was David Donnison's helpful description of social policy and administration.

to material which was of social welfare significance; and to increase interest in and understanding of current social issues.

The class was divided into seminar groups. During each fortnight, two students from a group would classify *The Sydney Morning Herald*, using the 44 classifications I provided.²³ They would choose two or three topics dealt with in the period by the *SMH* which their seminar group could profitably discuss. After discussion with me, they would post on the notice-board their chosen topic and indicate possible background reading. In the week following, all students in their group would examine the *SMH* for material relating to the topic and were expected to read any background material suggested. At the beginning of the seminar, all students, except the two in charge of the seminar, would hand in a 500-word statement. I kept these and took them into account when determining an individual's seminar mark at the end of the year. At the seminar, the two students in charge would present material relating to the issue, would pose questions and lead the discussion so that it adequately considered the questions set. The leaders would then prepare independently a 1,000-word report on this discussion, and hand it in before the next newspaper seminar. Again, this work would be taken into account in the individual's final seminar mark. Attendance was compulsory and an attendance record was kept.

In my work archives is a record of the newspaper seminar topics for 1966, and some of 1965:

- Is the recent decision by the Commonwealth Arbitration Commission on wages for aboriginal workers in the Northern Territory pastoral industry justified?
- Would the Federal Government be justified in giving the vote to all servicemen under 21 enlisted or enrolled for overseas service?
- To what extent were the 3 Anglican bishops justified in publishing their recent letter on Vietnam?
- Who is responsible for the welfare of the population in New Guinea? How well is Australia fulfilling its responsibilities?
- To what extent does the government accept responsibility for the welfare of mentally handicapped children in New South Wales and to what extent should it?
- To what extent is the recent subsidy to the Arts justified?
- What are the present censorship arrangements in Australia? In what ways would you change these?
- Under what conditions should there be a right to strike? Were these conditions present in the recent postal strike?
- Should poker machines be banned?
- What is the actual role of prisons in the New South Wales community?

23 Aborigines, Administration – federal, state, local, Administration of Justice, Aged, Child welfare, Churches, Commonwealth-state relations, Community development, Compensation etc, Conferences, Cost of living, Delinquency, Demography, Economic policy, Education, Employment, Family welfare, Fund-raising, Gambling, Handicapped, Health – general, Health – mental, Hire purchase, Hospitals – general, Hospitals – mental, Housing, Infant welfare, Migration, New Guinea, Overseas assistance, Politics – federal, state, local, Prisons, Professions, Race relations, Recreation, Research, Social security, Television, Town Planning, Trade unions, Voluntary agencies, Wages etc, Women's role, Youth welfare.

What should be their role?

- How does local government affect the New South Wales citizen? Should New South Wales citizens be more active in local government affairs?
- What limitations of freedom of political expression should be placed upon the mass media of communication?
- Do you think the New South Wales liquor laws are in need of reform?
- Australia has recently liberalised its immigration policy with regard to Asians. Are these changes justified?
- Do you think the proposed salary increases for State Parliamentarians are justified? What is an equitable method for determining just salaries for parliamentarians?
- How necessary is hospital reform in New South Wales? What form should changes take?
- How justified was the recent decision by the Sydney City Council to ban dances for aborigines at the three town halls?
- The Mt Isa dispute. Who are the parties involved? Do you think the Commonwealth Government should have power to intervene?
- What are the major recommendations of the Martin Report and which of these has the Commonwealth Government endorsed? What do you think is wrong with the Report?
- What is the proposed change in the Constitution relating to the Commonwealth Parliament, and how can the change be effected? What are the implications of the change for the functions of the Senate and MPs?
- Why has the rejection of Dr Knopfmacher for an academic appointment by the Professorial Board of Sydney University become a public issue? Whether or not it is involved in this, what do you understand by academic freedom?
- What reorganisation of the Australian Labor Party has been proposed? Is there a need for it?
- Why had the Australian waterfront been such an industrial trouble-spot?

The Apex Project

In August 1964, George Sprague, the chairman of the Apex Action Committee, asked Professor Brennan and me for assistance in looking at the place of Apex in the community. It was decided that the 46 students in my Social Theory 11 class could profitably devote their seminar work in the third term to assist in a preliminary study. They examined the functioning of three metropolitan clubs – Drummoyne, Mosman and Rockdale, through evidence gathered from club minute books, annual reports and other club records; the minutes and papers of the Association Convention; the Association handbook, directory, and other guides; *The Apexian*; observations of students at club meetings; and replies to an especially constructed schedule administered by the students to individual club members. In November, I wrote a report of the project for Apex with suggestions on how it might choose to proceed.²⁴

24 R. J. Lawrence, *The Place of Apex in the Community: a Preliminary Study*, Department of Social Work, University of Sydney, November 1964.

Students had to answer a compulsory examination question on the extent to which the club they studied was in effect a community service organisation.

The project had the benefit of the ready cooperation of the presidents and members of the three clubs chosen, and of the students. Professor Brennan and George Sprague provided helpful assistance along the way. I came to know and appreciate George through the project.²⁵

I followed up this project in September 1966 with a substantial paper on 'Citizenship and Community Service' to the Apex school for district governors elect. In this, I first provided a brief analysis of legal, political and community concepts of citizenship, and of the various communities in which we live our lives and to which we might contribute. I then described the traditional involvement of citizens in social welfare services and the changing role of volunteers and voluntary organisations in these. Finally, I raised some questions for Apex as an organisation of "citizens engaged in community service". At the end were these observations:

It is evident that Apex performs a useful community service by providing fellowship and recreational opportunities for many young men. But Apex claims to be much more than this, and it makes the claim in terms of the twin concepts of good citizenship and community service. ... Modern citizenship and modern community service are not simple matters. We deceive ourselves and others if we claim they are.

Apex can, of course, retreat into fellowship activities; or it can be content with stereotyped versions of community service; or it can come out and meet realistically the service challenges thrown down to the citizen by our society.

The choice is yours.

This paper was published in full in the organisation's national publication *The Apexian*, together with a report of what I said during question time after the paper. The latter gives some indication of my thinking and attitudes at the time:

'Apex cannot go on being a gadfly ... flitting from this to that to the other ... with no continuity and fairly often quite irresponsibly.'

He said that Apex was not, in his opinion, evaluating, that it was not checking to see if its actions were a good thing for the people of the community.

'It is ironical if a service movement may be challenged on the grounds of its very existence, because it may be hurting people', he said.

He commented that he was not trying to be dramatic, but it was an established fact that a number of voluntary organisations were using methods in social welfare that were known to be harmful to those being "helped".

'I am not suggesting that a great deal of what Apex is doing is not worthwhile, I am merely pointing out that your actions in community welfare will draw attention to you and make you a target for these challenges', he said.

Dr Lawrence also challenged the officially stated objectives of Apex.

'If you look closely at these objects they are quite unclear as to what they are

25 He was an advertising executive with an office in North Sydney. Some years later when we saw each other in the Philippines, he insisted on me being his guest at an international Apex dinner he was attending.

stating and I suspect that they do not really indicate what your final objectives might be.

'In an age that is more and more specialised, organisations are becoming more specialised things and if you are going to sort out what Apex is about, you must start by asking in what areas does Apex claim to have a special contribution', he said.

'Do not act as a general pressure group for everything, but select areas where you can make a real contribution', he urged those present.

'The government can get away with apathy because the community is apathetic. If you really care about a number of pensioners who are poverty – stricken, and if you really care about the limited conditions in which widows bring up their children; if you really care about the unemployed – if you really care about a group, then you can bring pressure to bear and do something', he said.

'People who have to make decisions welcome ferment and pressure for change. It justifies their actions.

'A great deal of modern government is dependent upon organised pressure activity. Pressure groups perform an absolutely vital community service within our sort of democratic society.

'Those people who get chary about the function of pressure groups really haven't thought about the activities of these groups. Representations must be made to the actual policy-makers if changes are to be made.

'One of the values of a democratic system of government with all its checks and balances is that the politician or public servant cannot go very long without some public justification of what he is doing', he said.

He was asked if he felt there was any scope for Apex in international welfare.

'This is a difficult question", he replied. 'If you try to evaluate and give continuity these things become more difficult as you get away from your local area. 'This has been found with schemes of international aid. America, of course, after the war gave massive aid to Asian countries ... but in a thoroughly insensitive way', he claimed.

'They did not know the local culture and they were not willing to work slowly with the people involved.

'So an international scheme would be far more difficult an undertaking for a group than a local scheme', he said.

He commented that there were two major arguments involved.

'Firstly, the most radical problem in the world today is the gap between nations and anything that closes the gap should have top priority. Even though you may be bumbling in your international efforts and you may get less personal satisfaction, it is still very essential work.

Secondly, the argument is that there is a major responsibility to put our own house or country in order first before meddling in others' houses.

People think that we have no poverty in Australia and my guess is that we have considerable poverty here that is concealed. There is a full-scale survey taking place at the moment on this problem', he said.

'A United States' survey showed that one fifth of the population lived in conditions of poverty', he told members. 'Poverty is a relative concept: it must be determined in relation to the values that operate in a society.

'We should look and see if we are merely helping to maintain a system that is allowing poverty in our own country', he warned.²⁶

The Organisation Theory Project

In 1965, I introduced the organisation theory project in the seminar program. This introduced students to organisation theory, through reading and group discussion, and its relevance for social welfare policy and provision was considered. In 1968, after my return from teaching at the University of Michigan, I reorganised the timing of the seminars so that the organisation theory seminars were in the 1st term, and the newspaper project seminars were in terms 2 and 3. Because of the increased class size, three students instead of two now had to work together in the newspaper topic presentations, but otherwise the arrangements were unchanged.

For the organisation theory seminars, the class in 1968 was divided into four seminar groups, and each group was divided into four sub-groups. Each group had a specified convenor who was responsible for convening meetings of each sub-group, but each sub-group as a whole was responsible for ensuring maximum participation, a fair sharing of the work, and deciding on the form of presentation to the seminar group. A sub-group presented two work-in-progress reports in addition to other material prepared for inclusion in a folder for each seminar group, which was kept in the seminar room. There was a compulsory examination question on the term's seminar work, which entailed knowledge of the work of each of the sub-groups. The four specified areas for study, each to be covered by a sub-group, were: organisational goals and decision-making, structure and communication, organisational change and organisational stability, and environmental factors. I cited 42 relevant references available in the Fisher Library, and encouraged students to follow up at least some of the many other possible references. My first two references were listed as of 'particular note' – Peter M. Blau and W. Richard Scott, *Formal Organisations: a Comparative Approach*, 1963; and Amitai Etzioni (ed.), *Complex Organisations*, 1962.

EXAMINING

My examining in the subject had three components – each student was assessed on two submitted term essays (10 marks each), on their contribution to the subject's seminar program (10 marks), and on two three-hour examination papers at the end of the year in which a student would write five short essays in each paper, with a fair amount of choice of topic (50 marks each paper). Each item was marked out of 10. Less than 5 was a fail, 5–6 a pass, and 6 and a half or more a credit. Less than 50% (of the total of 130) in the subject was a fail, 50% – 64% a pass, and 65% or more a credit. (Distinctions and higher distinctions had not yet been introduced.)

26 R. J. Lawrence, 'Citizenship and Community Service', *The Apexian*, December 1966, Vol. 25, No. 122, pp. 6–8.

The following complete set of examination questions which I set in these foundation years of teaching social policy at the University of Sydney, provides some indication of the content of the lectures.²⁷ (Until 1966, students had to answer four questions from the first section in the first paper.)

1961

- "To think that rules made by society are of the same order as natural laws is to confuse prescription with description. Discuss.
- What are the different kinds of rules found in human society? Is it important to distinguish between them? Or, When a couple say, "We ought to adopt a child", what might they mean by "ought"?
- "People who urge equality as a social principle have in mind the elimination of inequality of treatment on unjustifiable grounds". Discuss this view in connection with one or more of the following : - Sex, Race, Opportunity, Social Standing, Legal Standing.
- What criteria might be used in determining a just distribution of income?
- Is punishment morally justified?
- "Democracy is a way of coming to terms with the need for authority without accepting a duty to submit to whatever abuses it might bring in its train". Discuss. Or, What is the case for freedom of association? What limits do you think should be set to this freedom, and why?
- What is the relevance of industrialisation for social welfare programs?
- What influence did religious thought in nineteenth century England have upon attitudes to social questions?
- What is the world population problem? Can it be overcome? Or, Do you agree with Australia's present population policies?
- What were the main landmarks on England's road to social security?
- The Australian Commonwealth Government in fact runs two social security programs - one for the general public, the other for ex-servicemen and their dependents. Should they both exist?
- Why did the Australian Commonwealth Government adopt a limited, non-contributory principle for old age pensions in 1908? Should a different principle now be adopted?
- Have non-government social welfare agencies an important part to play in Australia today?
- What have been the main difficulties in the growth of a social work profession in Australia?
- "In the past, problems of poverty, public health, of long hours and unsatisfactory conditions of work were so pressing that to a large extent, social reformers concentrated on them. The most urgent problems ... today ... are problems of psychological maladjustment rather than material need". Discuss.
- Are councils of social service necessary?
- What are the main features of the organisation of the health services in Australia?

²⁷ My work archive contains the actual lectures, but the record is not carefully organised and dated.

1962

- What makes a rule a moral rule? Or, What makes a rule a valid law?
- What is the relationship between conventional morality and the law?
- In what ways are rights and duties connected? Or, Are human rights “natural”?
- “In practice, many egalitarians challenge established criteria for differential treatment, and substitute new more reasonable criteria in their place”. Discuss.
- How would you decide what is a just income for qualified social workers?
- “If a man does not enjoy free will, punishment is morally unjustifiable”. Discuss.
- What distinguishes the state from other types of association? Or, When government authorities say they seek the common good, what might they mean?
- What are the important freedoms in a free society?
- Discuss the relationship between religion and social welfare.
- “A society’s total welfare and the birth-rate move in opposite directions”. Discuss.
- What have been the main features in Australia’s demographic history?
- Discuss the importance of *one* of the following in the development of social security in Britain:-
 1. The Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834.
 2. The 1905–9 Royal Commission on the Poor Laws.
 3. The Beveridge Report.
- How realistic is a doctrine of self-help for individuals or small groups in a complex industrial society?
- Trace the growth of the Australian Commonwealth Government’s interest in social welfare measures.
- “Vital to any system of social security is the maintenance of employment and provisions for the unemployed”. Discuss in connection with Australia’s policies.
- “The lot of the civilian widow in Australia is a hard one”. Discuss.
- What have been the obstacles in the way of co-ordination of Australian social services?
- What special education do people administering social services need? Is the Australian situation satisfactory?
- If you were asked to undertake a critical analysis of a social agency, how would you go about it? To illustrate your argument choose an agency set up to help *one* of the following groups:-
 1. Dependent children.
 2. Physically handicapped people.
 3. Legal offenders.
 4. Migrants.
 5. Aborigines.
- What are the main benefits available under Australia’s National Health Scheme? Is it an adequate scheme?

1963

- "To understand human societies it is important to distinguish between descriptive and prescriptive statements about human affairs". Discuss.
- What are the major kinds of social regulation? What is the authority behind each?
- What is the relationship between legal obligation and moral obligation? Or, "Factual, moral, and legal questions relating to the law should be kept distinct to avoid confusion". Discuss.
- Can bills of rights impede social progress?
- "Employers ought to treat men and women equally." Discuss.
- In what ways do the judge's and the legislator's tasks differ in determining a just punishment?
- Is there really a conflict between the democratic state and other associations in a democratic society?
- "Religion may impede or stimulate social reform." Discuss in relation to religious attitudes in nineteenth century England.
- When does a population "problem" exist? What can be done about it?
- "The major flaw in Australia's post-war immigration program has been that it has not included people from Asian countries." Discuss.
- Was the Poor Law Amendment Act of 1834 a reasonable measure in view of the social and economic circumstances of the time? Or, Why is Britain's Beveridge Report such a famous document?
- "A considerable proportion of Australia's citizens are poorly housed, ill-clothed or ill-nourished – living in conditions which reflect no credit on a country such as ours No longer can we sustain the claim that Australia is the social laboratory of the world."
(Report from the Joint Commonwealth Parliamentary Committee on Social Security, 24th September, 1941.)
- What action has the Commonwealth taken to rectify this state of affairs? Or, "Australia's federal system of government has proved an obstacle in developing national social service policies." Is this true, and if so, does it matter in terms of individuals' welfare?
- What is wrong with Australia's present system of age pensions?
- "The economic costs of rearing a family have received scant attention by Australian Governments." Discuss.
- What are the respective roles of the Commonwealth Government and the State Governments in providing health services in Australia?
- "The Australian social welfare scene is inimical to councils of social service." Discuss.
- "The social work profession in Australia lacks strength not because of any weakness in its basic design, but because of limited numbers especially male numbers." Discuss.
- "Vital to any system of social security is the provision of an adequate amount of low-cost housing." Discuss in relation to the situation in New South Wales.

1964

- What is the relationship between “power” and “authority”? Why is authority so important in human society? Or, Discuss with examples, the different kinds of rules which exist in human society.
- “The exposure of the ‘naturalistic fallacy’ was an important milestone in the development of moral theory.” Discuss.
- “It is only in a democratic community that there could arise any confusion between the legal and the moral justification of a law.” Discuss.
- Is equal treatment for all an outrageous social principle, or is it essential to social justice?
- “The justification of private property cannot be discussed apart from the things which are privately owned.” What are the most controversial forms of private property and why?
- Should punishment result from rule-breaking? Or, Will advances in knowledge about human behaviour eliminate the justification for punishment?
- In what ways does an association like a family or a nation differ from an association like a sports club or a joint stock company?
- Is there any moral base to the supremacy of the state over other associations?
- How did the prevailing attitudes in nineteenth century England affect social reform?
- What do people mean when they talk about “the world population problem”?
- To what extent is the Apex Club you have studied in effect a community service organisation?
- Select one of the topics used in the newspaper project and discuss it from the point of view of social justice.
- “Australia’s immigration policy is out-of-touch with the changed circumstances of the present day.” Discuss.
- Outline the main steps by which national responsibility for social security was taken in Britain.
- Why are the aged people in Australia an economically depressed section of the community? What would you do about it?
- Is the idea of a “National Minimum” below which no member of the community is allowed to fall strong in Australia?
- What were the main problems facing civilian widows with dependent children revealed by the 1962 survey?
- What are the main components of Australia’s National Health Scheme? How adequate is it?
- What are the chief arguments of the opponents of the “Welfare State”? Are they valid?

1965

- How does a moral rule resemble a scientific law and how is it distinguishable from legal, conventional and religious rules? Or, Does it make sense to talk about “moral authorities”?
- Why do people obey the law? Or, What is wrong with Austin’s view that

laws are commands coming from the sovereign, directly or via subordinate authorities, but they are distinguished from other commands by their generality? How else would you characterise a legal system?

- "Although questions about rights are not theoretically difficult to manage, the full answers to them are nearly always highly complicated. Hence there is always a considerable temptation to embrace the illusion of absolute standards and to pretend that what is needed to answer them is not a detailed study of comparative institutions but some special insight into real, true or absolute right." (T. D. Weldon) Discuss.
- What might "equality before the law" mean?
- Apart from economic considerations, what criteria are used to justify differential distribution of income? Or, What are the three main methods by which income is distributed in the modern society and how can these be used to achieve a just distribution of income?
- What do you understand by a "free society"? Or, What characteristics are common in states described as "western democracies"?
- Discuss the relevance of industrialisation for social welfare policies and services.
- How does rapid population growth complicate the economic and social development of developing countries? What solutions are possible?
- What do you think are the main impediments to the further development of organisation theory? Or, If you were asked to undertake an organisational analysis of a social welfare agency, what parts of organisation theory might be used?
- Give a brief historical account of the population policies of Australian governments and evaluate their effects.
- Discuss the importance of *one* of the following in the development of social security in Britain:-
 - (a) The Poor Law Amendment Act, 1834.
 - (b) The 1905-9 Royal Commission on the Poor Laws.
 - (c) The Beveridge Report
- Trace the historical development in Australia of *one* of the following and discuss possible improvements in the present scheme:-
 - (a) Age pensions.
 - (b) Invalid pensions.
 - (c) Widows pensions
- Trace the historical development in Australia of *one* of the following and discuss possible improvements in the present scheme: -
 - (a) Child endowment.
 - (b) Unemployment benefits.
 - (c) Pharmaceutical benefits.
- Discuss the role of the Stoller Report in the development of Australian mental health facilities.
- Describe briefly the social welfare responsibilities of the Commonwealth and State Governments. Would you change the present allocation of responsibility?
- "Protection against the cost of illness is a vital part of an adequate social

security system.” Discuss in relation to Australia.

- Describe the growth of a social work profession in Australia. What have been the major difficulties?

1966

- What characterises a ‘society’? Or, Discuss, with examples, the main types of social regulation in a modern society.
- What is customary morality? Is there any other sort of morality?
- What makes a legal rule valid?
- Is the doctrine of natural rights an impediment or a boon to social progress?
- “Employers ought to treat men and women employees equally.” Discuss. Or, What do you understand by ‘equality before the law’? How important is it as a social principle?
- How would you go about deciding what is a just income for: (a) a doctor; or (b) a social worker?
- How would you determine what is an appropriate punishment for a traffic offence?
- What are the main characteristics of a ‘free society’?
- How does the state differ from other associations? What should be the democratic state’s main functions in a modern society?
- What has ‘organisation theory’ to offer a person interested in social welfare?
- Discuss the development of Social Administration as an identifiable discipline.
- What does Donnison see as the most important elements in the development of the social services?
- Evaluate the newspaper project in terms of the objectives of Social Theory II.
- Write notes upon the ways in which *three* of the following terms are used: social welfare, social work, social security, social service, social research.
- Discuss the main connections which Wilensky and Lebeaux observe between industrialisation and social welfare policies and programs.
- Choose an important social welfare problem and describe and evaluate policies and provision employed to deal with it.
- Choosing a different social welfare problem from the one chosen in your answer to (the above) question, describe and evaluate policies and provision to deal with it.
- What are the advantages and disadvantages of the various methods used to finance social welfare programs ?
- What are the main co-ordination problems in social welfare services and what can be done about them?

1968

- Discuss the diverse forms of social norms in our kind of society and various ways of classifying them.
- How would you study empirically the existence of social and cultural values ? What are dominant values?
- Why is the concept of ‘authority’ so important in social analysis? Discuss the relationship between ‘power’ and ‘authority’.

- Using illustrations drawn from the newspaper project, discuss what constitutes a moral approach to a question of social policy. What other kinds of approach are there?
- Does it make sense to talk about 'natural rights'? Is it a dangerous or desirable doctrine?
- Can there be such a thing as an egalitarian society? How do you interpret the ideal of 'equality before the law'?
- According to what general criteria should income be distributed in Australia?
- How would you decide what is a just punishment for cruelty to a child?
- What are the classic freedoms and why have they persisted? Or, What is the case for freedom of association and what limitations should be placed on this freedom in a democratic society?
- How does the state differ from other associations? What are its main functions in a democratic society?
- "Our society's social welfare services are characteristically provided through formal organisations." What do you think "organisation theory" has to offer to the person concerned with the effectiveness and efficiency of a particular social welfare agency? Or, Using a social welfare agency as an example, discuss what "organisation theory" has to say about the operation of environmental factors.
- What does the subject "Social Administration" cover? What factors have limited the subject's development in Australia? Or, How does Donnison view the historical development of the social services?
- What are the respective roles of Federal and State Governments in the provision of social welfare services?
- Discuss the claimed advantages and disadvantages of:
 - (a) government action in social welfare; and
 - (b) voluntary action in social welfare.
- What are the main resources necessary for social welfare programs? Discuss the main issues relating to their procurement and utilisation.
- What factors might a social welfare agency consider when it is deciding whether or not to decentralise its activities?
- Discuss the main issues relating to the participation of clients in social welfare services.
- Why is there so much lip-service paid to the need for co-ordination of social welfare activities and yet so little effective action?
- Evaluate the newspaper project in terms of the stated objectives. How would you improve the project?

Essay topics

Below are examples of the essay topics I set in my subject during the period:²⁸

- When and how did the Commonwealth Government's disbursement of funds for social welfare purposes arise? Discuss in detail the current justification of one of the kinds of payments. (3000 words – 2nd term 1961)

²⁸ My work archive does not contain a full set of all of the 14.

- ‘Australian Governments ought to treat aborigines and the rest of the Australian population equally.’ Discuss. (1500 words – 1st term 1963)
- What child welfare policies and services should exist in a developed society? How adequate are the policies and services in New South Wales? (1500 words – 2nd term 1963)
- “If the campaign against poverty is to be successful, it must be seen as a whole, and for this we need an Australian outlook and to satisfy this, it is essential that a national policy be developed.” (Interim Report from the Parliamentary Joint Committee on Social Security, 24th September, 1941) Discuss this in the light of subsequent Australian developments. (2000 words – 2nd term 1964)
- How do women’s rights in New South Wales compare with the rights set down in the Universal Declaration of Human Rights? What are the greatest discrepancies and do they matter? (1500 words – 1st term 1965, 1967)
- What are the various ways in which a society can handle its aged population? How adequate is the way in which the aged in Australia are handled?
- “Parents have a prior right to choose the kind of education that shall be given to their children.” Article 26 (3) – Universal Declaration of Human Rights. To what extent is this right recognised with reference to schooling in New South Wales, and to what extent should it be? (1500 words – 1st term 1966 & 1968)
- Describe briefly the social welfare policies and programs of Commonwealth and State Governments in Australia. Has a federal system of government been a major impediment to the achievement of adequate social welfare standards? (2000 words – 2nd term 1966)
- What is the aboriginal problem in Australia? How adequately is it being handled? (1500 words – 2nd term 1967)

Social Theory II in 1967

When I was on sabbatical leave in 1967, I left a detailed plan for the subject. This was for the many lecturers who would be teaching in the subject and for my colleague Betty Battle who supervised the seminar work and was responsible for the administration of the plan. Betty wrote to me in November, ‘On the whole the course has gone well – and students do seem to feel it has been “a whole”’.

For the third section of the course which concentrated on social welfare problems, policies and provision,²⁹ my plan requested lecturers to use the following common guide in their consideration of their designated social welfare problem:

Social Welfare Problem

- seen as a type of social problem: a social problem is seen as consisting of three elements, a *situation* capable of measurement, a *value* believed to be

29 I indicated that this section was especially influenced by volume XII of the curriculum study of the Council on Social Work Education in the USA – *Social Welfare Policy and Services in Social Work Education*, by Irving Weissman.

threatened in the situation, and a realisation that the situation and the value can and should be reconciled by *group (collective or social) action*.

- seen as phenomena which bring under scrutiny society's institutional provisions for meeting individuals' needs. Who and how many have the problem? How much is there general awareness of it? Who considers it a problem? What is known about it? What are the historic and current attitudes, opinions and ideas about the problem and its causes? What values are threatened by it? Who is responsible for doing something about it? How has responsibility about the problem been brought about – social movements, reformers, political action? What are the implications for the social roles of the person with the problem?

Social Welfare Policy

- seen as a process of social decision-making for social action and as a product of this process. (The discussion in Section 1 of the course on the different forms of social regulation and their justification is relevant here.) What are and have been the policies developed to deal with the problem under discussion? Who had contributed to the policy-making? What have been the roles of governments, political parties, administrators, citizen groups, and professional groups, in the formation of policy? What ideal goals are reflected in the policies? What are the political, economic and legal limitations operating upon these policy decisions? What are the current major policy issues?

Social Welfare Provision

- seen as ways of meeting the problem or of implementing policy, through services, agencies and personnel. What resources of the society are mobilised to meet the problem? How are agencies established to meet the problem organised? Where are they located and who runs them? To whom and in what ways are they accountable? How are they financed? How do they change? How is the work of typical agencies divided and how is it co-ordinated? What use is made of professional, administrative, lay and volunteer workers? What gaps exist in service to the whole community? How effective is the provision in meeting the problem?

I planned for various lecturers to examine in turn the social welfare problems of financial poverty (Tom Kewley); insufficient low-cost housing; the lack of educational opportunity (Dr A. Maclaine); physical ill-health and physical handicap (Lorna Nolan); mental illness and mental retardation (Margaret Grutzner); the absence or dislocation of normal family living (Bill Langshaw); problems associated with ageing (Dr Sidney Sax); and the problem of the legal offender (Frank Hayes). A final group of lectures discussed co-ordination and planning, within an administrative structure and within the community.³⁰

I was one of the three staff representatives on the Board of Studies in Social Work 1962–66, and in 1968. The most significant development for the social

30 I had planned for Mollie Booth to do these, but she was not comfortable lecturing so Michael Horsburgh was invited instead. He had done my subject in 1962, and returned ten years later as the lecturer in social administration.

work course during this period was the final recognition by the University of Sydney of a four-year bachelor's degree in 1966, although it was still called 'social studies' the prevalent British term and in the rest of Australia except for at the UNSW.³¹ (A four-year combined bachelor of arts and diploma of social studies had been operating since 1958, when the disastrous post-graduate diploma in social work had been discontinued because of lack of student numbers.)

A Proposal to Extend the Social Theory Sequence to Three Years

Mary McLelland was the acting head of the department during Tom Brennan's sabbatical year in 1968 in the Department of Social Administration at the University of Hull in England. At my last board meeting in October 1968, she proposed a revision and extension of the social theory sequence. It was proposed that the new sequence would take three years commencing in year two of the bachelor of social studies degree course. The change was necessary because of the amount of material to be covered was impossible to cover in only two years. It would also make social work students at the end of their course more evenly prepared from social science material and would bring into the foreground much social science material that tended to be seen as having only background relevance.

Tom Brennan had written to me from England in July 1968,

I'll be interested in what you and Jenny³² and Mary propose about the Social Theory sequence. In most places, most of the stuff which we are trying to cover in the "two-ninths" space in the course is expanded into two full years work – still not done very well because of the lack of any good practical or professional link between the descriptive stuff and what the student finds when he goes to work.³³

In an earlier letter, Tom had mentioned that only about 20 of the 80 students with whom he had contact in the Hull department were intending social workers, and 18 of these were 'cadets' to the Home Office.

I have taken over a rather demoralised group of 15 students and am trying to organise them into doing an Area Study and Social Action project on two 'bits' of Hull; a central 'decanting' area and a poorish reception area in a housing estate. ... The thing I notice about your area here is that the staff are interested in all aspects of application ... But in spite of this interest they can not really get within miles of the practice or of the problem. No one will let them examine documents. ... We can learn a lot from them but they would thrive in our climate!³⁴

The proposed extension to the social theory sequence at the University of Sydney consisted of six sections. Social Theory I would remain much the same, covering section A (Society; Structure and Process) and section B (The

31 See Horsburgh, *Doing Good Well*, p. 20.

32 Jenny Paolini (Readford) was practical work tutor in Social Theory 1, 1967–70.

33 Letter, T. Brennan to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 8/7/68.

34 Letter, T. Brennan to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 1/3/68.

Analysis of Social Problems). Social Theory II would now consist of section C (Social Regulation in the Welfare State) and section D (The Characteristics and Dimensions of Social Welfare Institutions). Section E (Organisational Analysis of Social Welfare Institutions) and section F (Social Welfare Sub-systems) would constitute Social Theory III. The objectives of the social theory sequence were to develop the student's understanding of social problems in western industrial society and to equip him to participate in action concerned with policy and provision designed to meet these problems. The six logically sequential sections were seen as instrumental to the achievement of these objectives.

Although I was leaving the University of Sydney department, this proposed extension of the social theory/social policy sequence was a substantial local recognition of the claims of this subject area for about a doubling of the curriculum space that I had available, after the grounding provided by Tom Brennan's Social Theory I. My very modest pioneering effort in social policy teaching made me painfully aware of the need to develop the subject as a discipline in its own right – as had been achieved in Britain since the Second World War under the leadership of people like Richard Titmuss, David Donnison, David Marsh, and many others. Social policy was to remain my main teaching responsibility for the rest of my teaching life, but as will be recounted, I also had the opportunity to influence its development by others – in another school of social work, and in a national social policy research centre, both at the University of New South Wales.

OTHER TEACHING AT THE UNIVERSITY OF SYDNEY

In the third term of 1963, in the absence overseas of Tom Brennan, I supervised three of the five groups of Social Theory I students studying selected social problems.

In 1963 and 1964, I gave lectures on educational policy as a part of social policy to Education 11 students. I discussed the development and nature of social policy, and examined the extent to which social considerations were explicitly considered in decisions on educational policy. Various factors like location, race, sex, the occupation and income of parents, religion, and talents were reviewed in an extended discussion of the social justice principle of educational opportunity for everyone in a democratic society. Attention was drawn to the relevant articles in the Universal Declaration of Human Rights.³⁵ In 1965, at the invitation of Associate Professor Ron Gates, I discussed the formation of social values with a final honours seminar group in economics.

During 1965, I had responsibility for the department's first social work student who was specialising in social welfare administration – Father John Davoren – in preparation for senior administrative responsibilities in the Catholic welfare system.³⁶ Social welfare administration was beginning to be

³⁵ These lectures are in my work archive.

³⁶ Later he was appointed director of the Catholic Welfare Bureau (renamed Centacare) in Sydney, and then secretary of the Australian Catholic Social Welfare Commission.

recognised in the USA as a social work method in its own right, along with social casework, social group work, and community work. To increase its social welfare effectiveness, the profession needed to educate and train people for administrative responsibilities in organisations that claimed to have social welfare purposes. In Australia, some qualified social workers were primarily administrators or managers, but they were mainly employed in social work administration i.e. administering services provided by qualified social workers mainly engaged in social casework. Schools of social work had not yet included administration as an integral part of social work practice. When social workers were engaged in administrative roles, they had to learn on the job or turn to management courses in public administration or business for assistance. As I have explained, in being called 'social administration', my lectureship followed the British usage of the term. My subject was not a practice subject, however relevant its knowledge might be for successful practice.

I was aware that I was not professionally qualified to teach social welfare administrative practice. Nevertheless, I welcomed this teaching opportunity with John Davoren. He was a good student with a developing awareness of the importance of social welfare administration. I provided tutorial teaching for him and he produced two 30-page reports. One was 'An Administrative Study of Royal Alexandra Hospital for Children, Sydney', which I supervised. The other was a report of his practical work placement for two days a week from April to September at the North Ryde Psychiatric Centre under the supervision of the senior social worker Millie Mills. He reported to me on those facets of the hospital administration with which he had contact, considering both structure and functioning.

In 1966, I participated in the executive development program at the BHP Steelworks in Newcastle, organised by the Adult Education Department of the University of Sydney.

In the third term of 1968, in the absence overseas of Tom Brennan, I supervised Social Theory 1 seminar groups studying selected social problems, and was also responsible for nine lectures on social control and social change. In these lectures, we examined in turn, the concept 'social change'; the classical theories of people like Comte, Spencer, Marx, Spengler, Toynbee, Weber and Töennies; the subsequent theoretical shift to a static functionalism; the reaction to a dynamic view which saw a society as a tension-management system; the tensions which produced change; and finally, the process of modernisation.³⁷

Also in the director's absence in 1968, I had a major responsibility for the Social Studies honours work, but the numbers were small. An honours degree was introduced in 1967. It required students to complete a special honours course in years three and four additional to the requirements for the pass degree, and submission of a thesis of not more than 10,000 words. In 1968, I was directly responsible for the sociology of social problems honours seminar

37 The relevant literature was vast, but I found the book Wilbert E. Moore, *Social Change*, Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey, 1963, particularly helpful.

in the first term of year three.³⁸ At six two-hour seminars we discussed nine student papers on the following topics:

- The concept of social problem – definition, criteria, objectivity
- What are the social problems of our society?
- How are social problems studied? – variety of theoretical approaches
- Problems of deviance
- Problems of social organisation
- Problems of conflicting values

MY DEPARTMENTAL COLLEAGUES

My colleagues during my time in the Department of Social work at the University of Sydney were: Tom Brennan (the director 1959–78, professor of social administration 1969–81), Norma Parker (temporary assistant director 1941, acting director 1945–46, '49-'54, senior lecturer 1949, supervisor of professional training 1956–66), Mary McLelland (senior research fellow 1953, lecturer 1955, senior lecturer 1964, supervisor of professional training 1967–75), Betty Battle (part-time lecturer 1952, full-time 1954, supervisor of group work 1958–68), Katherine Ogilvie (lecturer in medical social work 1955–64), Margaret Grutzner (part-time lecturer in psychiatric case work 1960–72, full-time '73-'75), Marjorie (Mollie) Booth (practical work tutor 1952–73), Hilda Matsdorf (practical work tutor 1959–70), Lorna Nolan (practical work tutor 1964, lecturer 1965, senior lecturer 1976–79), Jennifer Paolini (practical work tutor 1967–70), and Miriam Prince (practical work tutor 1966–67, temporary lecturer 1968–69).³⁹ In the course of my research for my doctorate, I already had the opportunity to begin to get to know and appreciate them, both as people and as professional colleagues, and I was not an unknown newcomer. Trish and I felt very welcome and were soon well integrated into the group socially, and the same happened professionally.

My colleagues lived in diverse locations. Tom and Hazel Brennan with their three boys had a modest brick home near the Hunters Hill ferry. Nearby in Hunters Hill was Norma Parker, and she became a very good friend of the family. Norma took a great interest in the Brennan boys and had an especially close relationship with Paul the eldest, who later became a journalist. Tom had a sailing boat moored near his home and loved exploring the far reaches of Sydney harbour. Our visits to their home were very lively, happy occasions. Tom was full of anecdotes. A son of a Yorkshire miner, he had gone to Pigou at Cambridge to find out how to get entry into the university. After completing his degree there, he had a distinguished career in urban sociology, including research in the notorious Gorbels area of Glasgow. Tom saw the social lack of a staff club at the University of Sydney and took a leading role in rectifying

38 Suggested references included works by Howard S. Becker, Paul B. Horton and Gerald R. Leslie, Leslie T. Wilkins, and Emile Durkheim.

39 See 'Staff of the Social Work Program 1940–2010', an appendix in Michael Horsburgh, *Doing Good Well, 1940–2010*, pp. 50–55. The years provided are the years of appearance in the University Calendar, and therefore may not be accurate.

this. His wife Hazel was a warm-hearted, talkative person. She became widely-known at one stage when she organised getting rice to the starving people of Gombok in Indonesia.

At Norma Parker's house, we got to know and appreciate Clarence ('Monty') Brown, whom she had married in 1957. He was on the staff of the Taxation Department. During the war he served in the 8th division, and was a prisoner of war on the notorious Burma Railroad after the fall of Singapore in 1942. He died in 1964. A feature of Norma's home was her books and the incredible number of cats she fed. Seemingly the word had spread amongst the cats of Hunters Hill and perhaps beyond that she was a soft touch.

Mary McLelland lived in a spacious downstairs apartment in a block of apartments in Kirribilli, which was adjacent to the north end of the Harbour Bridge. Not far away was her mother Dr McLelland, who lived in a most attractive apartment which looked out directly on a section of the harbour, with ferries and yachts quite close. (Mary moved into this later, after her mother's death.) Like Mary, Dr McLelland was an interesting, intelligent, cultured person, and we very much enjoyed their company. Betty Battle also lived in an apartment near the bridge – at Lavendar Bay on the western side of the bridge. Lorna Nolan, who joined the staff as a tutor a year before she was appointed to Kate Ogilvie's lectureship position after Kate's retirement, also lived near the bridge – at North Sydney.

Kate Ogilvie lived in a substantial house at Darling Point, which had been divided into two halves. Joan Lupton lived in the other half, and they shared the beach house at Bungen which we had already enjoyed before we came to live in Sydney. They were both widely read, interesting people.

Mollie Booth was a practical work tutor who played a significant welding role in the department. Her office was located in the Mackie building at the elbow of the corridor leading to the lecture room and her door was always open, both literally and metaphorically. She played a key role in the informal network of the department and 'gave me the gen' on a wide range of matters. Her husband was Fred Esch, a journalist, who took a considerable interest in philosophical matters. At one stage, he was court reporter for a case in which he believed there had been a serious miscarriage of justice. He persuaded us, and many others, that he was most likely right, and we joined in a successful campaign to get a re-trial. Mollie and Fred lived at 'Fort Angophora' in an elevated location on Collaroy Plateau. Piped classical music used to greet us as we climbed to get access to their home. Our children thought it was a great place to visit.

Although she was only part-time, I had the chance to get to know Margaret Grutzner quite well. She was having difficulty learning to drive in her middle-age, so I suggested that in my car we could go driving on nearby Parramatta Road for some weeks at lunchtime until she had sufficient confidence for her driving test. We all rejoiced when she passed. Margaret came from Victoria where her father had been a GP in Shepparton. She had scored one of the Red Cross scholarships which had enabled her to study psychiatric social work in England. She was a reliable, unflappable person, but I can still recall her agitation after she had just read a book that claimed that mental illness was a

myth. We had an extended discussion on the subject.

Part of the Psychology Department was also located in the Mackie Building and members of the two departments had morning and afternoon tea together. I remember in particular, apart from Jack Lyle with whom I shared car lifts, Gordon Hammer, Ken Gray and George Singer. I shared Gordon's fondness for cricket and we once played together in a cricket match, which also featured Professor Connell from education. Ken Gray was later appointed as a counsellor at Macquarie University. He and his wife Jane became our friends, partly through our mutual friendship with Beth Ward. I linked up with George Singer many years later when he was at La Trobe University.

Usually at lunchtime, most of the members of our small staff had our sandwiches in Norma Parker's room. This proved especially helpful for me when I was asked to appear before a panel to discuss social work in the ABC television program 'Spotlight' in August 1963. It was at the time of the Eighth National Conference of the AASW, held in Melbourne. My colleagues put me through my paces at our lunches in the week before the conference, preparing me for possible questions I might be asked by the panel (Peter Wilkes, chairman, Betty Archdale, and the Rev. Peter Newall). I received a lot of positive comment on the program both from my colleagues at the conference, and from others including Peter Westcott the director of the Victorian art gallery where one of the conference functions was held. There was no question that I had enjoyed the experience and even wondered, but only momentarily, what it would be like working in the media long-term.

Kate Ogilvie's Retirement from the Department

As I have indicated, one of the professional attractions of coming to Sydney was the opportunity to be with both Norma Parker and Kate Ogilvie, as a work colleague. When Kate retired from the department at the end of 1964, nine of her professional colleagues were invited to contribute to a monograph on Kate and her work. Each contributor was asked to write on the aspect and period of her work with which they were most familiar. My contribution was relatively brief, but none-the-less deeply considered:

In the late 1950's in the course of preparing a history of professional social work in this country, I had many long and fruitful discussions with Miss Ogilvie. More recently I have come to know her as a fellow teacher and friend. With her strong interest in the community and broader aspects of social work, she welcomed the establishment of a lectureship in social administration. Since my own appointment to that post, many is the vigorous and useful argument which I have had with her. For people not close to her or for the more timid spirits Miss Ogilvie can be a rather forbidding figure. When she does battle she does it with a gusto and a tenacity which only strong spirits can withstand. It would be false to say that personal relationships with her are all sweetness and light, for she has considerable capacity to stir the darker emotions, yet genuine affection and respect so often endure encounters with her that one suspects that she sometimes deliberately works through conflict and that this comes to be accepted on both sides. Her obvious warmth and compassion for people in trouble, and at times, her utter candour, are

disarming and endearing qualities appreciated by her colleagues and her friends.

Miss Ogilvie values conceptual thinking and research; she recognises medicine as a well-developed and soundly-based profession; and recognises the need for a broad and varied educational background for social workers. She has confidence in the ability of the good quality amateur. Miss Ogilvie herself is widely-read, and the notion of the social worker leading a circumscribed blinkered existence, concerned only with applying learned techniques is alien to her conception of a professional person.⁴⁰

Kate subsequently wrote to me:

Having had 'a good read' of my delightful book, as a whole, I am now savouring each contribution for itself.

Yours is a joy to me and it is one which my friends enjoy like anything.

Thanks for the warm and generous things you say, dear John; and also just as much, for your "utter candour", which, like Pepsi Cola hits the spot and is therefore utterly acceptable – also it is great fun and very well written.

Perhaps the best thing of all for me, however, is that somehow you convey that you have enjoyed our working together, including our "encounters" almost as much as I have. Perhaps you have realised what interest and satisfaction, and reassurance, I have derived from knowing that you are involved in the rather strenuous enterprise in which we are all engaged.

My hope is that there will be times and places in which we can continue, at least informally, to practice the gentle (?) art of disputation.

In any event I look forward to seeing you and Trish in my home for a meal and good yarn.⁴¹

That monograph on Katharine Ogilvie was only 32 pages and did not pretend to provide a complete account of her 35 years in social work.⁴² I felt privileged when I was asked in 2005, to prepare an entry on Kate for the *Australian Dictionary of Biography*. Sadly, a full-scale biography is still to be written.

Norma Parker

In 1962–63, Norma Parker was away on study leave. She examined social work developments in Australia, then in Britain (visiting the National Institute of Social Work), and in the USA, particularly in major centres in New York and California.

From London, in May 1963, Norma wrote to me reporting that things were moving in the social work field there, but it was still not easy to get a picture of the whole. The major thing that was happening was the attempt to make a strong impact on the local authorities who had responsibility for so much of their social work. They were seconding people on full salary to the

40 *Katharine Ogilvie: Social Work Educator, an Appreciation by Her Colleagues*, Department of Social Work, University of Sydney, (undated), p. 27.

41 Letter, Kate Ogilvie to John Lawrence, 24/1/65.

42 See Tom Brennan's Foreword.

administrative course run by the Institute of Social Work (for high-grade administrators) and to the Younghusband courses in technical colleges – also occasionally, she understood, to a university course. At the moment the professional courses were taking second place. It was all too complicated to tell me on paper, but she would share it with me when she returned. People were generally being helpful, and while the great city of London was a considerable distraction, nevertheless she was picking up some things of value to us from the social work point of view.⁴³

Norma Parker's opening paper on 'Essentials for Knowledge for Social Work Practice', at the Melbourne AASW conference in August 1963, was in part a product of her study leave. In 1963, she was again acting director of our department when Tom Brennan was on study leave. In 1965, she was invited by the vice-chancellor of the University of NSW, Sir Phillip Baxter, and the dean of the Faculty of arts, Morven Brown, to a three-year appointment as associate professor and head of Department of Social Work in the School of Sociology, from February 1966. Morven Brown's death in October 1965 came as a great shock to her. When Norma left us, Mary McLelland was her well-respected successor as supervisor of professional training in the department, and Norma was happy about the appointment, although she told me many years later that she and Mary were often in disagreement about the appropriate course of action in particular social work cases. Tom Brennan had worked particularly well with Norma and regretted that she now headed what would inevitably be a course that would compete with Sydney University for social work students.

When Norma retired from the University of NSW in February, 1969, I edited and compiled *Norma Parker's Record of Service* – for the AASW, and the two Sydney-based schools of social work with which she had been associated (the University of Sydney and the UNSW). Norma had given me access to her cupboards of papers at her home in Church Point where she now lived, and had helped me compile an 11-page statement of her career. The book was an attempt to place on public record the main features of her contribution to Australian social work. I did not attempt to evaluate that contribution, remarkable though it had been. The brief statement of significant items in her career was followed by 69 items which demonstrated her in action in the wide variety of roles she performed. Almost all of these were written by Norma herself. The items were roughly arranged in chronological sequence under general headings and were to be read within the framework of the career statement. I anticipated that an evaluation of her career would be substantially assisted by this material. This has not yet occurred in the form of a serious biography, but I was very pleased when my compilation was used as key evidence to support Norma being awarded an honorary doctorate by the University of Sydney in the 1986.

A Significant Australian Publication

Tom Brennan and Norma Parker edited a significant Australian social work publication, *The Foundations of Social Casework* (Ian Novak, Sydney), which was

⁴³ Letter, Mrs N. Brown to John Lawrence, 17/5/63.

published in 1966. The editors and the other nine authors were all engaged in social work education⁴⁴ and most of them were as well experienced social work practitioners⁴⁵. The book was an integrated attempt to introduce social work students to basic theoretical knowledge on which the method of social casework rested. It brought together into the one framework those elements of psychology, sociology and biology which social workers needed to call upon if they were to understand the people who needed help and the problem situations with which they had to deal. It gave an account of social casework in society, and of the area of its social concern, which was in social functioning of human beings. This was seen as the product of interaction between the individual and his or her environment. Social casework was described as the first and major distinctive helping method which the professional group of social workers had developed within the social welfare institution of modern industrial society. The other two methods were social group work and community organisation. The name of each conveyed the unit with which each method worked. It was asserted that while there were differences in the bodies of knowledge needed for use of the three social work methods, there was a common core.

The book acknowledged that only a part of the knowledge social caseworkers needed was covered; 'no attention has been given, to give one example, to detailed knowledge of social services and their organisation'. The opening chapter did discuss the scope of social welfare, the nature and development of social welfare, and social welfare from a sociological point of view, before examining the nature of social work as a professional activity. Social welfare organisation had come to have a high degree of complexity, with social agencies ranging in size from small local organisations to large national bodies with international affiliations, and in functions from very limited to multiple. They were inter-related by machinery which made for co-ordination and co-operation and which existed on a number of levels, local, state, national and supra-national. The number of international bodies, both voluntary and inter-governmental, in the social welfare fields was already high and was expanding. Social welfare organisation had demonstrated clearly the processes of division of labour and specialisation, and had resulted in the emergence of the social work profession and other specialist groups. The chapter on social institutions discussed these processes.

The importance of social welfare as a major element in social organisation had not stimulated sociologists to much expression of interest in it. Reference was, however, made to Titmuss's discussion of 'states of dependency', both 'natural' and 'man-made,' in industrialised societies; to a report on British social services by an American social work team, which highlighted differences between social welfare development in Britain and the United States; to Dora Peyser's exploration of the structure and form of assistance in different types of

44 B. Battle, M. McLelland, Lorna Nolan, and M. J. Sainsbury, at the University of Sydney, E. R. Chamberlain, A. E. Hartshorn, H. M. Smith, and D. W. G. Timms at the University of Queensland, and J. H. Robb at Victoria University of Wellington in New Zealand.

45 Battle, McLelland, Nolan, Chamberlain, Hartshorn and Smith were experienced social work practitioners, as well as Norma Parker.

society with all humans having a tendency to help their fellows; to Wilensky and Lebeaux's observation of two conceptions of social welfare dominant in the United States, the residual and the institutional; and to the three stages in the development of social welfare delineated by the Yugoslav scholar Eugene Pusic, with the third stage coinciding roughly with a more active and positive approach of the state to problems of general welfare.

The discussion of the development and nature of social welfare insisted on the importance of the range of values it embodied and reflected. The social welfare institution in our society represented a compromise, a balance struck between all the differing values involved. Social work, like any other professional activity was based on a system of values and these were more clearly articulated than those for the social welfare institution. Werner Boehm had spelled these out as follows:

1. Each person has the right to self-fulfilment, deriving from his inherent capacity and thrust toward that goal.
2. Each person has the obligation, as a member of society, to seek ways of self-fulfilment that contribute to the common good.
3. Society has the obligation to facilitate the self-fulfilment of the individual and the right to enrichment through the contributions of individual members.
4. Each person requires for the harmonious development of his powers socially provided and socially safeguarded opportunities for satisfying his basic needs in the physical, psychological, economic, cultural, aesthetic, and spiritual realms.
5. As society becomes more complex and interdependent, increasingly specialist social organisation is required to facilitate the individual's efforts at self-realisation. Although conflicts between individuals and society can never be entirely absent, social organisation should be such as to reduce them to a minimum. A conception of the individual and society as interdependent leads to the view that just as it is the responsibility of society to provide appropriate social resources, it is the right of the individual to promote change in social resources which do not serve his need-meeting efforts. Concomitantly, it is the individual's obligation to satisfy his individual needs as much as possible in ways that contribute to the enrichment of society.
6. To permit both self-realisation and contribution to society by the individual, social organisation must make available socially sanctioned and socially provided devices for needs satisfaction as wide in range, variety and quality as the general welfare allows.⁴⁶

Conflict could occur when these values clashed with those of society as a whole which made their impact on the social welfare institution and on social work.

The first part of the book dealt with individuals – their constitutional endowment, development and functioning. The second part was concerned with the social environment – the structure of society, social institutions, social

⁴⁶ W. Boehm, 'The Nature of Social Work', *Social Work*, vol. 3, no. 2, April 1958.

stratification, status and role, small group theory, and the particular role of the family in human living and the problems accompanying social change.

The planning and writing of this book was a major achievement. I regretted that it had not tackled the much broader task of a book on the foundations of social work practice. Norma's paper at the 1963 conference had had that breadth of scope. But realistically, the book reflected the continuing historical dominance of the social casework method in Australian social work, and the emerging methods of social group work, community organisation, and social work and social welfare administration were not yet sufficiently developed to provide a balanced view of each of the methods, and the common and different knowledge bases they required. Certainly, writing on Australian social welfare organisation was almost non-existent, making my pioneering teaching responsibilities in social policy and its administration extremely difficult. The social work value base articulated by Werner Boehm in the United States clearly indicated the significance of having members of the profession working with the broader structures of society.⁴⁷

THE PROFESSIONAL ASSOCIATION

When I went to Sydney to live, I became an active member of the professional social work association, the Australian Association of Social Workers. For a variety of reasons (societal, group and personal), I placed great store on the need to develop an effective professional association for qualified social workers.

In 1961, I prepared a report on the registration of the AASW with the Commonwealth Conciliation and Arbitration Commission – for study in the NSW branch and referral to federal council. In 1962, I prepared for an ad hoc branch committee on personnel practices a statement on the content and status of the present social work course at the university, which was later circulated to the federal and state public service boards, and other interested organisations.

1962–66, I was a member of the committee of management of the NSW branch of the AASW, and 1964–66 was one of its two delegates to federal council. The branch presidents were Millie Mills (1961) and Claire Bunday (1962–64); Millie served with me as a federal delegate 1964/65, and Claire 1965/66. Both were already friends; they were able impressive people. The president of the AASW at the time was Elery Hamilton-Smith, whom I knew from social work student days in Adelaide. In late February 1966, he stayed a couple of nights with us at our home and was in very good form. He was likely to be leaving youth work in Victoria to take up a most interesting job with the South Pacific Commission, provided his speaking of French was fluent enough.

47 Werner Boehm was the general editor for the Council on Social Work Education curriculum study in North America in 1959. Later, I got to know him well – at international social work meetings and when he invited me to spend some of my sabbatical year in 1983 at Rutgers University where he was dean of the School of Social Work.

The Membership Committee of the Branch

In 1961, I joined the branch's membership committee, which encouraged social workers to join the association and recruited people to the profession. In 1964, when I chaired the committee, we had discussions with equivalent committees in other branches, particularly on the nature and use of a recruitment kit. The up-to-date kit, which we had started to develop in 1961, was used by branch members in careers night programs at schools, on careers day at the University of Sydney, and at a careers exhibition in Newcastle. Federal council approved our recommendation that an Australian recruiting film be made to replace the American one in use. Our committee also was involved in encouraging members to join the other association committees.⁴⁸ Many social workers were hard-pressed by the demands not only of their work, but of their involvement in other community bodies often associated with their work. Peter Einspinner was on the membership committee with me during this period, and he and I had especial responsibility in the recruitment of males. By the end of 1967, the membership of the New South Wales branch had climbed from 227 to 302, but with only 27 males it remained a largely female organisation. Only 10 male social workers presented papers to the meetings of the branch during the period 1962–69 – Bill Langshaw (4), John Lawrence (3), Bill Matsdorf (2), Peter Tankard (2), Frank Hayes (2), Elery Hamilton-Smith, Owen Giles, Bill Payne, Claude Loquet, and John Russell.

In May 1962, the University of Sydney Department of Social Work held a seminar on the employment and recruitment of social workers. It was attended by representatives of the major employing bodies of social workers. For the seminar, I prepared a ten –page statement on considerations for increasing the number and effective deployment of qualified social workers in New South Wales. It was divided into five sections:

- trends in Australian social work education
- factors affecting the supply of social work students and the output of the courses
- the employment of qualified social workers in this state
- their professional organisation
- ways in which the employment demand for qualified social workers might be met

In the final section, I suggested three ways to increase numbers coming into the course, three ways to minimise student wastage, and three ways to minimise professional wastage.⁴⁹

Federal Council

In September 1964, federal council moved to Melbourne after six years in

48 The Australian Association of Social Workers, New South Wales Branch, *33rd Annual Report and Financial Statement 1964*, pp. 1–2.

49 'Statement Prepared for a Seminar at the Department of Social Work, Sydney University, 24th May, 1962'.

Sydney. The council's structure was 7 office bearers (president, 4 vice-presidents, honorary secretary and honorary treasurer), and two delegates from each State. Council meetings were held twice yearly over two days (at weekends). The president, honorary secretary, honorary treasurer and a local vice-president met at least monthly.

Delegates and the committee of management of each State received minutes of meetings of both the office-bearers and the council. The delegates were elected by their respective branches at intervals of four years or when a vacancy occurred.

I served as a NSW delegate on federal council for two years from 1964. It gave me valuable experience operating at a national level and trying to communicate effectively with the local branch members about matters of national concern. We had the benefit of a general report of the activities of federal council, covering the previous six years in Sydney, but current office-bearers were too pressed to produce periodic general reports and were not required to do so by the federal constitution. From 1963 in New South Wales, the branch delegates produced a joint report on federal council in the branch's annual report. Matters dealt with during my period on the council included:

- a final decision on a code of professional ethics
- establishing an accreditation committee to advise federal council on standards of schools of social work both local and overseas
- consideration of new social work courses in Western Australia, South Australia, and New South Wales
- a policy statement on the association's role in social action, to be reviewed in two years⁵⁰
- a full revision of Journal policy acting on a report by a specially appointed committee
- the 9th national conference, Adelaide, 23–27 August 1965
- the introduction of a federal council newsletter, August 1965
- greater support to the International Federation of Social Workers (IFSW)
- consideration of future affiliation with the Australian Council of Salaried and Professional Associations and the Council of Professional Associations

Our weekend meetings in Melbourne brought me tantalisingly close to football games I was unable to attend, but I could at least monitor by radio during tea breaks progress in the nearby games!

PROFESSIONAL PAPERS AND ARTICLES

An AASW Conference Plenary Session Paper on the Morality of Social Work

The 7th national conference of the AASW, held in Sydney in August 1961, had as its theme 'The Association and Social Work'. My opening plenary

⁵⁰ The original work on this done by some office bearers and me.

session paper on 'The function of professional social work in Australian social administration', argued that its function was the furthering of 'genuine' morality. I noted the striking similarity between recent moral theory and social work theory, and suggested this was no coincidence. Each had been strongly influenced by the western, liberal, democratic tradition. 'Genuine' morality, as distinct from conventional or authoritarian morality, had developed historically with individualism, and so had social work. I discussed the relevant criteria in relation to social work and its practice in Australia. I argued that social workers in Australia added to the number of people who gave genuine moral consideration to their problems. They did this by acting as moral catalysts with their clients and with those forming and administering social policy, and by tending to apply moral criteria when they themselves were called upon to make decisions affecting other people.

Social workers, in so far as they are furthering 'genuine' morality as understood within our type of society, which stresses the maximum freedom for the individual, and the maximum rational basis for decisions, could not have a sounder justification for their work. Apart from appeals to authority, and then one can question the authority, there is no higher justification than moral justification.

I warned, however, that social workers should not be smugly righteous about their role.

It is clear in this country we have a long way to go before the 'is' and the 'ought' coincide in social administration, and to some extent this is due to the relatively under-developed state of Australian social work. In addition, even when the profession is well established in all its fields and social policy makers are making just decisions, righteousness, as distinct from rightness, needs to be guarded against for in it are the seeds of moral decay.⁵¹

At the 9th AASW national conference in 1965, I provided a prepared 10-minute comment on the opening paper on 'Social Norms and Social Change' by a social psychologist George Sharman. I made a few additional general observations on the topic, emphasising the complicated normative nature of modern society.

Following prescribed behavioural patterns was a pervasive characteristic of man.

In justifying an action within a social group a person may refer to a norm, or rule, or standard of behaviour, or particularly if this is not accepted he may go beyond this to reasons for the rule.

When Mr Sharman says he makes up his own mind about matters which concern his relationships to others I suspect that he does not do this in an arbitrary fashion, and that for a person who knows him and his values he is to some extent predictable. He has, however, highlighted an important form of social regulation, that is, individual morality. This is characterized by an individual's critical rejection

51 R. J. Lawrence, 'The Function of Professional Social Work in Australian Social Administration', *Proceedings of the 7th National Conference of the Australian Association of Social Workers*, Sydney, August, 1961. pp. 3-10.

or acceptance of custom or law. He decides what is the right thing to do with reference not to authority but to relevant arguments, and there are norms operating which govern what are seen to be relevant arguments in a moral discussion. I personally think that the key to an understanding of justifiable social regulation and control lies in a close examination of this kind of social norm.

It is true that in periods of rapid social change existing social norms can become dysfunctional, that is in changed circumstances they lose their point and in fact can cause social dislocation and distress. This does not, however, negate the need for social regulation, rather it emphasizes the extent to which such regulation needs to be made explicit and needs to be adapted to current circumstances and values. The institutional devices of political democracy may be seen as institutionalised methods for handling change and inevitable conflict. ...

The so-called 'free' societies are in fact highly regulated societies – they have to be for them to fulfil the recognized needs of their citizens. Much of the regulation is governmental, either to maintain law and order, and to coordinate various community activities, or to undertake directly a wide variety of important functions like the provision of transport services. Much of the regulation is, however, within the specialised non-governmental organisations inside which man in an industrial, urbanised society leads a great part of his life. And any study which ignores informal as against formal rules only tells part of the story. The traditional social philosophy discussion of concepts like 'justice', 'equality', 'freedom', 'democracy', 'rights', and 'authority' is now significantly shifting its focus away from the State to the many specialised organisations and associations within the complex society.

After supporting the utility of status and role theory for examining contemporary society, I mentioned the seven attributes of social norms specified by Robert Merton – the extent to which a norm was binding, the saliency or intensity with which the norm was held, the kind of organisation used to enforce conformity, the type of sanction used to induce conformity, whether it is primarily instrumental or primarily moral, the type of conformity required, the leeway permitted before the norm is considered violated. Social norms were not all of a piece, especially in our kind of society.⁵²

Papers in the Professional Journal

Local Welfare Organisation

In 1962, I gave a paper to the medical social work group of the branch on implications for the social work profession of possible local welfare services. It pointed to the current confusion about what services were appropriately included under 'health' and what under 'welfare'. Co-ordination between organised social welfare services needed someone administering it who was familiar with the community's social welfare arrangements and also knew how to achieve the maximum co-ordination in social welfare services. District

⁵² The conference proceedings did not publish any of the prepared commentaries on the main papers. My contribution is in my work archives in typescript form. The theme of the conference was 'People are Different' (Social Work and Social Norms).

community councils, as in the United States, could be initiated. My paper appeared in the *AJSW*, along with the group's discussion on local welfare services.⁵³

The Future Development of the Profession

My paper in *The Australian Journal of Social Work* (AJSW) at the end of 1962,⁵⁴ was based on the final chapter of my doctoral thesis on the early history of the profession. It examined the future role and development of social work in Australia. I argued that professional social work needed to be seen in both historical and sociological perspective. Six interrelated trends were evident – the movement from a female to a mixed profession, from sub-graduate to graduate professional education, from social casework to a variety of social work methods, from limited availability of social work services to wide availability, from disorganisation to organisation, and finally from limited numbers to substantial numbers. (In the event, the first of these 'trends' proved to be largely illusory.)

A Paper on the Need for a Critical Tradition in Social Work

In February 1963, I presented a paper 'Has Australian Social Work a Critical Tradition?' to the annual meeting of the New South Wales branch of the AASW. It was subsequently published in *The Australian Journal of Social Work*⁵⁵, and was jointly awarded the first Wilga Fleming Memorial annual prize for the best piece of writing in the Journal. Its argument was that the concept of 'a critical tradition' was especially important to think about in relation to social work. The concept entailed a tradition of judgement.

In our society if a judgement about people and the society within which we live is to be accepted as being fair and valid, it must be the outcome of a process of reasoning; it must in other words be the result of intellectual activity, and not only this, but it must be the result of intellectual activity which follows certain rules. We do not respect a judgement if it is based upon false or unsubstantiated 'facts', if it is based upon what we consider as a strange interpretation of the facts, if we consider only some of the relevant facts have been taken into account, if we think the judge is merely thinking in terms of his⁵⁶ own interests, or if he is only reflecting his own personal feelings. And it is in the nature of a judgement that we may respect the judgement, that is we may consider that all the right conditions have been fulfilled for the judgement to be a fair one, and yet may disagree with it. Knowledge and intellectual capacity and integrity will tend towards similar though rarely uniform judgements. They will rarely be uniform, because no two people's values are identical.

... the so-called "learned professions" ... are groups of people who through higher education have had a large degree of intellectual training, who emphasise ethical

53 Volume XV, number 1, June 1962.

54 Volume XV, number 2, December 1962, pp. 1–7,

55 *The Australian Journal of Social Work*, 17, 2, 1964.

56 The sexist convention of the time was to use the male gender even when both genders were obviously involved.

standards of professional judgement which conform closely with the standards of fair criticism I have mentioned, and who have a specialised knowledge of a particular aspect of the society. Although a professional judgement is an individual's judgement, it is very much the result of collective enterprise and achievement. Ideally, an able conscientious member of a learned profession has had conveyed to him the accumulated wisdom of his professional predecessors, and also the university values of free inquiry and intellectual integrity which allow him to assess and add to the profession's collective store of knowledge. In short, he belongs to a group with a critical tradition. ...

Social work education is rightfully in the hands of the universities because the issues in which social workers are involved are seen to be complex, because social welfare has become big business and important business, and because professional independence is peculiarly difficult to achieve and maintain amongst people working for social agencies. Our society needs as part of its specialised critical equipment, a social work profession with a critical tradition. It needs people who are well informed about the origins and current justifications for our social welfare services and who can be relied upon to pass independent judgement on them: and social workers are the obvious group to do this. In addition, of course, social workers should be giving critical appraisal to the effectiveness of their own immediate work.

After noting that Jeanne MacKenzie had made observations suggesting the general critical tradition of our society might not be very strong,⁵⁷ I turned to some of the factors which had directly limited critical thinking in Australian social work – factors in their initial education, in their employment situation, and in their collective existence in their professional association. The paper then observed:

In Australian social work circles there is a fair amount of informal verbal criticism. Some of it is excellent fair criticism which could well be thrown into the public, or at least general professional arena for broader consideration. Some of the informal verbal criticism, because it is not well-informed, it tends to concentrate on personalities rather than their work, and it is more an expression of social workers' feelings than the outcome of a reasoning process. ... A certain amount of this kind of criticism is inevitable in such emotionally-charged work as social work. Being able to let off steam with one's professional colleagues is important. But this should be recognised for what it is; it is no substitute for fair criticism. ...

In the historical development of professional social work in this country, there have been some important blockings to the development which the profession has tended to explain away in terms of the personalities of a number of key people. At best this surely is only part of the story. Explanations of human achievement merely in terms of inter-personal relations are not sufficient; and it is odd for a group who have learnt about social institutions to think they are.

... Because Australian social workers are usually working with individuals' problems and the clients are often people who are either inadequately cared for by the community's general policies, or are even adversely affected by them, some of us can become antagonistic to the policy-makers or become anti-authority.

⁵⁷ Jeanne MacKenzie, *Australian Paradox*, pp. 145–7.

... there are two main ways of avoiding this; first, by becoming better informed about the general patterns of social control and their justification, and second, by learning to have sufficient personal control to accept that our client's hardship may be the result of sound general policy. This does not mean, of course, that we do not continue to have compassion for our client, or that we do not do all we can to help him, or that we will necessarily accept that the general policy is sound once we are fully informed about it, or that we do not inform the general policy-makers about the effects of their policy on particular individuals and their families. Frequently the people social workers have as clients are those least likely to organise themselves so that their viewpoint is represented and carries weight with the authorities. We should champion their cause only to make sure that those who are responsible for social policy give adequate consideration to all community groups likely to be affected, not just those who are organised and powerful. Often the most vulnerable are the ones most likely to be ignored. ...

When the next generation of social workers appears on the Australian scene, what of our experience will we have to pass on to them? Will they have to start from scratch, or will they be inheritors of a profession with a critical tradition?

Collecting and Publishing Papers Presented to the Branch

For eight years, 1962–1969, I collected and prepared for publication annually papers presented at meetings of the branch. It was a simple typed publication available to members at a small fee – a total of 612 foolscap pages.⁵⁸ According to the branch's 1963 annual report, the enthusiasm with which the publications had been received had more than justified my efforts. A few of the papers also appeared elsewhere, but for most of the material it was the only surviving record. The encouragement of local professional writing was a significant need for social work. The collections assisted long-term planning of the association's program, and encouraged contributors to spend as much time as they could on preparing their contributions. The contents of the collections 1962–1969 were as follows:

1962

- *The Social Worker and Marriage Counselling Today*
Margaret McHardy
- *Children Do Need Help*
 1. Muriel A. Harding
 2. Marion A. Bennett
 3. W. C. Langshaw
 4. Millie M. Mills
- *Casework and Psychotherapy*
 1. Margaret E. Grutzner
 2. Dr G. M. Duncan (SU Dept of Psychiatry)
 3. Dr J. P. Higgins (psychiatrist)
 4. Margaret M. Topham

⁵⁸ A colleague collected them for me while I was away in 1967. The papers for 1968 and 1969 were in the one volume.

- *The Social Worker and the Volunteer*
 1. Margaret L. McLean
 2. Mavis A. Laffer
- *Working Together in the Correctional Field*
 1. W. C. Langshaw
 2. 2. Viola Ruffles (supt, girl's home)
- *Medical Social Work and Heart Disease*
Leslie Campbell-Brown
- *Field Work Experience in the Professional Development of the Qualified Social Worker*
Mary S. McLelland

Papers to the branch's medical social work group

- *Social Work and the Local Community*
 1. Leslie Campbell-Brown
 2. R. J. Lawrence
- *The Harassed Housewife*
 1. Anne Pye
 2. Dr Evelyn Doyle (general practitioner)
 3. W. Langshaw
 4. Joan Brooker
- *Helping the Patient Face Treatment*
 1. *Major Surgery* - Winifred Danby
 2. *Radiotherapy* - Gael Higgins
 3. *Psychiatry* - Claire Bunday
 4. Audrey Dargan

1963

- *Has Australian Social Work a Critical Tradition?*
R. J. Lawrence
- *Revelations in Group Work with Older People*
Catherine A. Bowen
- *The Social Worker and the Law*
R. W. Hawkins (public solicitor)
- *Some Aspects of Social Work Practice and Education in the United States*
Ella A. Dye (Fulbright fellow, U of Melbourne)
- *Accidents - Their Social Implications*
Pamela Thomas
- *Accidents*
J. S. Cullen (psychologist)
- *The Migrant as a Client*
 1. Florence Ferguson
 2. Dr W. L. Matsdorf (parole officer)
- *New Developments in the Field*
 1. *A Homemaker Service* - Dorothy Davis & Norma Hennessey
 2. *The Future of the Child Guidance Clinic* - Dorothy Marsh
 3. *Admission Centres* - Peter M. Tankard
 4. *A Psychiatric Day Hospital* - Emily P. Veech

Papers to the branch's medical social work group

- *The Royal Alexandra Hospital for Children*
 1. Judith Green
 2. E. K. Kiang Chew
 3. Kwice Eng Tan
 4. Pamela Roberts
 5. Judith Green
- *Patients with Asthma*
 1. Dr A. G. McManis (physician)
 2. Dr W. K. Thompson (psychiatrist)
 3. Ruth W. Hendry

1964

- *Social Work Methods in the Rehabilitation of Released Prisoners*
Frank Hayes
- *Selectivity in Social Work – An Individual Responsibility*
Sally L. Gane (Fulbright lecturer, SU)
- *Professionalism and Social Work*
Joel B. Montague (visiting sociologist, UNSW)
- *Overdoses*
 1. Dr J. M. Woodforde (psychiatrist)
 2. Dr J. B. Hickie (associate professor of medicine, SU)
 3. Marion Beveridge
- *12th International Conference of Social Work, Athens*
Phyllis Grave

Paper to the branch's medical social work group

- *The Challenges of Medical Social Work*
Sally L. Gane (Fulbright lecturer, SU)

1965

- *The Control of Social Welfare: Social Work and Social Policy*
G. A. Rennison
- *The Learning Problems of Young Adult Students in Social Work and Implications for Field Work Supervisors*
Dorothy Davis
- *The Aborigines and City Life*
Pamela Beasley (anthropologist, SU)
- *The Volunteer in a Developing Society*
Betty Battle
- *Religion and Mental Health*
 1. *The Origin and Nature of Guilt* – (Dr J. Katz, associate professor, SU)
 2. *Child-Parent Relationships and the Child's Concept of God* – Charles Kenna (Psychology dept UNSW)
 3. Judith Stephens
- *The Role of the Social Worker in Our Social Security System*
 1. Joan Brooker
 2. Dorothy Davis

Reports from a medical social work group 'talk-in'

- Sub-groups: *Paraplegic-Orthopaedic; Gynaecological & Obstetric; Surgical; Psychiatric; Medical; Social Workers in Sole Charge; and Thoracic and Chest*

1966

- *Notes on the Third United Nations Congress on the Prevention of Crime and the Treatment of Offenders, Stockholm 9-18 August, 1965*
F. Hayes
- *Asian Planning for Children and Youth*
W. Langshaw
- *Adoption*
 1. *The Responsibility of the Social Work Profession in Adoption Practice* - Mary McLelland
 2. *The Natural Parents* - Sister Mary Borromeo
 3. *The Child* - Pamela Roberts
 4. *The Adoptive Parents* - Nancy Mackay
 5. *The 'Unadoptable' Child* - R. J. Walsh (professor of human genetics)
 6. *'Unadoptable Babies'* - Betty Vaughan
 7. *Who is the Unadoptable Child?* - Millie M. Mills
- *What it Means to be Professional*
E. Hamilton-Smith (president, AASW)
- *Family Courts*
 1. *The Case for Family Courts* - Mary McLelland
 2. *Proposed Legislative Reform in NSW* - Anna Frenkel (lawyer)
 3. *A Case Illustration* - D. Mutton
- *Three Glimpses of Social Work Organisation Overseas*
 1. *The Development of the Social Work Association of Canada* - I. McCullough
 2. *Some Notes about Professional Development of Social Work in Holland* - C. ter Rahe
 3. *Some Remarks about Social Work in Norway* - T. Fjeldsenden
- *Cardiac Rehabilitation*
 1. Dr D. E. Anderson (physician)
 2. Joan M. Lupton
- *Conjoint Family Therapy*
Margaret Topham

Medical social work group program

- *A record of questions to a panel and their responses, Prince Henry Hospital*
(Panel members - Dr Louise J. Wienholt, Dr R Dunlop, J. Grant (senior supervisory sister), and Claire Bunday)

1967

- *Some Aspects of Social Work in Indonesia*
Jennifer Dey
- *The Strategy of Research in Social Work*
T. Brennan (associate prof., SU)
- *The Place of the Child Guidance Clinic in the Mental Health Field*
 1. *General Introduction* - D. Marsh

2. *The Framework of Child Guidance in the Department of Health* – M. Bull
 3. *Some Observations of Child Guidance in North America* – J. Watkins
 4. *Bridge Road School for Emotionally Disturbed Children* – D. Marsh
 5. *Yasmar Child Guidance Clinic* – J. Hlavac
- *The Family Concept and its Use in Social Casework*
Mariam E. Prince
 - *Social Workers and Research*
Owen Giles
 - *New Developments in Family Agencies*
 1. *Church of England Counselling Service* – Rev. W. V. Payne
 2. *Red Cross Society* – M. V. Pym
 - *The Role of the Social Worker in the Prevention of Mental Illness*
 1. *A Theoretical Basis for Prevention in Mental Health?* – Peter Tankard
 2. *Preventive Programmes in Action* – Elizabeth Harwood
 3. *The Relevance of Prevention in a Non-Psychiatric Setting*
 - *Meeting the Needs of the Unmarried Mother*
Dr Bruce S. Stephen (physician)

1968 & 1969

- *Some Observations on Community Health Programmes in the U.S.A.*
Margaret Grutzner
- *The Development and Use of Psychiatric Services in the Public Hospital*
Norma Hennessey
- *An Address by David Maddison (prof. of psychiatry, SU) followed, but is not in the collection*
- *Increased Accessibility of Social Work Services*
 1. *Family Welfare Bureau* – Dorothy Matlak
 2. *Red Cross Welfare Service* – Dorothy Davis
 3. *Women's Hospital, Crown Street* – Pamela Roberts
 4. *N.S.W. Society for Crippled Children* – Barbara Sherman
- *Social Work Practice, Present and Future*
R. J. Lawrence
- *Israel – A Laboratory in Social Pioneering*
Dr. Wolf S. Matsdorf (parole officer)
- *Working with Autistic Children*
Juliet Harper (occupational therapist)
- *Residential Care of Delinquent Adolescents*
 1. *Methodist Department of Christian Fellowship* – Elizabeth McDonald
 2. *The Role of the Visiting Social Worker* – Susette Guttman
 3. *The Functioning of an Open Home* – Audrey Marshall
 4. *Staff Training* – Claude Loquet
 5. *Treatment Within the Correctional Institution* – Sister Mary Processus
- *Are Social Workers Really Necessary?*
L. H. Evers (psychologist)
- *Questions Arising From 20 Years in Child Guidance Work*
Marjorie Bull

- *Co-ordination of Social Work and Other Professions in a Local Neighbourhood Setting*
Julie Davis
- *The Historical Perspective and Social Work*
Norma Parker (assoc. prof., UNSW) – not published in the collection
- *The Helsinki Conference – Pointing up the Association's International Role*
 1. *The International Association of Schools of Social Work and the International Federation of Social Workers* – C. Bunday
 2. *The Association's International Contacts* – H. Clayton
 3. *Some Impressions of the Conference* – O. Homburg
- *Reflections on a Tour of South-East Asia*
J. Russell
- *A Training Programme for Family Therapists*
Margaret Topham
- *Short Papers on Gilbert & Ellice Islands, Singapore, Ceylon, and Ghana Drug Dependence*
H. Ma
- *Social Science and the Criminal Law*
Hon. J. C. Maddison (NSW minister of justice)⁵⁹

I personally found the regular general meetings of the branch a valuable source of information and stimulus. Compiling the papers of the speakers gave me an additional inducement to regular attendance and this kept me in some touch with many colleagues in the social work field. Despite often pressured work situations, many made the effort to attend.

The Australian Journal of Social Issues

An important initiative of Tom Brennan and Norma Parker was the Committee for Post-graduate Study in Social Work, a joint committee of the university department and the NSW branch of the AASW. They represented the department on the committee, with Tom as chairman, and the association provided 6 representatives. From 1961 to 1965, I was a branch member of the committee which stimulated a variety of learning opportunities for social work graduates. Described as 'the highlight of the year', the committee launched in the spring of 1961 a new national twice-yearly journal– *The Australian Journal of Social Issues*, edited by Tom Brennan, with me as its abstracts editor.

Tom Brennan explained in the first editorial that it was not intended to be a social work journal (such a journal already existed), nor to cater for the interests of those working in any university discipline. Although it was hoped that social welfare topics would receive adequate attention, it would mainly be concerned with discussion of 'social problems' as that term was usually understood. The principal aim was to raise important issues over a wide range of subjects. The journal would focus discussion on a number of important issues more clearly than was possible in the ordinary press. To improve the level of discussion,

59 'Papers presented at Meetings of the New South Wales Branch of the Australian Association of Social Workers', 1962, 1963, 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967, 1968 & 1969.

an important feature of the journal would be its bibliography and abstracting service. Each number would contain a bibliography on the main topic plus abstracts covering a wide range of subjects from Australian sources. The abstracts were carried out by regular readers of the particular journal covered.

Holding the then unique Australian academic appointment in social administration, I took an especial interest in this new journal, serving as its abstracts editor until 1968,⁶⁰ and acting editor for one of the issues (volume 2 number 1, Autumn 1964) when Tom Brennan was in Britain exploring developments in sociology, particularly in the new British universities. The first issues of the journal concentrated material around a chosen topic – ‘Sydney – a Unique City’, ‘Leadership in Australia’, ‘Professions in Australia’ – but then a policy revision resulted in each issue having papers on a wide variety of topics and a greater involvement of contributors and subscribers in other states. The people who provided abstracts for the journal were asked to select material which directly or indirectly suggested or reflected social action. During my period as abstracts editor, about 400 abstracts were published in the journal – from a considerable variety of disciplinary and professional journals, and other publications like the *Current Affairs Bulletin*. I found these abstracts very useful in my own academic work in gauging how social policy thinking was developing in various fields and more generally in Australia. Regular contact with my network of abstracters also gave me involvement with socially-concerned people in a variety of fields.

In 1967, ACOSS joined the Committee for Post-graduate Study in Social Work in the management and publication of the *AJSI*. This gave the journal a more secure financial base and wider potential readership. Mary McLelland chaired its management committee and Hope Clayton was its business manager. Harold Throssell in the Department of Social Studies at the University of Queensland took over from Tom Brennan as its editor. An Australasian scholarly journal of sociology was now a welcome complement to material in the *AJSI*. Now 50 years since its launching, the *AJSI* continues – as a joint-publication of ACOSS and the recently formed Australian Social Policy Association. Its currently stated aim is to contribute to the development of social scientific analysis of social and policy problems in Australia. It is a quarterly refereed journal and it still has no equivalent in the Australian publishing scene, as I confirmed with Sheila Shaver a few years ago when she was helping ACOSS to assess its continuation of the journal.

OTHER COMMUNITY INVOLVEMENTS

Additional to these professional activities, like many of my social work colleagues I was involved in a variety of other community activities. In my case, it helped to keep me up-to-date with developments in the social services. I attended regularly conferences, seminars and general meetings of the Council

60 Mrs Dorothy Sorrell (a senior research assistant in the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney) collected some of the abstracts for me when I was away in 1967, but there was a gap in the printing of abstracts for one issue in October 1967. Dorothy took over as the abstracts editor when I left the department late in 1968.

of Social Service of New South Wales. At its seminar on 'Welfare Services and the Local Community' in 1966, I contributed a paper which elaborated both the negative as well as the positive implications for agencies of a policy of locally-based services. I acknowledged that my paper ranged over many topics.

One of the dangers of raising too many issues at once is to frighten people off, to make them feel overwhelmed by the complexities involved, to make them stay with the status quo, to reinforce conservative attitudes. But just because modern urban life is complicated, most of us do not give up living – we try to understand it, to adapt to it and mould it to our purposes. So too with the urban social welfare agency which is alive to its changing environment, and which finds stimulus, challenge and satisfaction in change. We must try to resuscitate the living dead amongst our social welfare organisations, encouraging them to lead a vigorous, contemporary existence.⁶¹

I can recall Sidney Sax commenting that my contribution helped to get balance in the current discussions on decentralisation, which tended to emphasise only the positive aspects.

1963–66, I was a member of the research committee of the Council of Social Service of New South Wales; 1966–68, an initiator and member of its standing committee on the handicapped. In the latter committee, I was actively associated with Sidney Sax and we became good friends, although he was about 10 years older than I was. (My family still recalls an occasion in our home at Balgowlah Heights when Sid chased an escaped pet mouse with me before we proceeded with our committee meeting.)

Sidney Sax

Sid came from South Africa in 1960, and served as a physician and deputy medical superintendent at Lidcombe Hospital. 1964–70 he was director of geriatrics for New South Wales. 1970–73, he was director of the division of research and planning in the NSW Department of Health. From there, he moved to Canberra where he served as chairman of the Hospitals and Health Services Commission 1974–78. During his time in Sydney, Sid took a particular interest in my work and I was told that he kept things I had written in a separate file. He asked me to act as a referee for him when he unsuccessfully applied for a chair in medicine in the new medical school in Western Australia. Certainly Sid had a keen awareness that health policy should not be isolated from other social policy concerns. I can recall him sharing with me in a long phone conversation his considerable uncertainty about accepting the Canberra appointment. The Whitlam government was establishing a separate Social Welfare Commission, while Sid thought the two commissions should be combined. 1978–82, he was special adviser on social welfare policy to the Commonwealth Government, and 1978–80, chairman of the National Health Services Advisory Committee. He managed to retain his credibility

61 R. J. Lawrence, 'The Implications of a Policy of Locally-Based Services', in *Proceedings of a Seminar on Welfare Services and the Local Community*, Sydney, Council of Social Service of New South Wales, 1966.

with both the Whitlam and Fraser governments and had remarkable experience as a senior public servant in turbulent times. Towards the end of this period, Trish and I had dinner in Canberra with Sid and his wife Gwen, who was also a doctor. I remember urging him to write about his experience if possible in a university appointment. We also discussed the swamping influence of 'economic rationalism' on social policy. The ANU appointed Sid to a visiting fellowship in 1982, resulting in his book *A Strife of Interests*. In 1990, he published *Health Care Choices and the Public Purse*. He died in 2001. I did not have regular contact with Sid once he moved to Canberra, but we kept in touch through Christmas cards.

In mid-September 1964, Mary McLelland and I went to a meeting in the new building in George Street, Sydney, being purchased by the Foundation for Aboriginal Affairs. I wrote to my parents:

The meeting was to discuss a plan for establishing a social work service. It was one of the least structured meetings I have ever been to, but it's important they do it properly and Mary McLelland and I are going to try to help them with this.⁶²

A Paper on the Four Age-Based Cultures

In the period 1963–66, I was a member of the education for retirement committee of the Old People's Welfare Council of NSW. In 1964, Lyra Taylor, now director of the OPWC of Victoria, invited me to give an address 'Youth looks at age', to a meeting of the council in Melbourne in October 1964. Over 200 people attended the meeting, and the address was printed by the council and widely circulated. The response was very positive, although my approach was unexpected.

... What I am going to do is to cast academic caution to the winds and talk in very general, but I hope suggestive terms. I am going to claim that in our society there exist four age-based cultures, whose nature we need to be aware of if we are to understand much of the life of the community. ... in adolescence, in young adulthood, in middle age, and in old age, there exist feelings, thoughts, and attitudes, sufficiently characteristic and sufficiently widespread to talk about each of these four stages as a 'culture'. ... Our society ... defines broadly what to expect and what to do at a given stage of life. This is an important way for the society to pass on its social heritage.

... unlike other cultural groupings to which we belong, with these we must move from one to another. This is one reason why we should look at the characteristics of the various age groups together. As a person moves from one culture to another, he may spend a period in a sort of cultural no-man's land, before he has fully relinquished the earlier culture and has taken on fully the new one. This is a time which calls for considerable personal adaptation, and it is made the more difficult if there are sharp differences between the cultures...

The thoughts, feelings and attitudes typical of the age stage are a product of a number of factors – the sort of things people do at this stage, the communication

62 Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 16/9/64

amongst people in the group, the attitudes of the rest of the community to the age group, and the historical experience of the group. In our kind of society the speed of social change is such that the experience of the upper age groups, and this includes middle age as well as old age, is increasingly seen as irrelevant to modern living. In other words, conflict between the age-based cultures in our rapidly changing industrial society is heightened. A great many people in Western societies have now written about the problems of the aged. A common general prescription is to give the aged a useful role to play. There is a new body of mature writing which is profoundly disturbed by the slowness of the middle-aged group – and remember these are the important decision-makers in our society – to absorb and use new knowledge, and to adapt their attitudes to the modern world. The middle-aged certainly are given a role to play but they are seen as ill-equipped for it. Unless deliberate action is taken ... , our kind of society seems to have eluded class warfare, only to be headed for an age warfare. It is one thing for all age groups to have ganged up against the old-age group, quite another if the middle-aged group who are usually in society's key positions, are challenged in terms of their social usefulness!

... People do not reach the same age-based cultures at the identical chronological age. But the culture is roughly geared to the biological stage of a man's development. ...

... Each culture consists of a complex of roles and attitudes which together make up a way of life. ... only some of the attitudes and the roles will be to do with other age groups.

I then speculated on what might be some of the present characteristic attitudes in the age stages on a number of important subjects, suggesting these as areas for future serious study – attitudes to employment, money, leisure, sex, the role of women, rearing children, war, racial questions, death, religion.

If I am reasonably close to the mark in much of this speculation, it seems that we may not have very much in common with a person of another age stage. ... Is it good for the community and for the various age groups that there should be so *much* difference between them? The present situation encourages age groups to keep apart and for them to consolidate further their own set of attitudes. It makes the movement from one age to another the more difficult. Also it means that when members of different age groups do come together, there must inevitably be conflict, and this is often interpreted in highly personal terms rather than in terms of a conflict of cultures.

I concluded with a series of prescriptions of ways to reduce these difficulties:

Organise things so that members of the different age groups come together more frequently. But this will only be effective under certain conditions. Each age group has to be willing to understand the position and viewpoints of the other age groups, not just state its own position as forcibly as possible. All the age groups need to demonstrate the over-riding democratic and Christian value of respect for people whatever their class, creed or age.

Decision-making should be spread rather more evenly amongst the age groups and should be in the hands of people who do not identify with their own particular

age group, or with the interests of the most powerful sections of the community. The decision-makers, to act justly, should not consistently favour or discriminate against particular groups. They need to weigh up the interests of everyone who is going to be affected by their decision. ...

The members of each of the age groups need to examine their attitudes in the light of accurate information about the kind of society in which we are living. We all have a strong stake in encouraging many more people to study what our society is really like, and for their findings to be widely circulated. But I would emphasise that the experts themselves are not the people to decide what decisions should be made. Their role should be essentially an advisory, informing and enabling one. They can point up what the choices are but their expertise does not justify them imposing their own values on the rest of us. I think that those in the human relations professions have an especially important task in interpreting age groups to each other.

Changes are taking place in our formal educational system which will equip more of the population to be more adaptable to their social environment. Teaching more children how to live a fruitful life with other human beings is an educational goal which has received increasing attention. But educational change is slow in this country. Crucial to bridging some of the gap between age groups is a successful implanting of habits of learning during young people's formal education. These can be reinforced throughout their subsequent life by extensive adult education schemes, refresher courses, and the like. ... Tax-supported educational services should be genuinely available for all who want to learn...

Bringing age groups closer together would mean individuals moving from one stage to another would have to make less of a major adjustment in their lives. One possible way of helping people to be ready for the next age stage was direct educational preparation. Preparation for marriage and preparation for retirement schemes were under way, and seemed worthwhile but needed to be evaluated. In addition, professional help should be available for individuals passing from one stage to another. My own profession of social work had a major responsibility in this, but had to attract and retain far more men and women than it had in the past.

I have not emphasised strong ties of love and affection between individuals in different age groups. This is not because I do not think these are important, but because I believe that love alone is insufficient to overcome many difficulties, and also because such a relationship exists only with a few individuals, usually members of one's own family, not with a large number of another age group.

In looking back on what I have had to say, I wonder if I have been as free from my own place in the age scale as I have tried to be. Perhaps some of the sense of urgency and the dissatisfaction with things as they are, which this paper reveals, can be explained away by reference to my age, but I think not all. The fact that you gave me this opportunity to speak to you on this subject, though I may have handled it in an unexpected way, possibly indicates that you are aware of too wide a gap between generations.

I would like to see the four aged-based cultures become as widely discussed as C. P. Snow's now famous 'two cultures'. Those of us who are working for the

social welfare of our community must take an interest in the subject.⁶³

The welfare of the aged members of the population was a traditional social welfare concern, but this way of tackling the subject placed it in a societal social policy framework.

Trends in Australian Social Welfare – For a Christian Audience

In February 1965, about 200 delegates from almost every Christian denomination in the country attended a consultation on a national Christian strategy, at the University of Sydney. 'On the initiative of the Australian Council of Churches controversial papers and addresses were prepared in advance,' and the papers were subsequently published in a book edited by Ivan Southall under the title, *The Challenge: Is the Church Obsolete? An Australian response to the challenge of modern society*. I was one of the 33 invited contributors. David Scott wrote on 'The church and social welfare'. I was asked to predict the state of Australian social welfare in ten years' time! (I would have been more comfortable with the idea of 'speculation' rather than 'prediction'.)

After briefly defining 'social welfare', I observed that prediction was especially hazardous because a great deal was not known about the present situation. To be better informed, particularly about prevailing social conditions and their origins, Australia needed university appointments in the social sciences and specifically appointments in social administration. The present interest in administrative theory was likely to become apparent in at least part of the administration of social welfare services.

Many tasks in the community demanded higher education and skills, and social welfare was no exception. Its future depended on the quality and quantity of its workers. Government departments particularly concerned with social conditions would seek higher administrative and research staff educated in the social sciences, either with or without a professional qualification. For much of their work with individual members of the public, governments would employ qualified social workers if they could get them. By 1975, the number of Australian schools of social work would have doubled and they would belong to an Australian association to discuss matters of mutual concern.

Fully qualified staff in social agencies would be used more productively. There might be more agreement on the proper roles of doctors, psychiatrists, psychologists, social workers, teachers, and clergymen, in relation to people who need personal professional help.

Many non-government agencies would not match the government departments in the qualifications of their staff, unless present methods of financing were radically revised. Separatist forces among Australian social agencies were strong, and bodies concerned with coordinating services received only very limited support.

63 R. J. Lawrence, 'Youth Looks at Age: The Four Cultures', Old People's Welfare Council of Victoria, Melbourne, October 1964. Len Tierney moved the vote of thanks at the Council meeting. I spent most of the next day with him discussing his problems at the university where he had recently been belatedly appointed head of the Department of Social Studies. I stayed overnight with the Collivers.

The decentralisation of social welfare services in large cities and local government becoming a focus for personal services would provide a new basis for discussion about the coordination of services. A few regions outside the capital cities were thinking about local social welfare services, but this trend would be delayed unless special steps were taken to obtain qualified staff.

The major poverty study underway in Melbourne would have revealed gaps in Australia's social security system. Perhaps by 1975, there will again have been a major review of Australia's social security system, levels of benefit will be linked to a national minimum, and a commonwealth-run public assistance scheme will have been introduced to supplement benefit payments in special circumstances.

Increased prosperity was likely to lead to more commonwealth expenditure on social services in general, but whether this was more thoughtfully allocated was likely to depend on the political scene. A change of government was unlikely for some time, yet it might be necessary before the level and nature of commonwealth social services again became major community issues. A federal Labor government was much more likely to try to implement a comprehensive national health scheme.

The cost and efficiency of Australia's hospital and medical services are likely to receive increased public and political discussion. Unless the medical profession is willing to discuss these things in terms of the public interest, without resort to extreme private enterprise arguments or conjuring up the socialist bogey, it is liable to lose prestige. The present high affluence of its members makes it vulnerable to criticism, either well – or ill-informed.

Perhaps over the next ten years there would be more attention to the high level of house deposits, the development of high-density housing areas, and the provision of specially designed low-cost housing for community groups like the aged and the handicapped.

Other trends to be expected:

- child welfare services might be integrated with family welfare services
- adoption procedures would be handled more carefully throughout the country
- preparation for marriage and marriage counselling would be strengthened
- the family would be asked to accept a more active role in the treatment of mental illness
- a general movement away from large institutions and, to a lesser extent, away from smaller ones – in child care, care of the mentally ill, the mentally handicapped, and the aged. (Only effective if adequate professional and other services are readily available to people in their own homes and if the lay public have sympathetic attitudes to people who need help.)
- the possible extension of foster care in a number of welfare fields
- a far greater number of volunteer workers, many of whom would be more carefully integrated with the professionals
- more education about social welfare matters through volunteer activities, television programs, and adult education schemes
- more widespread interest because some social welfare policies, such as

- national health policies, affect almost all of the population
- a number of government departments might have advisory bodies expanding the horizons of departmental policy-makers, but they might not stimulate broad public discussion and could, in fact, be used as a device to stifle it

There was a strong possibility the social welfare work of the churches would not be sheltered from public and professional criticism much longer. Reference to a religious motivation would not be sufficient justification in the eyes of the rest of the community. Effectiveness in term of the social standards of the people being helped would tend to be the main criterion, whatever might be the personal motivation of the people in the helping role.

The Churches are not in a strong position to criticize. How many of them in their own services can say with confidence that they are adequately staffed, that they are administratively efficient, that they are carefully evaluated in terms of their need and effectiveness, and that they are coordinated with other community services, whether these are run by other sections of the same Church, by other Churches, by other community bodies, or by governmental bodies? ... Active Christians can frequently attain their goals by joining forces with others in the community with common objectives. It is very doubtful if there is an exclusively Christian point of view of social welfare matters.

Whatever the religious justification, the Christian tradition of concern for the worldly welfare of one's fellow-men is sound morally, but only if this concern is translated into effective and responsible action. In our complex industrial society this requires specialised knowledge and a willingness to cooperate with others sharing common humanitarian values.⁶⁴

Although I was keenly aware that some of my expectations were perhaps wishful thinking and might well not eventuate, the paper did give me the opportunity to reach a far-reaching church audience and briefly raise concerns about the social welfare role of religiously inspired bodies.

The Needs of Older Australians

At a seminar on 'Aging in Australia Today', held by the Department of University Extension, University of New England in Grafton, in May 1965, I gave the keynote address. Its topic was 'Satisfying the Needs of Old People in Australia: Problems and Possibilities'. An annual seminar series on ageing in Australia was being planned.

I started with some orienting comments.

Our purpose was not solely gerontological.

As citizens, as persons who are or will be elderly, as family members, as people with jobs which affect the well-being of older people, we are interested in the well-being of the aged - not just in what the older person's life is like but in having to decide what to do about it.

64 R. J. Lawrence, 'Australian Social Welfare: Predictions', in Ivan Southall (ed), *The Challenge: Is the Church Obsolete?*, pp. 154-9.

Needs were not matters of fact. They were conditions of life related to some community or personal standard. Disagreements might occur over facts and/or relevant standards, or we might disagree on what action to take because the rest of the community was competing for our attention and community resources. Ultimately decisions on what really were human needs and decisions between competing claims of different groups were value judgements. Because of differences in education, in upbringing, in employment, in sex, age, temperament and social standing, we did not all have the same values.

Our political system gives some opportunity for there to be a connection between the values of the legislators and the values of certain organised interests in the community. It also provides for the opportunity to change the legislative team so that other powerful organised interests can enjoy a period of special influence. ... Whichever is ... in political power, it cannot consistently ride rough-shod over the claims for consideration of the rest of the community. ...

In parliamentary debates, expressions like 'for the public interest', 'for the good of the community', 'for the welfare of the Australian people', are regularly used to justify government action. A government is I think only really entitled to use these expressions if it has seriously considered the claims of all people in the community, both organised and unorganised, who are going to be affected by the government's action. Those who are poorly organised and about whom little is known are likely to be neglected, and there will be those whose claims will be known but who will receive scant recognition because they do not rate very highly.

In so far as ours is a youth – and efficiency – oriented industrial society, the interests of our older members will tend to rate less highly than those of our younger members. But until quite recently Australian governments and community in general took little interest in the welfare of the aged at least partly because so little was known about the older members of the community, and because those interested in their welfare were not organised.

On the knowledge front we have come some distance in a short period of time, but compared with older larger societies like Britain and the United States, Australian writing on the subject is still very limited, being often derivative and impressionistic and only occasionally based on careful systematic local study.⁶⁵ ...

There is a temptation to study and talk about only those in the old age group ... who are or have problems. Unless this is balanced by knowledge of the rest of the age group, this is likely to produce ill-founded policies and encourage stereotypes and images of the older person which are positively harmful. ...

The accumulation of knowledge, while it requires independence of mind, intelligence, hard work and integrity, also requires organisation. ... In June 1964, after energetic promotion by the National Old People's Welfare Council, an Australian Association of Gerontology was formed. ... A case can be made for a small country like Australia concentrating ... attention more upon social research, because the findings of social research in other cultures are less likely to have Australian relevance than are biological findings.

65 For the seminar I prepared a bibliography of Australian writing on the aged. It contained 105 items – 36 general, 11 accommodation, homes, hospitals, 27 health and medical, 7 employment and retirement, and 24 financial aspects. The bibliography was included in the conference proceedings.

I then looked at the recent development of state old people's welfare councils, and the formation of the National Old People's Welfare Council. The councils needed to think carefully about whether they were equipped to service the responsibilities they were assuming. There was no doubt that the recent development of these councils, of senior citizen clubs, of pensioner associations, of geriatric services and the like had paid off in terms of the welfare of the older section of the population.

In view of the generally neglected state of the aged in this country such separate specialised development was perhaps inevitable. ... Yet it can isolate the aged even more than they are already from the rest of the community. ... I look forward to a later stage in development when the welfare of the older members of the community is the active concern of not just agencies, organisations and individuals with a specialised interest in the aged but of many others as well. The older groups themselves will need to be willing to reach out and make a contribution to the community well-being rather than stay all the time in inward-looking self-regarding groups. ... The difficulties in getting together different age-groups with different interests are considerable, but not insuperable. Mixing with younger people will of course be beneficial only in some cases.

It is easy to forget that old people are first and foremost 'people' with the same wide range of individual variation found in the rest of the population. On my conception of it a primary task of the welfare services is to open up to individuals choices which they would not otherwise have, and choices which they are likely to think of benefit to them. Services for the aged, however they be sponsored, should have this as an important objective. They should not, except under exceptional circumstances, strip the older person still further of his personal responsibility for his own well-being. I dislike the term 'care of the aged' because of its paternalistic overtones; 'caring about the aged' is a very different matter.

There are still people in our society, usually they are in affluent circumstances, who frown upon extensive community services on the grounds that they undermine personal independence. It is true that some social services have encouraged chronic dependency to the damage of the person who receives them, but this has been usually because they have been poorly designed or administered. A wide range of services, particularly for an older person, is in fact likely to allow him to retain his sense of personal independence. There is plenty of evidence that unless an individual wants to benefit from a service he will not benefit, whatever the sponsors of the service may say.

In the remainder of the paper, I discussed who was responsible for the well-being of the older Australians, additional to the role of personal responsibility of the aged themselves. Numerous papers discussed appropriate policies and services, but there was not much discussion on the crucial topic of who should be responsible for these – partly because the writers usually identified with one of the authorities in the field and partly because trying to allocate responsibility on rational grounds was a complicated rather messy business which required extensive administrative, political and community knowledge. In practice essentially 'political' processes tended to determine who did what and the rationale of the result was not always easy to discover let alone justify.

I quoted David Donnison: 'The development of social administration is not a 'rational' or 'technical' process – a matter of organising available resources to achieve agreed ends. It is a 'political' process – an evolution of functions brought about by the interaction of competing interests, inside and outside the organisation concerned.' And he warned that any general system of social principles and priorities was likely to be only provisional. This harked back to what I said near the beginning of the paper about value disagreements. I insisted, however, that it was still useful to consider who should do what, given that we were concerned with the welfare of the older members of our society.

In Australia, matters are complicated by our three-tier system of government with its various constitutional, financial, administrative and conventional arrangements, and by the operation of different State and municipal practices, especially with regard to government cooperation with non-government sectors of the community.

Adult members of our society have a number of major needs – financial, health, employment, educational, accommodation, recreational and social. Our adequate social functioning depends upon our making satisfying choices in each of these aspects of our lives. Our choices are limited by the opportunities and services our society has to offer, our knowledge of these, our personal circumstances, and the values according to which we live. In each of these areas of individual need ... there is a roughly corresponding area of social organisation and policies, both formal and informal, government and non-government, business and non-profit making, which concentrates upon each of these particular aspects of the life of our society. And in connection with these there have arisen employment groups with varying degrees of specialised knowledge, each with a real stake in developing and trying to extend its territory. This departmentalisation of the life of our society, with the accompanying development of professional, aspiring professional, and other organised employee groups is inevitable. It does, however, highlight coordination and responsibility questions. In inter-departmental and inter-professional boundary disputes, and in straight departmental or professional empire building, the welfare of the individual member of the public in whom these various inter-related needs are operating together can easily be lost sight of.

... Modern geriatrics emphasises the need from a health point of view for older people to remain functioning for as long as possible in all the various aspects of their lives. This does not mean, however, that all the services which help them to do this should be called health services, or that the health professions should have an over-riding responsibility in all areas of life. There needs to be due recognition and encouragement of institutionalised responsibility in all the important functional areas, especially in relation to the older adult population. Only then is there likely to be genuine and balanced coordination between the various specialised authorities with at least some agreement on divisions of responsibility.

But this still leaves open the vital question, how does all of this affect the individual citizen? How does the older person come to know what are the opportunities and services offering? ... often ... the individual person needs outside assistance in relating these to his own personal and social circumstances. The professional person who is specifically trained to do this is the social worker. As yet in Australia very few older people benefit from this kind of assistance, partly because of a

relative lack of professional social work interest. But this is beginning to change. As this and other professional groups, notably of course medicine and its various satellites, become interested in a preventive and rehabilitation outlook with regard to the aged rather than a custodial one, so professional responsibilities for this segment of the population become more attractive professionally and therefore likely to be accepted.

The rest of this opening paper briefly covered important issues and policy options for bodies concerned about the well-being of the aged members of the population. Each of the seven major areas of common human need was discussed in turn – financial, health, employment, educational, accommodation, and social. Finally, I observed:

Stress on old age as a time of contemplation can stultify responsible thinking about the needs of older people. Yet however active and socially useful older people remain or even become, however much they feel they have a temporal future, inevitably they will think more than their fellows on the meaning of human existence and death. The acceptance or rejection of the various religious and philosophical answers put forward is a highly personal matter. For those who come to be at peace with their fellows and/or their God, the later years can be a time of contentment. I suspect, however, that such attitudes are difficult to maintain in the face of intolerable living conditions, and of course such conditions can make life utterly hopeless for those who have not found a personal philosophy or faith. I hope I have said enough in this opening paper to indicate that the achievement of adequate living and social standards for the older people in our community is a complex many-sided task. But it can be done, provided all the interested and responsible parties see the task as important, and are willing to work together.⁶⁶

Other Community Contributions

An unusual experience was being a speaker at an Outward Bound evening session in a remote location up the Hawkesbury River. I was talking about social service to a group tired after a hard physical day. I do not have any record of the occasion but remember my fellow speakers were Morven Brown and a very prominent businessman. Travelling up the river at twilight in a small boat from Brooklyn was memorable.

For two years, 1964–65, I served as a University of Adelaide delegate on the Australian Universities Sports Association Council. Meeting at the University of Sydney, I got to know the deputy registrar Hugh McCredie who convened the meetings. We were largely concerned with the inter-varsity competitions.

In mid-1966, I was a member of a committee of three asked to help the Social Services Department of the Presbyterian Church to decide on the future of their property at Leppington near Camden, currently used for boys committed by the children's courts.

66 R. J. Lawrence, 'Satisfying the Needs of Old People in Australia: Problems and Possibilities', in D. P. Armstrong, *Ageing in Australia Today*, Proceedings of a Seminar, Grafton, 14–16 May, The University of New England, November 1965, pp 5–29. 81 delegates from all states represented organisations whose interests ranged over 'the whole field of old people's welfare'.

On Thursday, 30 June, 1966, I visited the Steelworks in Newcastle to provide a 2-hour lecture and discussion, organised through the Adult Education Department. 'The group of executive types proved very interested once I got them going.'⁶⁷ Afterwards I had an excellent dinner with John Turner of the Adult Education Department, and Jim Lewis⁶⁸ and his offsider Ian Le Maistre. My hotel was handy to the station, so I could easily get to my 11am lecture the next morning.

The paper on 'Citizenship and Community Service' which I delivered to a school for Apex district governors in September 1966, tackled both concepts before relating them to the work of Apex.⁶⁹ Again, I was insisting on a more thoughtful analytic approach to what was seen as a community service organisation.

Because of its significance, my year in the United States will be dealt with in a separate chapter. One direct outcome of that year was the general article 'A Social Transaction Model for the Analysis of Social Welfare', which was published in October 1968 in the *AJSI*.⁷⁰ Another direct outcome was 'The Great Society: Rhetoric or Reality?', a paper focussed on American society.⁷¹ This was given to the third biennial conference of the Australian and New Zealand American Studies Association in August 1968. Both of these concentrated on broad societal conceptual and policy issues in social welfare. Another substantial paper obviously influenced by my American experience concentrated on social work in Australia. It addressed the scope and future of social work in the Commonwealth Department of Social Services at a conference of senior social workers in Canberra in May 1968, and was heard by the director-general of the department, Mr L. B. Hamilton, and Max Wryell and other senior members of the Department. At a subsequent meeting of the NSW branch of the AASW, especially for recent graduates, I re-presented this paper, with additional comments on social work practice, present and future.⁷² The content of each of these four papers is covered in the next chapter.

Other Activities in 1968

Apart from these various speaking and writing engagements in 1968, other activities included:

- A session with the NSW Hospitals Commission and The Nurses' Registration Board. These bodies had adopted a suggestion I had made about studying policy changes relating to nursing training in public hospitals.
- A vigorous letter to the Manly Council who were likely to discontinue its recently instituted social work service.

67 Letter, John Lawrence to parents, 3/7/66.

68 His brother Bob Lewis was a tutor at the University of Adelaide when I was there. This executive development program had been going on for some years, and was largely Jim Lewis's initiative. Essington Lewis, managing director and chairman of BHP, was their uncle.

69 See pp. 216–8.

70 See pp. 308–9.

71 See pp. 349–53.

72 See pp. 355–62.

- Drawing up proposals for the theme and format for the next national conference of the AASW, to be held in Hobart in 1969.
- As the first ATSSW secretary/treasurer (1967–68) in Australia and New Zealand, a central involvement in organising its first function, a workshop at the University of Sydney, 19–20 August. About 24 attended from all of the Australian schools.

Since taking up my academic appointment at the University of Sydney in 1961, my professional career had been full of the opportunities and challenges provided by working in a relatively new field of professional work. The problem was not to find useful things to do, but to pick one's way amongst the numerous possibilities.

Promotion

In December 1966, just before going to the USA on my sabbatical year, I was promoted by the University of Sydney to senior lecturer from the beginning of 1967, with a commencing salary of \$6,600 per annum.⁷³ I had been unsuccessful a year earlier because priority had to be given to Mary McLelland's promotion particularly when she succeeded Norma Parker as supervisor of professional training.⁷⁴ A general Australian academic salary increase while I was away, gave a small boost to our family finances.

FAMILY CAREERS

The Career of my Brother Jim – in Chicago, Edinburgh, London, Adelaide, Sydney

In October, 1961, we received a letter from Jim. They had recently moved to Scotland after their period in Chicago. He then hoped for an academic position in Australia, preferably Sydney. He had been offered a particularly attractive position in Chicago, but although they had been happy there, he preferred not to become an American citizen. While there was increasingly articulate and severe self-criticism in the USA, the democratic machinery which was adequate for a small community was altogether too cumbersome in the complex modern world with its pressure groups. The impossibility of really defining freedom was clearly apparent – when did individual freedom stop in considering freedom 'to make a buck'. There was in education, as in medicine and many other areas, a definite and distressing double standard. The best of theory and practice was excellent but very limited in its application to the population as a whole. There was very little sympathy with the individual or community which was poor or had failed (and the two were almost synonymous). In Illinois, a relatively rich state, they did not see why their taxes should be used to help Arkansas or Mississippi. However, the whole country was united at present in

⁷³ The salary range was \$6,600 – x 200 – \$7,600 per annum.

⁷⁴ See Vol. 2, p. 235.

its willingness to go to war against Russia if necessary.

In New York, which they visited on their journey from Chicago to Edinburgh, Jim was particularly impressed by two museums, the Guggenheim and the Museum of Modern Art. In Scotland, they were living in a 17th century lodge on an estate 8 miles south of Edinburgh. The Pentland Hills were within walking distance. Jim had just met Professor Donald, a charming man but unpopular with the Edinburgh traditionalists who remembered that 50 years ago this was one of the great teaching centres. He was a 'foreigner' attempting to introduce an aggressive research approach in the face of determined and talented opposition. This rather suited Jim's own plans but might limit his social contacts.⁷⁵ His wife Sheila observed in February 1962 that they were enjoying Edinburgh, but in general people there did not entertain nearly as much as Australians and Americans seemed to do. Jim and Andrew Doig were working flat out and hoped to have their first paper ready for publication in a few weeks.⁷⁶ This was the beginning of a life-long friendship.

A Leverhulme research fellowship enabled Jim to spend the academic year 1961/62 in the University of Edinburgh working with Professor Donald and Andrew Doig in the Department of Medicine. This was followed by a Wellcome research fellowship for the academic year 1962/3 with Professor Rosenheim and C. J. Dickinson⁷⁷ in the medical unit of the University College Hospital in London. The appointments at Chicago, Edinburgh and London enabled Jim to become one of the members of the early international network in the new medical specialty of nephrology.

In Norma Brown's (Parker's) letter from London in May 1963, she told me about a visit to Jim and his family. She had rung him at University Hospital and he had invited her to dinner at Mill Hill where they lived. Jill Adams⁷⁸ from Adelaide, one of his former laboratory technicians now working as a physiotherapist in a London hospital, was also there. They had a very pleasant evening sharing experiences. She reported Jim and Sheila's two boys were sturdy; the elder one (Richard) talked very freely – with a most pronounced English accent. Their house was very comfortable and well-heated. Both Jim and Sheila were apprehensive about returning to Adelaide. During the past four years, Jim had been in the midst of the top-notch research people in his field and he was saying how much research is a matter of interaction – of new trains of thought being set off by discussion. They worked very hard. Norma had dinner the next night with Evie Freeman (one of our department's graduates) and her husband, who was a senior research person at Guy's Hospital in problems of the newborn, and between the two of them, she had quite a good picture of what went on. The long hours were cheerfully given in an atmosphere of tremendous stimulus and camaraderie. And there were frequent contacts with people in the same field elsewhere. She had not realised that the chemical

75 Letter, J. R. Lawrence to Mr and Mrs R. J. Lawrence, 15/10/61.

76 Letter, Sheila Lawrence to Trish and John Lawrence and family, 20/2/62.

77 John Dickinson had been the leader of the madrigal group in which I sang at Magdalen College in 1954! See Vol 1, p. 179.

78 Jim has told me that she was the daughter of the very well-known journalist Noel Adams, and that later she died back in Adelaide after a kidney transplant in Canada.

(pharmaceutical) firms did so much – they paid for meetings at conferences and so on. She only hoped that one of them would rise to the occasion and put up the wherewithal for Jim to shoot across there frequently. It was easy enough these days – it was only the money that was needed. Norma thanked me for suggesting she might meet Jim and Sheila and their boys. It had given her considerable pleasure.⁷⁹

Jim, Sheila and their two sons returned to Adelaide in 1964, for Jim to take up his appointment as director of a new renal unit at The Queen Elizabeth Hospital. (He had also received a job opportunity at Monash University.) A newspaper report said Jim had been appointed while he was in London from a large field of overseas and Australian physicians. Dr Lawrence had spent four and a half years' study in renal research units in Chicago, Edinburgh and London. He said 'the development of the artificial kidney machine had contributed considerably to the tremendous advances in the understanding of renal problems in the past 10 years'. The unit was contemplating the long-term use of the artificial kidney machine to maintain life. When kidney transplantation was therapeutically feasible, it would probably be tried, but as yet it was only a remote possibility at the hospital, despite a few conspicuous successes overseas. The ethical and medical problems were 'very considerable'.⁸⁰ Jim's unit was a pioneering Australian venture made possible by his overseas experience, and the unit actually achieved the first successful kidney transplant in Australia in 1965.⁸¹ He directed the unit until 1976.

Jim's family lived in a substantial house at Kensington Road, Kensington Gardens. Neal Blewett, the 1957 Tasmanian Rhodes Scholar, was a close neighbour and became a friend. He was teaching politics at the University of Adelaide; in 1974 he was a professor of politics at Flinders University. His successful career in federal politics commenced in 1977, as ALP member for Bonython.

From 1972–74, David Maddison had been dean of the Faculty of Medicine at the University of Sydney. He had been professor of psychiatry at the university since 1962, and had hoped to move medical education in the direction of being more aware of the need to serve the community and of humanising it. Frustrated by the difficulties of dealing with the traditional vested interests at the university he accepted the invitation to be dean of the new medical school at the University of Newcastle. Looking for new staff who welcomed Maddison's educational and professional vision, Jim was approached to apply for the foundation chair of medicine in the new school.⁸² At the same time, he was approached by the University of Sydney (Professor Ruthven Blackburn).

79 Letter, Mrs N. Brown to John Lawrence, 17/5/63.

80 'Aim of New Renal Research Unit', *Advertiser*, 8/1/64.

81 Peter Knight was the pioneering surgeon involved.

82 William Cramond, a highly-regarded psychiatrist and administrator, had brought Jim to Professor Madison's attention. Born and educated in Scotland, he was director of mental health in South Australia 1961–65, and professor of mental health at the University of Adelaide 1963–71. After appointments in the UK, including principal and vice-chancellor of Stirling University 1975–80, he was director of mental health services in New South Wales 1980–83, and professor of clinical psychiatry at Flinders University 1983–92. Jim always held Bill Cramond in high esteem and they became close friends. See on the internet: 'William Cramond Obituary, 24/6/04', *The Independent*, by Tam Dalyell.

Jim had had a long-term interest in moving to Sydney. He was tempted to be part of the Maddison experiment, but was concerned about the possible professional and geographic isolation of Newcastle, even though Sydney was not far away. Part of Sydney's attraction was its extensive cultural life, and Richard, Christopher and Andrew could continue living at home while attending university and school. The three boys had attended St Peter's College in Adelaide. Richard and Christopher were following their father into medicine in Adelaide, and were accepted by the University of Sydney. Andrew completed his schooling at Sydney Grammar School before studying chemical engineering at the University of NSW.

When Jim was appointed professor of medicine at the University of Sydney and foundation chair at the Repatriation General Hospital, Concord, in 1976, he gained his wish to be based in Sydney. In 1988, the 50th anniversary of The Royal Australasian College of Physicians (RACP) was marked by a publication, *To Follow Knowledge: A History of Examinations, Continuing Education and Specialist Affiliations of The Royal Australasian College of Physicians*⁸³. J. R. Lawrence was invited to write two of the chapters – 'The History of the Continuing Education Centre', and 'The History of the Australasian Society of Nephrology'.

At the inaugural planning meeting of the Australasian Society of Nephrology (ASN) in May 1965, Jim was elected on the interim council; the Society was to include graduates, medical and non-medical, interested in the renal system and its disorders. At the first AGM, in December 1965, Jim was elected vice-president. Priscilla Kincaid-Smith from Melbourne was secretary. They became respectively the second and third presidents of the ASN, played key roles in the development of nephrology as a new discipline in Australia. By 1967, the Society had 138 ordinary members. Jim, Dr Kincaid-Smith, and other representatives of the ASN collaborated with the urologists, a group of businessmen and others to establish an Australian Kidney Foundation in August 1968. Jim was on the board of directors of the Foundation 1969–2001 and was vice-president 1983–99. With others from the ASN, Jim was heavily involved in collaborating with the National Law Reform Commission to get legislative changes to facilitate renal transplantation. Dr Kincaid-Smith was elected president of the International Society of Nephrology 1972–75. By 1988, the ASN had over 300 ordinary members.

Medical education was a continuing major interest and activity for Jim well before joining the University of Sydney. He was a censor for the RACP 1968–79, and chairman of its written examinations committee 1974–79. As Roche Travelling Fellow, he visited the USA, Canada and the UK and negotiated exchange of written examination material with colleges in these countries. In his role as censor, he played a leading role in the introduction of modern assessment techniques in the college. Jim was honorary director and chairman of the college's board of continuing education 1982–88. He was head of the Department of Medicine at the University of Sydney 1988–91, and deputy chair of the academic board and chair of the committee for graduate studies

83 Edited by Josephine C. Wiseman, and published by the College in Sydney.

at the University 1992–98. A tribute at his last academic board meeting in 1998 said: ‘Jim Lawrence has unstintingly and generously given of his time, experience, unfailing tact and wisdom to the collegial life and good governance of the University’. In 1993, he was awarded an AO in the order of Australia – ‘for service to medical education and to nephrology’. In 1997, his colleagues subscribed to an oil portrait of him by the South Australian artist Robert Hannaford for the University of Sydney Art Collection.

For ten years from 1995, Jim was senior consultant advisor to the Universiti Sains Malaysia (USM) and the University of Sydney’s postgraduate exchange education program; he was awarded honorary doctorates by USM (2005) and by International Medical University in Kuala Lumpur (2016). From 2000 to 2004, he was on the academic council of the International Medical University of Malaysia. For four years from 1998, he was visiting professor (physician education) at Westmead Hospital in Sydney. Since 2002, he has been an emeritus professor of the University of Sydney. A fairly full account of his medical career can be seen at ‘biographies’ on the medical school’s website.

When Jim and Sheila and the boys came to Sydney in 1976, they found a house in Tennyson Avenue, Turramurra, not far from where we lived. It was in a most attractive location, set amongst magnificent tall trees, maples and gums, and had a creek with eels running at the western side of the property at the bottom of a large sloping area. The house had an outside terrace above the garage, an area ideal for entertainment. Underneath the house with access from the garage was a cellar which could house Jim’s wine collection. Extreme heat threatened to damage his wine in the transfer from Adelaide, but thankfully it survived. Jim and Sheila greatly enjoyed entertaining and the quality of their food and wine became legendary. Sheila was a ‘cordon bleu’ cook, and one of Jim’s pleasures was to go to the fish market and other markets available in Sydney.

One of their regular social events was to provide on Good Friday morning, batch after batch of hot cross buns, which they would make and cook for the very appreciative guests. The religious significance of the day was never referred to, and in fact, Jim once told me shortly after coming to Sydney that he did not think the claims made that Jesus was divine were valid. Most of the guests were medical friends and colleagues. We and our children, and the Walls and their children were also invited. As already mentioned, our relationship with the Wall family had started when we visited them in Newcastle in England in 1954 on our way to our continental tour. When I was doing my PhD, they had visited us in Canberra, and I had stayed with them in Sydney, and they provided us with a base for our house-hunting when we came to Sydney to live in 1961. Like their parents, the Wall children were clearly intelligent and individualistic. Geoffrey, the eldest, combined a medical career with acting. Tim’s father had been a doctor, and Tim himself related well to everyone. Jim set great store on keeping our immediate families in touch, and at Christmas our three families rotated having Christmas dinner together at our three homes. When it was the

turn of the Walls, often there would also be mathematical colleagues of Tim's.⁸⁴ These social contacts were, of course, occasionally interrupted when one or other of the families was involved in sabbatical leave, but over the years we had these periodic opportunities to see each other and appreciate the growth of the various family members and their partners, and of their children. Since 1986, we have had a holiday place at Pearl Beach, and Jim and Sheila have often joined us there for a week or two in January.

Jim and I have maintained our relationship over the years in good shape. We have shared a common appreciation of sport and classical music, our original Adelaide upbringing, our involvement in and concern for university affairs, our love of Sydney, and our international perspectives. At one stage, our mother watched us playing squash together in Sydney and was worried by the intensity of our competition, but this certainly did not worry us. He and I were accustomed to arguing about a variety of topics, but usually without rancour. Sometimes our respective wives would need to call a halt when they thought we were not getting anywhere and there were better things to do. Throughout his incredibly busy and demanding professional life, Jim has continued to read extensively in creative literature and poetry. I, on the other hand, have always given priority to reading history and political and social writing. The aesthetics of a good novel were certainly satisfying for me, and I always enjoyed material that was well written whatever the purpose, but I had a preference to read material more grounded in reality than imagination, and had a preference for good prose over most poetry. Dame Leonie Kramer, Chancellor of the University of Sydney, commended Jim for his knowledge of Australian literature, at his farewell dinner.⁸⁵

My Sister Margaret

From 1960 to 1964, my sister Margaret was a tutor in the Department of Economics at the University of Adelaide. She married Dean Southwood in May 1962, worked as a part-time co-ordinator for South Australia for a research firm, 1962–63, and was appointed assistant to the dean, Professor Peter Karmel, in 1964. In March 1964, she resigned from the department; her first child Ian was born in June 1964. She was chief examiner in the leaving economics supplementary examination in 1965. In June 1966, Marg and Dean's second child, Catherine, was born, and their third, Jennifer, in May 1969. In 1969/70, Marg did the index for the Karmel report on education in South Australia. She returned to teaching economics as a part-time tutor at Flinders University in 1970, and continued teaching there until her retirement in 2001. During the children's schooling she played a leading role in parental activity

84 G. E. (Tim) Wall was promoted to a chair in the Department of Pure Mathematics at the University of Sydney in 1965. He was president of the Australian Mathematical Society 1970–72, a fellow of the Australian Academy of Science in 1971, and an emeritus professor in 1991. His retirement in 1990 was marked by an impressive international seminar attended by colleagues from around the world.

85 She had been appointed to the first chair of Australian literature at the University in 1968. I was not impressed by her as a person, and neither apparently was Norma Parker who had had university contact with her, and I was not impressed by the negative impact her long and excessively dominant role as chancellor had had upon the university.

associated with the school, first at Mitcham Primary School and then at Scotch College. She was president of the latter's Parents and Friends Association, and 1980–85 was a member of the Scotch Council. In 1995, she joined the Kooyonga Golf Club and was the women's president 2006/7 and 2007/8.

Dean became a medical specialist and consultant in the ear, nose and throat department at Modbury Hospital. A member of the Otolaryngological Society of Australia from 1968, he was the state president 1987–88. His work made him acutely aware of the effects of smoking on people's health. From 1980, he presided over the Australian Council on Smoking and Health, and was a committee member of action on smoking and health 1986–88. Both Dean and Marg were always keenly interested in sport – tennis, golf, cricket and football, and Dean was heavily involved in both the Norwood Football Club and the East Torrens District Cricket Club. He was president of the latter from 1978, and in 1980 persuaded the club to reject money from tobacco sponsors, a world first for a senior cricket club. The club received wide public support for its action. I can recall that at one stage, Marg was very proud but also worried because Dean had to appear before a magistrate for defacing a tobacco advertisement as part of a Buga Up campaign to discredit tobacco companies. A conviction could have affected his medical registration. Fortunately he encountered a sympathetic magistrate who let him off with only a caution! In 1991, Dean Southwood was awarded an AM in the order of Australia – 'for service to medicine, particularly in the field of Oto-rhino-laryngology.

Marg and Dean lived in a comfortable home with a tennis court in Torrens Park in Adelaide. Out the back they kept the lawn in excellent condition so that once a year, it could be converted into a putting course of 18 holes on which the Deano cup was played. (The cup competition has been running for more than 25 years.) The Southwood home was only about half a mile from the Lawrence family home in Sussex Terrace, Hawthorn. Our parents, my mother in particular, appreciated Marg's family being so close, and this became especially important after my father died in 1975, and Jim's family moved away from Adelaide again, in 1976 (they had returned there from overseas in 1964). Grannie Lawrence was very much loved by all of her grandchildren, but it was the Southwood children who had the unbroken direct benefit of her interest and love as they grew up, whereas our children only saw her for brief periods when we visited Adelaide or she visited Sydney. Shortly after my father died, the Southwoods included my mother in a trip to Europe. As I have indicated, she always took a keen interest in the places her family visited overseas, but she herself had never been abroad – apart from a visit to New Zealand after Dad's retirement from the bank. My father had been quite content not to travel, except to visit us in Sydney and sometimes the Butlins in Melbourne.

My sister Marg was very close to our mother, and Jim and I were very grateful that Marg was living nearby in Adelaide during the later stages of my mother's life which ended in 1987. Although we have been geographically separated, both Jim and I have kept in touch with Marg by phone, and Marg has made a point of flying over for special family events like weddings and special birthdays. Like my mother, she is a much-loved and respected member of our family. Any tensions between Jim and her during our growing up years have been long forgotten.

The Gordon Family

Another important family connection for us has been with the Gordon family – at first with Anne and Murray Gordon and then also with their children, Penny, Susie and Prue. It will be recalled that Anne Gordon was Trish's older sister. We, of course, already knew Anne and Murray well in Adelaide before we went to England at the end of 1953. It will be recalled that we met them when they arrived in England and spent time with them in London, they had visited us in Oxford, we stayed with them in Melbourne on the way to Canberra, they visited us in Canberra in 1958, and we saw a fair amount of them in 1959 when we had the 3 months living in Heidelberg when I was collecting research material for my PhD. Murray's career in the ABC was now well on the way.

He shifted from the music department to the talks department – first in Melbourne and then in Sydney and was involved in producing radio and television programs on international affairs, science, literature and the arts, and federal and state elections. The Gordons moved to Sydney in the 1960s while we were living at Balgowlah Heights, and initially lived in a flat at Manly, before purchasing a home in a battle-axe block in Bobbin Head Road, Turramurra. In 1969, the Gordons had two years in Singapore. Murray managed the ABC offices in south-east Asia, Tokyo and New Delhi. Their two elder daughters, Penny and Susie, lived with us for a term at the end of this period, so that they could get on with their schooling at Abbotsleigh, before Murray's assignment was complete. Back in Sydney, Murray was involved in general management of a number of ABC departments, including the legal department. In 1974, he attended the advanced management course at the Australian Administrative Staff College at Mount Eliza in Victoria. From 1975 to 1980, he completed his law degree at Macquarie University while working full-time for the ABC, and was admitted as a solicitor of the supreme court of New South Wales in 1981. He was deputy to the controller of administrative services when he resigned from the ABC in 1981; he was aged 52.

We admired Murray's courage and tenacity to successfully change his career at this stage of his life. 1982 to 1985, he gained experience in legal practice and in the administration of a legal office. The Gordons bought a house at Bateman's Bay on the south coast of New South Wales, 280 kilometres from Sydney, in anticipation that Murray could practice law there and he and Anne could spend their retirement years in a very attractive location. Murray commenced legal practice in Bateman's Bay, and when we visited them, we could appreciate the attraction of their particular home overlooking the sea and of the area. They had made some good friends like Alan Stretton and his wife. The location was, however, too isolated and isolating. The town of Batemans Bay had less than 10,000 people. They eventually returned to Sydney, living in a very comfortable town house in a row of attached two-story town houses in Coonanbarra Road, near the Wahroonga railway station. From 1986 to 1995, Murray was a lecturer in commercial and property law in the College of Law in Sydney. In 1994, he was awarded his master of laws degree from the University of Technology Sydney, with a thesis on journalists' confidentiality.

Mrs Laurie lived out the later years of her life in the same row of town-houses

as the Gordons, but outlived both of them. She was an impressive person and we saw her periodically until she finally died fairly recently. Murray's father had died fairly young and he himself always anticipated he would go before his beloved Anne, but in fact Anne was diagnosed with pancreatic cancer and died soon after. One of my saddest memories is being with them when they were told the news about the cancer. (I had driven them to the specialist's rooms.) Anne asked us to go food shopping with Murray to prepare him for her absence. Murray spent his final days in a nursing home in Canberra, close to the family of his second daughter Susie. His children kept a flat in Canberra so that they could spend time with Murray. Whenever we visited he seemed reasonably content, sustained by his expectation that he would soon be joining 'Annabel'. His religious faith remained firm, and his lifetime interest in music, especially choral and baroque orchestral music, continued to give him at least some enjoyment.

Trish and Anne had always kept in touch, and Trish missed greatly their regular phone calls. Just how wide a circle of friends Anne developed in Sydney was shown at her funeral at St James in Turramurra which was packed. After Murray died, his ashes were placed beside Anne's in a memorial area underneath St James, King Street, in the city. In their later years in Sydney, Murray's mother came to live nearby, first as a live-in companion with different people, then in a unit in the Anglican Rohini Village in Turramurra, and finally in a nursing home. Our family saw her periodically during this period and she clearly enjoyed spending the time with us.

ORGAN PLAYING

When the Gordons left their home in Bobbin Head Road and were down-sizing, Murray was going to dump all of his organ music. I was horrified and said I would be happy to take it. In the course of being deputy organist and choirmaster at St Peter's Cathedral in Adelaide 1945–57, Murray had accumulated an impressive array of organ music – German (a great deal of Bach), English, French and Italian. Included was a piece to celebrate the end of the war, composed and signed by Canon Finnis the organist and choirmaster who was his teacher. In 2011, I passed on most of this collection to Peter Kneeshaw. He thought it was a very interesting collection and was very happy he could share it with his students and could well play some of it himself. Peter Kneeshaw was the local organist at St James Church, Turramurra, when I began playing the organ again in the mid-1970s. For the next 35 years, except when we were overseas, I played once a month for the early communion service. I already had my own collection of organ music from my earlier organ-playing years and had added a bit to it, but with Murray's collection I could occasionally choose a new piece to learn and play at the service.

Peter Kneeshaw was a fine organist. In 1977, the old organ at St James was removed and a new organ was installed, using the pipes of four of the stops of the original organ. The organ now had 6 sounding stops on the great, 8 on the swell (including a trumpet), and 5 on the pedal. In July 1979, it

was dedicated by Owen Dykes, rector at St James 1966–77. Peter Kneeshaw oversaw the design of the new organ which was rebuilt by Anthony Welby. Playing it was a pleasure, although it took many years before there was enough money to connect the pistons that had been installed. The organ was small enough anyway to change the stops by hand. Peter Kneeshaw went on to be the organist at Christchurch St Laurence in the city. In contrast to the conservative evangelical character of most of the Anglican diocese of Sydney, this had long been a church within the Anglo-Catholic tradition of Anglicanism, and had a much more liberal and theologically diverse stance than the diocese on certain issues.⁸⁶ From there he was appointed organist of the Catholic St Mary's Cathedral and also organist at Knox Grammar School in Wahroonga. He was organist consultant for St Mary's Cathedral when a new pipe organ was installed in 1999.

86 See its website.



Trish, Peter, David, John - Balgowlah Heights home, 1961



Trish, Susie G, Anne Gordon, Penny G, Mary Berry, Ruth, David, Dean Berry, Peter - Ruth's christening, Balgowlah Hts., 1961



John and Ruth - 1961



Trish, Peter, David & Ruth, with Lawrence grandparents, Hawthorn, Adelaide



Trish with Ruth - Golden Grove, 1962



Ruth, David, Peter - backyard, Balgowlah Heights, 1962



David, Ruth, Trish - Toowoyn Bay, 1962



With Mary Berry and overseas student, 1962



Ruth



Peter



David – Hawthorn back garden, Adelaide



Ruth – Balgowlah Heights, 1963



Peter and David painting – backyard, January 1963



Peter and David painting – backyard, Golden Grove, Adelaide Hills, 1963



RJL, David Prest and children, Oct. 1964



Picnic with Jim and Sheila, and family, 1964



Peter, David, Timmie (our dog), Margaret Berry, Ruth, Trish - climbing bars, backyard, Balgowlah Heights, 1965



Ruth's 4th birthday, 1965



Birthday party, Balgowlah Heights, 1965



Peter, Ruth, Trish - Golden Grove, 1965



Peter, Ruth, David, 'Pa' Berry, and horse - Golden Grove, 1965



Ruth, Trish, Dean Berry, Peter, Amy Berry, David, Catherine Berry - 4 generations, 1965



Grannie L, Jim, Richard, Chris, Ian Southwood, Andrew, Sheila, Peter, Dean S, Marg S, David, Trish, Ruth, Grandpa L - Hawthorn, 1965



Peter, Ruth, Trish, David – Granite Island, Victor Harbour, 1965



Spencer and Hazel Colliver and their children, Trish and our children – Hibiscus Farm, 1966



With Lawrence grandparents - Dobroyd Point lookout, Sydney Harbour, 1968



David, Peter, and Ruth; Prue, Penny and Susie G – Balgowlah Heights home, 1968



Back row: Fully (Anne Linklater), Trish, Catherine Berry, Murray and Anne Gordon, Dean Berry, Peter Linklater. Front row: James and Janet L, Susie G, Ruth, Peter, Penny and Prue G, David – Linklater's home, Randwick



Sydney Opera House under construction, 1968



Emus on the drive to Adelaide from Sydney, 1968



Chaffee Bros Museum, Renmark – Ruth on steam tractor, 1968

Chapter 5

A Year to Remember

Sabbatical Leave

The conditions of my appointment to the University of Sydney included a reference to sabbatical leave:

In order to encourage research and to maintain teaching standards, one year's sabbatical leave may be granted every seven years or thereabouts. The University provides a Travel Grant in addition to full salary.

My seventh year of appointment would be 1967. One was expected to go overseas – and in my case to North America where the most advanced schools of social work existed, but I knew it would be a considerable challenge to make this a productive and enjoyable year not only for me and my work but also for my wife and family living in another country. As I have indicated, 1967 turned out to be a memorable year for all of us, not least because of the general social turmoil of the times – the war on poverty, the race riots, Vietnam, student unrest. I wrote to my parents on 18 December, 1967:

Saying goodbye to people whom you have got to know well and some of whom you may not see again is an unhappy business. ... I won't forget much of this year for a long time.¹

Seeking an Appropriate Location for a Sabbatical

I could have approached one of the schools of social work with at least some experience of Australians – Chicago, Columbia (New York), and Smith, but decided I should get up-to-date local knowledge of the most appropriate options and not just follow a beaten track. I therefore wrote, in September 1965, to Dr Katherine Kendall, executive director of the Council on Social Work Education in New York, in these terms:

... I would be most grateful for your suggestions on where in North America I might best be centred and from whom I might seek financial assistance. I will be accompanied by my wife and three children who in 1967 will turn 9, 7 and 6. For

¹ Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 18/12/67.

the sake of my family I wish to settle in the one place, even though I will most likely need to spend some of my time visiting people and institutions in other parts of the country.

As you may know, professional social work education in Australia is provided only at the undergraduate level. Sydney University's social work course is now a four-year basic professional degree, and within this course I have the major responsibility for the teaching of social administration. Following what is understood in Britain by this term, this covers the philosophy, organisation and historical development of social services and social policies. Social welfare administration, concerned with the application of organisation theory to social welfare agencies, is seen as part of social administration, and so far, only a small part. In 1961, I was appointed to the first Australian academic appointment in social administration, with the specific mandate to develop the subject within this country.

During my year in North America, I will, of course, be interested to examine the way in which the teaching about the social services and in social welfare administration is undertaken. I will spend most of my time, however, on work connected with a major research project which I am about to commence and which I anticipate will take some years to result in publication.

Briefly the aims of the project are:

1. To produce a systematic account of basic historical and contemporary data on social administration in Australia.
2. To compile an Australian Social Welfare Index.
3. To select and have published annotated documents especially relevant to Australian social administration.

The object is to lay the foundation for future sound interpretative work. The selected data will be presented in a systematic way, much of it in tables and diagrammatically. The key to the success of this project lies in an adequate frame of reference within which the data will be collected and eventually presented.

I wish to spend most of my twelve months' study leave examining the way in which other people in other places have tackled this kind of task. This means I need to be located in North America (a) where I have access to the most appropriate collections of social welfare literature, and (b) where I can discuss the project with others with similar interests.

I have applied to the newly-established Australian Research Grants Committee for research assistance on the project in 1966, and hope to have spent a year's work on the project before coming to America. ...

I have written in similar exploratory terms to Dr Nathan Cohen,² University of California at Los Angeles, and to Professor Elizabeth Govan, Toronto School of Social Work.³

Nathan Cohen suggested three schools and three people who could be helpful – Western Reserve University (Dean Herman Stein), University of

2 I had a high regard for his published work, and Len Tierney and Battle Battle had urged me to write to him. He had edited *Social Work and Social Problems*, published by the NASW in 1964.

3 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Katherine A. Kendall, 20/9/65. I enclosed selected details of my educational and professional career.

Chicago (Dean Alton Linford), and Columbia (Professor Eveline Burns). He also said he and Don Howard might be of some help at UCLA and they would enjoy having me there. What kind of financial assistance would I need? He would be on an assignment in Hong Kong, February to July 1966.⁴ I responded very positively to UCLA with Cohen and Howard, and from a family viewpoint, California would mean less of an upheaval and climate advantages. I indicated that I would need about \$5,000, a figure I reached after discussion with Mrs Miriam Prince, a former associate professor in social work at Ohio State University, now on the staff in our department. I was going to apply for an Australian-American Educational Foundation travel grant, and had to cite evidence of admission to an American university and adequate dollar support while I was there. I indicated my other exploratory letters were also bringing responses, but I would not pursue these if I knew I was definitely going to UCLA.⁵ Professor Cohen wrote me a hurried note in November that financing did not look good and the other schools for a variety of reasons were in a better position to be helpful.

In my exploratory letter to Professor Govan at the University of Toronto, I asked about the possibility of a research grant from the Harry M. Cassidy Memorial Research Fund. Betty Govan had been the first director of the school at the University of Sydney in the war years, and Norma Parker suggested I might write to her about the possibilities at the Toronto school. (Professor David Donnison, the British social policy scholar whose work I admired had received a Cassidy fund grant.) Professor Govan passed on my letter to the secretary of the Cassidy fund. 'Your long-term plan for research is a very interesting one and I hope you are successful in your undertaking.'⁶ The director of the Toronto school, Professor Charles Hendrey, wrote to me on 20 October. He had consulted with several of his senior colleagues and they were unanimous in wishing to explore possibilities with me, but Cassidy funds were rather limited. Possibly I might receive a token grant from the fund and a modest honorarium for some teaching in the school scheduled to allow me travel to achieve my overall objectives. He would be away on a sabbatical from the end of December until July 1966. Professor Govan had been pleased to receive my letter.⁷

In my reply, I explained what my general financial position would be. I would continue to receive my full salary which would be at a senior lecturer's level of about £3,300. In addition I should receive a travel grant of £700, which would almost cover our fares one way. I would need to find funds for the return fares, the necessary travel connected with my work, and if possible, to purchase relevant literature. How much teaching did he have in mind? While I would appreciate the opportunity of such experience, I would prefer my prime

4 Letter, Nathan E. Cohen, professor of social welfare, to R. J. Lawrence, 14/10/65.

5 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to N. E. Cohen, 26/10/65.

6 Letter, Elizabeth S. L. Govan to R. J. Lawrence, 7/10/65. She asked me to send her a copy of my history of professional social work in Australia and wished to be remembered to Norma Parker and other staff members. (Norma had in fact intended to send her a copy when it was published, but had not. She now rectified this.)

7 Letter, Charles E. Hendrey to R. J. Lawrence, 20/10/65.

focus to remain on my research.⁸ In February 1966, I received a letter from Toronto. The advisory faculty committee of the Cassidy fund had met. They were interested and wanted to explore the possibility of me teaching a social services seminar for a couple of terms, applying for a Cassidy fund grant to cover travel costs for work on this continent, and seeking a research grant from the Canada Council and help from the Nuffield Foundation for travel costs to and from Australia to Canada.⁹ I delayed replying waiting for correspondence about possibilities in the United States, but did make enquiries about the possible assistance mentioned. None of these was fruitful. Finally, in June 1966, I thanked Toronto faculty members for their interest and told them I would be spending my sabbatical year at the University of Michigan School of Social Work in Ann Arbor.¹⁰ How did this come about?

My letter to Dr Kendall at the Council on Social Work Education in New York in September 1965 arrived just before she left for a period of extended leave.¹¹ She asked her secretary to forward it to Mrs Susan Pettiss, the international social welfare adviser at the international office of the welfare administration of the Department of Health, Education and Welfare (HEW) in Washington. This office helped persons from other countries interested in assignments in the United States. This did not seem promising!

On 16 November, I sent an exploratory letter to Dean Herman Stein at the School of Applied Social Sciences (SAAS), Western Reserve University, in Cleveland, Ohio. I appreciated Herman Stein's writing, the School was highly regarded, and I had Dr Cohen's suggestion that I contact him. He replied on 7 December. Almost simultaneously, he had received my letter and a letter from Mr Foehrenbach, social administration adviser in the Welfare Administration, summarising my request and encouragement for them to cooperate. Herman Stein was very happy to have me there and could assure me of facilities for my work, but they had no university funds available to support my stay. Mr Foehrenbach had mentioned resources in Washington were being explored.¹²

Mr Foehrenbach wrote to me on 9 December. Dr Kendall had sent my inquiry to them and they wished to be of assistance in my search for a university in the United States where I could pursue my proposed research project. So far they had written to six schools of social work – Brandeis, Columbia, Michigan (Ann Arbor), Minnesota, Pittsburgh, and Western Reserve. They were also exploring sources of funds for my program. They realised I needed to be informed as early as possible on whether my proposed program was possible.¹³

On 14 December, he again wrote. He had heard from five schools, and the two most promising prospects appeared to be the University of Minnesota and

8 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Charles E. Hendrey, 16/11/65.

9 Letter, Mrs F. C. Stakhovsky to R. J. Lawrence, 4/2/66.

10 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Mrs Florence C. Strakhovsky, 7/6/66.

11 She was having serious eye surgery, I learnt later. As will unfold in my story, Katherine Kendall was to become not only a remarkable social work colleague at the international level, whom I got to know and appreciate first-hand, but also a good friend.

12 Letter, Herman D. Stein to R. J. Lawrence, 7/12/65.

13 Letter, Arthur J. Foehrenbach to R. J. Lawrence, 9/12/65.

the University of Michigan (Ann Arbor). Both schools had excellent resources for my purpose. The University of Michigan was particularly interested in my area of inquiry and it had developed curricula at both the master's and doctoral levels. The problem which all schools shared was that they did not have funds for my year of study. There was always the possibility that I could be employed as a part-time lecturer. Yet, as the schools recognised, this would take time away from my research efforts. Mr Foehrenbach wondered if I had explored the possibility of a Fulbright? He gave me the addresses of the deans of both the Michigan and Minnesota schools, if I wished to write to them. On 21 December, Mr Foehrenbach sent a positive letter he had received from Dean William McCullough at Pittsburgh. 'Dr Samuel Mencher is in Manchester, England this year to broaden his potential in the social welfare sequence and might well be of value to Dr Lawrence. ... Furthermore, we could benefit by having Dr Lawrence here.' Financial help was quite limited, but he could probably offer me the opportunity to earn about \$2,000 to \$2,500 by part-time teaching.¹⁴

On 29 December, he sent me copies of the letters he had received from Michigan and Minnesota. 'At this point we do not see any sources of funds for you from agencies in Washington.' Perhaps a favourable combination would be part-time employment and a Fulbright grant from Australia if possible. At Minnesota, I could be received as an honorary fellow with office space, tuition free attendance at classes and seminars, and access to the University library which was a depository of all government publications and rich in holdings on social services and social welfare administration. However, they had no subsistence funds available for me.¹⁵ The Michigan letter indicated they were willing to investigate a part-time lecturer appointment, but wondered if I might be eligible for a Fulbright grant or a fellowship from one of the national foundations. This would leave me free to pursue my study on a full-time basis.¹⁶

On 13 January, I wrote to Herman Stein at Western Reserve in Cleveland. I had applied for a Fulbright grant, but the scheme had been reconstituted as the Australian-American Educational Foundation and it only provided for Australians a very limited number of travel grant awards, not additional supporting funds. A travel grant would only cover my fares and not those of my family. I had unsuccessfully made various other enquiries about financial assistance and it seemed that I would have to try to earn the extra money we needed by teaching while in the U.S. Both the Universities at Pittsburgh and Michigan had put forward the possibility of some part-time teaching as well as providing research facilities for me. I wished to follow up both these leads, the Michigan one in particular, but first did Stein have any suggestions on finding supporting funds, and was there any chance of part-time teaching at Western Reserve to supplement my funds?¹⁷ Stein knew of no sources of supporting funds that I had not already explored and could offer the possibility of no more

14 Letter, William H. McCullough to Arthur J. Foehrenbach, 13/12/65.

15 Letter, John C. Kidneigh to Arthur J. Foehrenbach, 6/12/65.

16 Letter, Fedele Fauri to Arthur J. Foehrenbach, 8/12/65.

17 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Herman D. Stein, 13/1/66.

than \$2,000 income from part-time teaching. 'I do hope, however, that you do not find yourself in a position where the necessity for earning money prevents you from fulfilling your research objectives.'¹⁸

I informed Herman Stein in June 1966, that I would be spending my sabbatical year in 1967 at Michigan. I would have a half-time faculty teaching appointment and I had been recommended for a travel award by the Australian-American Foundation. 'We should, then, be free of financial worries – although at the price of some diversion from my research. ... After careful thought, I decided to play safe financially and chose Michigan because it had an offer of more part-time teaching.'¹⁹ At the same time I wrote to Mr Foehrenbach thanking him for all of his efforts on my behalf. 'While the teaching commitment will be a major diversion from my research, I anticipate that it will be a most valuable experience, as well as being financially necessary.'²⁰

Correspondence with Michigan

On 3 February, I explained my situation to Dean Fauri, and asked to hear about any financial support and/or part-time teaching, sending him selected details of my educational and professional career. I wrote again on 21 March seeking a response, and indicating that I preferred coming to Ann Arbor over other possibilities emerging. Dean Fauri gave my letters to Rosemary Sarri for reply. She apologised for the delay but the state legislature in Michigan had not yet appropriated the University budget for the 1966–67 year, so they were uncertain about funds which would be available for employment of persons such as myself. After reviewing my vita, it definitely appeared that my interests were in agreement with a number of persons on their faculty.

We are currently engaged in expanding the Master's program in Administration, both in terms of curriculum content and the number of students enrolled in it. We also have a specialization in the organizational area in the joint Doctoral program in Sociology and Social Work. In addition, several faculty are or have been, engaged in administrative and organizational research in a variety of welfare bureaucracies. Furthermore, there are several faculty in the departments of Sociology and Political Science and in the Institutes of Social Research and Public Administration whose interests are closely related to those of your own. It, therefore, appears that you could accomplish your objectives here.

... about financial support, the University does not have available any grants for which you would be eligible to apply. If you need approximately \$4,000 – \$5,000 supplementary support this appears to be possible only through employment on a part-time basis in either teaching or research. ... We would hope to have information on employment ... before April 30, 1966.

I am sure that you could make a valuable contribution to our school and would hope that the experience would be equally worthwhile for you.²¹

18 Letter, Herman D. Stein to R. J. Lawrence, 26/1/66.

19 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Herman D. Stein, 7/6/66.

20 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Arthur J. Foehrenbach, 7/6/66. I told him I had also thanked Dr Kendall, Dean Stein, and Dean McCullough.

21 Letter, Rosemary C. Sarri to R. J. Lawrence, 7/4/66. Copies went to Dean Fauri and to Dean Vinter.

I replied that it was now obvious it was not possible for me to be free of teaching commitments. I would be most interested in a part-time faculty position, and could see considerable advantages in becoming an integral part of the school. If the school was able to offer me a position after its budget had been determined, I intended to take it and would feel grateful for the experience it provided. The Australian-American Educational Foundation was recommending me for one of its senior travel grants which would cover my fares, but I needed, not later than 12 June, to supply them with, 'the original letter indicating affiliation with an American university . . . , and official evidence of possessing sufficient dollars for maintenance in the United States.' On 2 May, Associate Dean Robert Vinter informed me that Dean Fauri was willing to recommend my appointment as a lecturer on a part-time basis, with a salary set at not less than \$5,000 and not more than \$6,000, provided he received three satisfactory references, at least one from a senior member of my current institution. My teaching duties would probably be in the Social Services or Administration sequences of the professional curriculum. He would send me materials about courses so I could indicate preferences for specific teaching and related assignments. Dean Vinter described what was expected of full-time faculty members in teaching and other assignments. The faculty was hard-working but had sufficient time to pursue scholarly activities and other matters of professional concern. In my case all of these would be adjusted to fit my half-time status. In a subsequent letter on 6 May, he said the winter term commenced on January 2 in 1967, and that it would be helpful if I could arrive on or as soon after that date as possible to begin my teaching duties. If this was not possible they would plan temporary arrangements until my arrival. The uncertainty about the exact figure of my salary was because the final budget of the school had not yet been determined, but this did not suggest any hesitation about the appointment, provided satisfactory references were received.

On 9 May I sent him a completed personnel form for the University, and told him Associate Professor Tom Brennan and Associate Professor Norma Parker had agreed to send references direct to Dean Fauri. I had also written to Len Tierney, director of the Department of Social Studies at the University of Melbourne, who was in New York on sabbatical leave, and was confident he would agree to send a reference to Dean Fauri.²² I had made a tentative ship booking and that would mean arriving towards the end of January, but it was possible to change this to an air booking which would allow me to start at the beginning of January, although it would mean rather a rush because I would be engaged in marking and examination results until shortly before Christmas.

Tom Brennan's reference for Dean Fauri was very supportive:

... Dr Lawrence has been teaching a course in Social Administration (although described as Social Theory 11 in our Calendar) in this Department since the course was incorporated as a permanent unit in our teaching scheme. The plan of the course was devised by Dr Lawrence himself and most of the material is being

22 My referees were heads of three of the Australian schools of social work – at the University of Sydney, at UNSW, and at the University of Melbourne.

taught in this Department for the first time. I think he is a skilled teacher; has the kind of comparative knowledge of social welfare provision in other countries which would make him a valuable member of your own staff, and that you would find him in every way a helpful colleague to have in your Department ...²³

Len Tierney wrote on 11 May that he had sent off the referee's letter to Ann Arbor.

I am very pleased to know that you will have a year in North America. I feel it will be most valuable professionally and it gave me real pleasure to write on your behalf.²⁴

On 4 July, I wrote to Dean Vinter.²⁵ It was becoming urgent to have a confirmation of my appointment so that my travel award could be finally approved from Washington, and also I was keen to know what my teaching commitments would be. We would now be arriving by air at Detroit airport on 4 January, and would be returning by ship on 3 January, 1968.²⁶ Dean Fauri responded on 8 July that I would be appointed as a lecturer on a half-time basis during the Winter Term in 1967 and the Fall Term in 1967, with a salary set at \$3,000 per term.²⁷ 'Be assured that the Ann Arbor public schools are of excellent quality', he wrote. My appointment was confirmed on 18 July by Alan Smith, the vice-president for academic affairs, so my travel award documents could be completed and sent on to Washington for final approval.

I had further correspondence with the School about my visa classification, tax status,²⁸ social security number, our housing and the children's schooling. On 24 August I notified Dean Fauri that my travel grant from the Australian American Educational Foundation had been confirmed and that I had received a completed visa form from the Foundation for a non-immigrant exchange visitor.

Housing in Ann Arbor

Fedele Fauri said housing was tight in Ann Arbor, but there was the possibility of some vacancies occurring at the opening of the January term as faculty members went on sabbatical or other leaves of absence. He suggested I write to Mrs Knapp, the University housing advisor, and let him know what kind of accommodation we were interested in, as someone in the School might know of possible vacancies. I indicated to Mrs Knapp that we would like 'a modest 3-bedroom fully furnished house' for our stay, within reasonable reach of a public primary school. If there was any chance of exchanging houses with someone coming to Sydney on sabbatical, I could give her details about our home in Sydney.²⁹ Mrs Knapp said there seemed to be more people coming

23 Letter, T. Brennan to Dean Fedele F. Fauri, 10/5/66.

24 Letter, Len Tierney to John Lawrence, 11/5/66.

25 Letter, John Lawrence to Robert D. Vinter, 4/7/66.

26 Returning within 12 months gave a 10% fare reduction for Trish and the children.

27 Letter, F. F. Fauri to R. John Lawrence, 8/7/66.

28 I learnt from a US Treasury publication that I would be exempt from US income tax by a tax treaty between the US and Australia. This was confirmed by Roy Gaunt after consultation with the University's payroll department.

29 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Mrs Knapp, 24/8/66.

in than going out, even in furnished houses for faculty members. Four faculty houses with the required space and availability to schools, were currently listed, and were in the \$200 to \$250 per month rental category exclusive of utilities, available until late August. Another was available until mid-June. We would have to find another house for the fall term. Could we authorise someone in the School to make a decision for us?

Dean Fauri asked his assistant Roy Gaunt to help us secure suitable housing and he could not have been more helpful. Mrs Knapp sent Roy a list of homes and he chose three which were in walking distance of a good primary school for the children and of the school of social work. He told us he could advertise in the local newspaper for a rental for the full year, but questioned whether this would be effective so he urged us to consider the homes listed and indicate our preferences.³⁰ We asked him to make an immediate decision on our behalf, after he had had a look at the accommodation. Our first preference was the home of Professor James Kister. This was available to the end of June or perhaps August, 1967, at \$200 per month rental.

If we take the Kister house we could perhaps have a period of 3 weeks or so in July away from Ann Arbor, returning in August to be ready for my teaching commitments in Fall term.³¹

1508 Shadford Road, Ann Arbor

On 30 September, Roy Gaunt reported that he had visited the Kister home and believed it would prove suitable for our needs. Professor Kister was in the University's Mathematics Department and would be in the Mathematics Department at the University of California at Los Angeles during the period of the lease. The exact date of his return was somewhat variable but certainly would not be until Spring. Roy Gaunt provided us with a helpful general description:

This is a brick home, modest but comfortable in an area of similar homes. The elementary school is three blocks away and a shopping area is within a couple of blocks.

Furnishings are again modest but comfortable, neat and clean. The kitchen is fully equipped, including a dishwasher. There is a master-bedroom, a bedroom which would be appropriate for your two boys, and a third (currently used as a study by Mr Kister) which would be suitable for your daughter. There is a full bath on the second floor, a half-bath on the ground floor.

The Kisters plan to leave bedding, dishes, and utensils for your use, as well as tentatively planning to leave bicycles and other large toys belonging to their children.

On 5 October, Professor Kister wrote with a fuller description of the house and its appliances. In the past when they had rented the house, the rentor paid for small bills for minor repairs that might arise, and for the utilities

³⁰ Letter, Roy W. Gaunt to R. J. Lawrence, 19/9/66.

³¹ Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Roy W. Gaunt, 26/9/66.

– electricity, gas, and telephone. The neighbourhood had many trees, especially pretty in the Spring. There were three large ones on the property. The Burns Park School was widely regarded as the best in town and he believed it to be.³² On 20 October, he had received our signed lease for five months from 1 January 1967, and requested that we send a month's rent as a damage deposit which we could consider a deposit to hold the house as well. He also requested payment of the first month's rent any time prior to 1 January, when it was due.³³ Just before leaving their house in mid-December, Sue Kister told us she would be leaving the key with their next-door neighbours, and that they had decided to leave all the utilities in their name. This would save us the usual nuisance of being without heat, light or water until the various companies could connect them. They would send off the bills to us as they arrived. She would leave a note with various instructions about the house in the house.³⁴

On 31 March, Jim Kister wrote that they would probably not be back until July and we could count on having the house until June 20 when we planned to leave Ann Arbor for a summer camping trip to see some of North America and four lots of our friends. He commented:

I admire your courage in camping out in strange lands, and am wondering whether we might do the same upon leaving here and heading north in the mountains. We don't yet have the equipment, let alone the experience.³⁵

1306 Olivia Avenue, Ann Arbor

On 10 March, we paid a deposit of \$100 and signed a lease with Mrs Barbara Hammitt to rent a house at 1306 Olivia Avenue, for five months from 1 August. The woman at the first home we briefly considered was excessively worried about cleaning and possible damage, so we decided to look elsewhere. (Her husband rang Phil Booth to ask about us. Phil told him they had had our children there and hadn't had to call in the decorators afterwards!) Mrs Hammitt had offered their house to a niece, but the niece said not to worry, because she would not know if she wanted it until May, so we were fortunate.³⁶ The house was just opposite the children's school, it had friendly neighbours and Syd and Ruth Bernard and their children lived just around the corner. Syd was one of my closest colleagues at work. The Hammitts had two boys and a girl. Their house had four bedrooms, study, sitting room, dining room, kitchen, and in the basement, a television and children's sitting room, and a table tennis table. The rooms were fairly small but nicely furnished and it all looked very comfortable. "Pongo", a pointer dog, came with the house. He lived indoors with a big armchair to himself, but also had a small enclosed outside yard. Professor Hammitt was taking sabbatical leave with his family.

The University had had no available houses when we were searching, but we had asked at the Burns Park School about any movement of families. Having

32 Letter, J. M. Kister to R. J. Lawrence, 5/10/66.

33 Letter, J. M. Kister to R. J. Lawrence, 20/10/66.

34 Letter, Sue Kister to Mr and Mrs R. J. Lawrence, 13/12/66.

35 Letter, Jim Kister to John Lawrence, 31/3/67.

36 Letter, P. D. Lawrence to John's parents, 15/3/67.

our housing settled for the later part of the year was a relief.

Professor Hammitt was a nuclear physicist at the University, and underneath his study was a nuclear bomb shelter equipped with food. In the study was a list of things to do in the last 5 minutes! Burns Park School notified us of the procedures in the event of a nuclear attack – and of a cyclone. The international situation became very tense at the time of the Six Day War in June 1967, when the Israelis launched a preventative attack on Arab nations. The air forces of Egypt, Jordan and Iraq were all but destroyed on the first day, 5 June. By 7 June, Israelis had destroyed many Egyptian tanks in the Sinai Desert and had reached the Suez Canal, and they had cleared the west bank of the Jordan River of Jordanian forces. The Golan Heights were captured and Israeli forces moved 30 miles into Syria. The war gave Israel great strategic advantage over its perceived enemies, but also resulted in a long-term alienation of many young Arabs now under Israeli administration.³⁷ I watched the live debates in the United Nations on television during this period, and remember in particular the remarkable performance of the Israeli foreign minister Abba Eban. Many of the faculty of the School of Social Work were Jewish, and a petition was quickly distributed for signatures to send to the US government, urging it to support Israel's actions and if necessary become directly involved. At least one of the students left immediately to fight in the Israeli army.

Burns Park School

I wrote to Miss Marion Cranmore the principal of Burns Park School on 22 November 1966, telling her of our arrival in January 1967 and giving her details of our children. In a warm welcoming letter, she said Ruth could enter the kindergarten morning session and begin full-time in the first grade in September. With the boys, she would test them before making a definite grade placement. The term after the winter recess lasted from 3 January to 7 June, with the week of 3 April the spring vacation.³⁸

Health Insurance

As a recipient of my US government travel grant, I received sickness and accident insurance cover with Plymouth Insurance Company for the period of the grant including the time required to travel from and to my home country. As suggested because of the high cost of medical services in the USA, I took out equivalent cover for my family, and also additional cover for all of us for major medical expenses in excess of \$1,000 up to \$4,000 for any single illness or accident. Because of my social policy concerns, I was very much aware of this great gap in the US social security arrangements – a gap still to be addressed adequately.

Generally, we stayed reasonably healthy during 1967, apart from the one episode of significant illness which I experienced shortly after my arrival in Ann Arbor. Trish had to collect me from the School when I was very unwell.

³⁷ See on the internet, 'history learning site.co.uk/six day war 1967'.

³⁸ Letter, Marion Cranmore to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 30/11/66.

Because American doctors did not make house calls, she rang the surgery and received a wrong diagnosis of intestinal flu over the phone. Eventually, she tackled the icy roads and drove me to the surgery where I was quickly diagnosed with infectious hepatitis and spent from 31 January to 8 February in St Joseph Mercy Hospital – at a charge of \$472. Phil Booth, with whom I was co-teaching, rang me straight away to tell me not to worry about my work, and his wife Mary called on Trish the next day to make sure we had medical insurance and that Trish had enough cash! We also heard that some of my students in the School wanted to know if we were alright financially.

Our actual experience with the insurance company used by the State Department to cover Fulbright scholars turned out to be rather unpleasant. Despite carefully following the required procedures, and writing a number of follow-up letters, we were eventually threatened in June with a visit by the debt collector! I then contacted a Fulbright official in Washington and she quickly rectified the situation. We were concerned about this incident not only because it wasted time and nervous energy, but also because it made it appear the Australians did not pay their bills!³⁹

We discovered our good friend Beth Ward who gave us a farewell party just before we left Australia also had had infectious hepatitis and this was the obvious source of infection. Beth recovered quite quickly and so did I. I was back teaching within about three weeks but had to take it easy until I had fully recovered. To have this happen so early in my teaching program was a blow, but the School and my colleagues could not have been more supportive. They easily and willingly covered my teaching until I could return.

Flying to Ann Arbor and Settling In

Trish's family – the Gordons and her parents who were staying with them, gave us a great send-off at the Sydney airport on 3 January. I purchased a watch and electric shaver from the export shop. We did not get much sleep on the flight to Hawaii, arriving at 8am, but the service on the Pan Am plane was good. After a delay of about three and a half hours, we arrived at San Francisco at about 8pm. An American Airlines official met us and checked our booking for next morning and also booked in our cases. Fortunately our hotel was right beside the airport and we had the children in bed by about 10pm. They were amazed by the great length of the cars we saw at the airport (the 'Yank Tanks', as they called them), and by the size of the 'sandwiches' we ordered in the hotel. We left by plane for Detroit at 8.30am and had quite good views of the snow-clad Rockies on the way across. After a three and a half hour flight we arrived at 3.30pm. Three cases we had sent ahead took a while to locate. Eventually we drove the 40 miles to Ann Arbor in a taxi. With all our luggage it would have cost as much by bus. The traffic seemed to move very fast and, of course, on the wrong side of the road!

The Kister house was not large but it was comfortable; it had two stories

39 For the sake of other Fulbright Scholars, I mentioned this incident in my report to the Australian-Educational Foundation at the end of the year.

and a basement, and was about 30 years old. Thankfully the central heating was on when we arrived. The weather was below freezing until about mid-January when there was a bit of a thaw. At first we found ourselves getting very dried out with the central heating. The American habit of a glass of iced water at meals quickly became understandable. The house was in a pleasant area, and shops, school, bank etc were quite handy although it was about a half an hour walk (in the ice and snow) to the School of Social Work. Generally, things started early. For example, the typists at work were there at 8am, and the children were at school by 8.30am.

On Thursday 5 January, the day after we arrived, I went to the School of Social Work while Ruth Abell, a friend of Tad Hamilton at home, took Trish and the children shopping for winter clothes. Roy and Ruth Gaunt had us round for coffee in the evening. The next morning we all slept in until 9am (our body-clocks were still getting adjusted) – and I was to go to my first class (with Dr Roger Lind)! Trish took the children to meet their teachers and the principal in the afternoon. The principal was trying the boys out in grades 2 and 4 until the end of January when the semester ended, which meant they would have jumped up half a year. On 14 January, I reported that all three of the children had had a happy first week at school. (Ruth was going to the afternoon kindergarten) ‘Perhaps the most important impression so far is that the people we have met, especially from the School of Social Work, are friendly and pleasant and very willing to be helpful.’⁴⁰

The University of Michigan and Ann Arbor

It was our great good fortune that the University of Michigan traced its origins to a college in Detroit founded in 1817, which meant that 1967 was the University’s sesquicentennial year – a year of many special events, exhibitions and conferences. In 1837, the college moved to Ann Arbor, population 2,000. In 1824, Ann Arbor had been established in 1824 by two easterners who named the town after their wives and the natural arbor created by the massive oaks in the area. By 1866, the University had become the largest in the country, with 1205 enrolled students. In 1967, the University had 36,000 students and was listed among the top ten universities in the country. Ann Arbor had grown to 93,000 residents. A plaque on the Michigan Union steps at the University commemorated President Kennedy’s first announcement of the ‘Peace Corps’ – on 14 October 1960, when he was campaigning before his election. At the University’s commencement address on 22 May 1964, President Johnson made one of his first – if not the first reference – to ‘The Great Society’ program.⁴¹

The School of Social Work⁴²

Starting with an undergraduate curriculum in 1921, the University’s social

40 Letters, Trish Lawrence to her parents-in-law, 9/1/67; John Lawrence to his parents, 14/1/67.

41 ‘Stopping Place for Presidents’, *The Ann Arbor News*, 4/3/67, p. 62.

42 Most of the following data material on the School comes from two articles (8 and 280 pages) by Phillip Fellin, ‘History of the University of Michigan School of Social Work’, on the University of Michigan website. Phillip Fellin was dean of the School 1971–81.

work course moved to a graduate level in 1935. After several different administrative arrangements, the course finally moved from Detroit to Ann Arbor in 1951. Now an independent School of Social Work, its newly appointed dean was Fedele Fauri. From the late 1950s, it operated from the Freize Building. Fedele Fauri became recognised as 'an outstanding pioneer in public welfare services and in social work education for public practice'.⁴³ A former director of the Michigan Department of Social Welfare, and an active member of the American Public Welfare Association, he served on special and advisory commissions to state and federal governments, and was an advisor on social security to the US Senate Committee on Finance, and to the Committee of Ways and Means of the US House of Representatives. At different times he was president of the Council on Social Work Education, the National Conference of Social Welfare, and the American Public Welfare Association. In 1970, he became vice-president for state relations and planning at the University of Michigan.

In 1967, Wilbur Cohen, 'one of the key architects in the creation and expansion of the American welfare state',⁴⁴ was on leave from the school, serving in the federal civil service. He had been appointed professor of public welfare administration in 1956. In 1968, he was appointed by President Johnson as the US Secretary of Health, Education, and Welfare. In the development of the School, Fauri and the faculty gave priority to the needs of the State of Michigan for professional social workers, and this had been enabled by various scholarships and traineeships.

A local newspaper article in March 1967 described the School of Social Work as 'one of the fastest growing of the 42 major independent schools, colleges, centers and institutes of the University of Michigan'.

Devoted exclusively to graduate professional study, the School is one of the nation's important training centers for professional social workers and administrators and has been a pioneer in many areas of social research. A high proportion of its faculty of 52 serves on a consulting basis with Michigan and national agencies in addition to teaching and research.

The rapid expansion and diversification of the entire field of social work in recent years is reflected in the school's enrolment, which has increased by more than 145% since 1960. ...

Both continuing research feedback and the growth and variety of local, state and national social service programs have been responsible for new professional expectations and thus for a new curriculum, which is being introduced gradually to replace the curriculum adopted in 1958-59. ...

The School of Social Work today attracts large numbers of students who have been working in the field for several years since they received their undergraduate degrees.

43 See on the internet, 'NASW Social Work Pioneers, Fedele F. Fauri (1909-1981)'.

44 See 'Wilbur J. Cohen', Wikipedia article.

Many of the students pursue their advanced studies under grants, stipends, scholarships, fellowships and other types of aid furnished by agencies and organisations with which they have been associated, or with which they expect to become associated.⁴⁵

There was no question that the School had considerable momentum in 1967. By 1967, the School had increased to 52 full-time faculty, funded by the University and federal training grants, and its full-time enrolment was 428 students with over 200 graduates from the School. In 1968, the School was ranked first among the 75 accredited schools of social work in the United States in enrolments, number of full-time students, and number of MSW degrees granted each year. In 1970–71, its faculty was the largest social work faculty in the country. In 1965, the School's faculty decided to actively recruit students and faculty from minority groups. 22% of the 1971 enrolment came from minority groups and 9 of the faculty.

A number of social scientists with interests and competencies in social work, facilitated the broadening educational perspectives of the School, both in terms of content and definition of appropriate roles. The influence on the School was highlighted in 1967 in a book of readings, edited by Professor Thomas, which included 32 articles, all authored by members of the School's faculty. Also of significance was *Readings in Group Work Practice*, edited by Robert Vinter in 1967, including materials by a number of faculty members, and translated into Spanish and German.

In 1954, Robert Vinter was appointed to strengthen the School's program in social group work. The re-accreditation of the School by the Council on Social Work Education in 1963 stimulated the curriculum review completed in 1968, under the leadership of Bob Vinter, who had been appointed associate dean in 1964.

The curriculum revision strengthened course offerings, based on relevant social science research and conceptualizations, expanded the scope of practice-knowledge courses and increased flexibility of elective options to students.

The School's new curriculum in 1968–69 had a 'levels of intervention' approach that included interpersonal, community, organizational, and societal levels. In 1970, 550 full-time MSW students were enrolled. The gender distribution was 40% male, 60% female. The students' method specialisations were 165 in casework, 95 in group work, 96 in community organisation, 73 in administration, 12 in research, and 109 combining social casework with group work or community organisation. 31 full-time students were enrolled in the doctoral program.

Henry Meyer, a sociologist, provided leadership of the doctoral program in social work and social science from 1957 to 1970. This program was created with the support of the Russell Sage Foundation and was the first such program

45 'Social Work School Booms', *The Ann Arbor News*, 4/3/67, p. 48. My own figures for the School at the end of 1967 were 58 full-time faculty, and 670 students (including part-time) at a master's or doctoral level. (I am not now sure of the source of these figures.)

in the country. It was an interdisciplinary program in collaboration with social science departments of the University. Elsewhere social work doctorates were developing but not formally linked with other departments. (Many years later, when we were staying with Henry and Suzanne Meyer in a visit to Ann Arbor, I was surprised when Suzanne described our good friend Katherine Kendall as a dreadful woman. I gathered this was because of Katherine's objection to the Michigan doctoral model. Henry, however, described it as a genuine disagreement.)

I recall Fedele Fauri telling a faculty meeting that the University president had asked him how the school rated among American schools of social work. Fauri was challenged by some of the faculty when he said Columbia University was still number one with Michigan second or third.⁴⁶ The morale of the place was very high. People were working extremely hard and confident of the directions in which the School was moving.

TEACHING EXPERIENCE

The Winter Term

In the Winter Term 1967, I had three lots of teaching responsibilities, all at a graduate or a post-master's level. I had sole responsibility for an introductory social services course S.W. 502, and I shared the responsibility for a comparative social welfare course S.W. 625 with Philip Booth, and social welfare 1 S.W.897, a doctoral seminar, with Roger Lind. Each of the courses had two-hour weekly sessions. My co-teachers were older, experienced scholars. Philip Booth was a very experienced man of about early 50s. He had recently had a heart condition which had laid him low, and he was again in hospital at the end of the Winter Term. Roger Lind was in his 40s. We bought his former car shortly after we arrived. It was a 1963 Ford Country Station Wagon, in very good condition.

S.W. 502 Social Services I

Introduction to the governmental and voluntary social services and their interaction with social, cultural, and economic forces. Selected programs dealing with social disfunction such as child welfare and corrections are analysed in regard to value and purpose of the service given, the relation of the service to the needs of individuals and communities, and the influence of such factors as structure, organization, and financing.⁴⁷

Sydney Bernard sent me on 12 December 1966 a course outline and a

46 In 2012, the school was said to have ranked in the top three schools of social work in the past 30 years, and was ranked either #1 or #2 school of social work for the past 15 years by US News and World Report.

47 The University of Michigan School of Social Work Announcements 1966–67, p. 31. S.W. 504 Social Services 11 was a continuation of Social Services 1, with illustrations from medical, mental health, and rehabilitation programs.

detailed term paper assignment. The course had been taught a number of times and he had material, class notes, etc, he would be happy to share with me when I arrived if that would be helpful.⁴⁸ I thanked him for his offer of assistance with material especially since I had had no time to prepare in accordance with the course outline. I had hoped to prepare for my teaching assignments some months before, but fully realised that the School's circumstances had not made this possible. I liked the course materials I had seen, however, and looked forward to working with them; I would appreciate discussing S.W. 502 with him as soon as possible after our arrival.⁴⁹

I was extremely grateful for Syd Bernard's help in relation to this course immediately after our arrival. I think I quickly established my credentials with him when he read my plenary session paper on organisational issues in social welfare delivered to an ACOSS conference. I can recall him commenting on its remarkable relevance for the American scene. Syd acted as secretary for our meetings in the social services faculty group. Originally from Canada, he was an associate professor of about my own age. The Bernards were a Jewish family who lived fairly close to our first home in Ann Arbor, and just around the corner from our second home.⁵⁰ They became our good friends.

At my first class in S.W. 502, I distributed a document on the curriculum change taking place in the School. Under its proposed reorganisation, all students would be required to take at least 2 courses in the general area of social welfare policy and services. The aim was to equip

professionals to act as informed participants in providing services and in effecting improvements in service programs. They (would) offer a general foundation and a framework for understanding the character of social welfare programs, and of the forces that produce, maintain and modify them.⁵¹

S.W.502 had six sections – introduction: concepts and issues in social welfare, services for the family, services for children, crime and delinquency, minorities, and services for the aging. Each section had required and recommended readings. Services for the family, children and the aging related to the 'normal' life cycle. Crime and delinquency were problems of widespread social concern. The texts to be purchased were the *Social Work Encyclopedia*, and Nathan Cohen (ed), *Social Work and Social Problems*. There was a mid-term exam, and a final exam in the 15th week.

The assignment for the course was a 3-part term paper which required a student to

- define and gain insight into a chosen social problem
- describe the structure of social services at national, state and local levels which touched the problem
- examine one particular agency and its services and make 'expert' imaginative

48 Letter, Sydney E. Bernard to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 12/12/66.

49 Letter, John Lawrence to Sydney Bernard, 23/12/66.

50 See p. 290.

51 'A Decade of Change: The School of Social Work in Transition', School of Social Work, University of Michigan, October 1966, p. 9.

recommendations to redesign the agency into a model or ideal agency to meet and serve the victims of the social problem⁵²

This was essentially an exercise in systematic analytic thinking about social problem-solving through social welfare policies and services.

I told the students that by the end of our third session, I hoped that through the required reading supplemented by my class lecture material, they would have an awareness of:

1. the historical and contemporary development of distinctive formal organizations called the social services – or putting it another way, the development of social welfare as a social institution; with demographic, political, economic, cultural, religious, personal, professional, and administrative and organizational influences.
2. the emergence of an identifiable subject or study area – called most frequently in Britain ‘social administration’, and in the U.S. by a variety of names, ‘the social services’, ‘social welfare’, ‘social welfare policy and services’, etc. – which examines the structure and functions of the social services and their relationship to other social institutions.
3. certain difficulties in delineating what are social welfare policies and services as distinct from other kinds of policies and other kinds of services.
4. various models used to characterize social welfare organizations or ‘agencies’ as they are usually called.
5. the size and structure of the current social welfare services in the U.S. and in other developed industrial countries.
6. the historical growth of the social work profession within the social welfare services – its size, organization, function in the social welfare institution, problems.
7. the model in Cohen. To avoid fragmentation in diagnosing and dealing with a social problem, this model deliberately avoided starting from the existing individual focused, psychological treatment methods, or from the existing fragmentation of social institutions, or from using any ‘official disorder’ classification derived from the institutionalized services provided to deal with it.⁵³

The well-structured nature of this course made it possible for me to pick it up quickly. It also meant that Stanley Kim could relatively easily fill-in for me when I was ill.

The course grades I awarded to the 34 students who took my class ranged from two As to two B-s with the rest distributed in between. (I had to get adjusted to the school’s grading conventions, so my grading would be fair in its context. The University of Sydney’s were different.) Since almost all of the students were graduates,⁵⁴ the results at the bottom end were not surprising.

52 21 possible topics were suggested: race relations, school dropouts, under achievers, educating the lower-class child, juvenile delinquency, one-parent family, illegitimacy, child neglect, desertion, employment of women and children, aging, housing of aged, parent-child grand-child relationship, low income population, cultural deprivation – changing family roles, housing of low-income families, central city slums, problems of middle and upper-income population, geographic mobility, social mobility, suburban isolation – lack of social and community facilities.

53 Material on S.W. 502 in my work archives.

54 This course was also listed as Sociology 378. Only four of the students were not master’s candidates.

S.W. 625 Comparative Social Welfare

Comparison of social welfare measures in several countries, with emphasis on those of developing nations. Particular attention given to: economic and social problems with which welfare programs can deal most effectively; the scope, purposes and limitations of programs and services; and the setting of priorities and goals in establishing and conducting social welfare programs.⁵⁵

This course, co-taught by Phil Booth and Roger Lind, was offered for the first time January-April 1966.

According to Dean Robert Vinter when he informed me of my teaching involvement in the course, the class constituted students particularly interested in welfare programs in developing countries, in non-US programs, and in future professional activity outside the US. He suggested I should give Phil Booth some idea of my particular interests with respect to sessions or topics I would like to handle.⁵⁶

I wrote to Philip Booth:

My present situation is one of very general responsibilities in the area of social welfare problems, policies and provision. I have concentrated mainly upon the process of development in western industrial societies, but I welcome the opportunity offered by SW 625 to know more about developing nations. A substantial section of my teaching here might be described as social philosophy ... and I am particularly interested in the place of values in social policy-making. Another section of my teaching here is concerned with understanding formal organizations.

As you can see, we do not as yet enjoy much academic division of labour. Perhaps for S.W. 625 this may be an advantage. I suggest that you decide which parts of the course you wish to handle, and I will gladly tackle the rest. Perhaps it might, however, be sensible if you were to deal directly with the U.S.A. developments. ...

I had very helpful preparatory correspondence including exchange of some teaching materials with Phil Booth before I arrived in January.⁵⁷ During the first eight weeks of the term, Phil and/or I would provide lectures followed by class discussion of the readings and lecture material. Student reports were scheduled for the final six weeks. We agreed to be jointly responsible for the introductory sessions on comparison of social welfare and social security programs in industrially advanced and less-developed countries, Phil would take two sessions on social welfare and social security in the U.S., I would take two sessions comparing social welfare and social security in Britain and Australia,⁵⁸ and we would again be jointly responsible for two sessions on U.N. and other specified reading. Phil suggested we could be quite flexible on whether we both needed to be present at a given class session and how we organised our participation within a session. (In the event, we were usually both present, except when I was ill earlier in the term.)

55 The University of Michigan School of Social Work Announcements 1966-67, p. 35.

56 Letter, Robert D. Vinter to John Lawrence, 27/9/66.

57 I was happy to keep Eveline Burns' book, *Social Security and Public Policy*, as one of the texts. I knew and liked it.

58 My work archives contains the lectures I prepared for these sessions.

After our correspondence, Phil sent a course outline, suggested readings and writing assignments. The course would be conducted as a seminar, with substantial student class participation. Each student would prepare 'data sheets' which would include basic information on the demographic, economic, political and social characteristics of a country or region he or she would study intensively. They would also present, for class discussion, a paper based upon their term project, dealing with some aspect of social welfare problems, institutions or developments of a given developing (or developed) country or area. The topic of each student's term paper would be approved by the instructors, and written general guidance was provided on its possible content.

The objectives stated in the course outline were:

- To enable students to obtain broader knowledge of the various patterns of development of social welfare programs in regions and countries which differ in culture and stage of economic and political development,
- To enable students to utilize learning and experience with a given country's welfare programs in analysing and understanding differences between welfare programs in selected countries and,
- To enable students to obtain a better understanding of the factors contributing to the growth of, as well as the role of international social welfare organizations, public and private.

In his first letter, Phil had written that he was looking forward, with much pleasure, to the opportunity of working with me. I felt the same way, especially after our correspondence.⁵⁹ I had been wondering about the obvious possible problems of joint-teaching, but sharing with such a reasonable, experienced teacher proved to be a very happy and productive experience. I also had the same experience with my other shared teaching arrangement, with Roger Lind.

S.W. 897 Social Welfare Policy I

Primarily for doctoral candidates and other advanced students by permission of instructor. An examination of the economic, social, political, and administrative factors influencing social welfare policies in the United States, including factors involved in the historical development of present programs, the role of the legislative process, and controversial elements in current issues. Special consideration is given to the depression, war, full employment, and population changes on social policies.⁶⁰

Dean Vinter invited me to work with Dr Roger Lind in conducting this course which was an advanced doctoral seminar. The seminar had not been offered for several years, since Wilbur Cohen departed for service in the Cabinet. They were not as yet certain how the seminar would be developed, so it was difficult to suggest an appropriate role for me. However, it was likely it would be handled as a faculty seminar.⁶¹

59 Letters, Booth to Lawrence, 29/12/66, 17/10/66, 3/11/66, 25/11/66; Lawrence to Booth, 7/10/66, 14/11/66, 6/12/66.

60 The University of Michigan School of Social Work Announcements 1966-67, p. 39.

61 Letter, Robert D. Vinter to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 27/9/66.

When Roger Lind wrote to me on 20 October, they had decided against handling the course as a faculty seminar. He sent to me 'a beginning statement' on the course; he wanted us to see this as 'a coordinate venture', to the extent that I was willing.

Even though I inevitably start from a U.S. perspective, I'm interested in anything that will broaden our vision on the subject matter. In fact, that's one reason I suggested you might like to be involved in teaching this course.

My next step will be to begin an outline schedule of possible topics, papers, etc. I hope that this letter begins a conversation between us about this subject. I'm looking forward to your coming.⁶²

In response, to Roger Lind's material on the course, I said I was very happy to make it as much as possible a coordinate venture, but he would need to take the major planning responsibility, because of my as yet limited knowledge of local conditions, the shortness of time between now and January, and the slowness and limitations of discussion by letter. I asked him several questions about the number, background and concurrent work of the likely students, and the possible involvement of other faculty and people from other faculties. In addition, I made a few observations and comments:

- I have gathered that the purpose of the Seminar is to understand the nature of social welfare policy as it has developed in the United States. This is both a conceptual and empirical task, with the relevant concepts guiding the presentation of factual data. I wonder if it would be useful, perhaps near the beginning, to have a fairly thorough discussion on the key organising concept of social welfare policy itself – the various possible meanings attached to the concept; similar and sometimes identical concepts like 'social policy', 'social service policy', 'public policy', 'social work policy'; the influence of different stages of historical development, different levels of knowledge, and different values, on what is included in the concept and on verbal conventions; policy as description and as prescription; moral criteria of justification for social welfare policy in a liberal democratic society; policy linked on one side with problem, and on the other with provision; and so on. If you thought this would be helpful I could prepare material on this and it could cover as many or as few sessions as would balance with the rest of the Seminar content. References might include, for example, parts of: (I then listed works by British authors such as Donnison, Marsh, Benn and Peters, and Titmuss, and a recent *New Society* series on social policy in Britain; and American sources such as Zald, Wilensky and Lebeaux, Friedlander, a number of publications on social problems, and selected articles in *Social Work* and *Social Service Review*.)⁶³
- The idea of considering selected current issues, each at a different stage of the 'policy-to-service' chain seems an excellent one. I wonder if an intensive look at a 'completed' problem-to-policy-to-service chain would also be worthwhile.

62 Letter, Roger M. Lind to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 20/10/66.

63 These were the two major social work journals in the United States. For general preparation for my year in the United States, I read all of the recent issues of both of these journals.

- I have deliberately put 'problem' into the chain, because it gives at least the original point to and justification for social welfare policy. I agree with the direction of the analysis of Nathan E. Cohen (ed.), *Social Work and Social Problems*, NASW, 1964. ...
- The course implies historical depth. Does this mean the sort of treatment as for example in Samuel Mencher, 'Newburgh: The Recurrent Crises of Public Assistance', *Social Work*, Vol. 7, No. 1, January 1962, rather than a 'straight' historical account – in other words, history used illustratively, rather than for tracing the tortuous actual path of any existing program in all the complicated richness which might be given to it by an historian rather than say by a sociologist. ...
- It may be my imagination, or my limited reading, but I often think that American explanations of social welfare policies and programs seem oddly divorced from a clear analytic discussion of political systems and political realities. If there is any validity in this observation, I wonder if part of the Seminar could focus directly upon this, serviced perhaps by an interested political scientist.⁶⁴

In his response, Roger Lind clarified that the students would be preparing papers as well as reading.

I would like to place emphasis on their explorations of the subject rather than on our laying out the territory completely and then guiding them closely through it. This is both because I prefer that approach to learning and also because I really am still doing a good deal of exploring myself.

The two of us would be the only faculty members with continuing responsibility for the seminar. He liked my offer to prepare material on social welfare policy as an organising concept, and suggested two or three sessions. We could work out a suitable division of labour after I arrived. 'I am aware that you hope to have as much time as possible to pursue other issues'.

I agree with your insertion of 'problem' into the chain and also would think that the recurring series in the public assistance program, or in some other mature program, might be suitable as the example of the complete chain to use.

I am taking your other comments as food for thought. I think they are excellent and like the direction of your thinking, to the extent that your questions and suggestions give a hint of it.⁶⁵

In my work archives, is a substantial paper I presented and distributed to the S.W. 897 class. It was titled 'The Morality of Social Policy' and was dated 12 January 1967. It opened with this preview:

First, I will emphasise that policies are essentially prescriptions, norms, or rules, and I will briefly remind you of the nature and variety of the rules which prevail in our kind of society and the extent to which rule-following is a human characteristic. Next, we will see the way in which the term social policy may be used to cover all

64 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Roger Lind, 7/11/66.

65 Letter, Roger Lind to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 12/12/66.

or only some of these rules, and will note that one definition refers only to rules which are morally justifiable.

We will then see what goes for moral justification in our kind of society and will notice the close link with rationality and taking into account the interests of people. Finally, and this is the main section of the paper for the purpose of this course, moral criteria are applied to conceptions of social policy and social policy-making. It is claimed that no better justification for social policy is available.

At the paper's end, I wrote:

The genuinely moral approach to social welfare policy which is discussed in this paper, is inevitably a reflection of a particular value position. It is logically impossible to *prove* that it is right. All I can say is that analysis of what constitutes ultimately justifiable social policy in a liberal democratic society, which this kind of society claims to be, reveals these criteria of genuine morality. If we apply these criteria in our decision-making we cannot have better justification for action within this type of society. Remember that these criteria essentially involve a reasoned approach, being on your guard against selfish, sectional, emotional or prejudiced thinking; and secular, humanitarian and scientific attitudes.

A final comment – Because the word 'morality' has often been associated with certain rigid, priggish, conventional behaviour, or perhaps because, rather curiously, morality has tended to be associated only with sexual morality, many of us shy away from it. Its re-instatement, together with the important value positions which it summarises, can help us to try to gain agreement on what are the real *human* issues of our time and also to do something about them.

Social welfare policy as conventionally defined is an obvious place to begin, because at least many people think that its direct concern is with the welfare of people. It would be ironical if such policies should be among the last of the societal policies to receive genuine moral consideration. Yet it is possible because of the extremely diverse motives in the establishment of such policies, the multiple vested interests especially amongst the voluntary welfare agencies, and the freedom we give to people and agencies because of their stated good intentions to serve others.⁶⁶

We had 8 students in S.W.897. I kept a copy in my work archives of my feedback on the best one of the student assignments. Its chosen topic was 'A General Consideration of Anti-Poverty Policy and the Community Organization Model.'

For the most part this is a clear, hard-thinking interpretative essay, and I would very much appreciate a copy if you have a spare.

You have been rigidly consistent in avoiding references. Why? Unsupported assertions help the flow of the argument but do not make it more persuasive.

The analysis of the problem is perceptive and convincing, but discussion of policy alternatives is rather less so. You have not really addressed yourself to how the c.o. approach as you have defined it can tackle the large questions of structural

66 R. J. Lawrence, 'The Morality of Social Policy', 1/12/67 (this is the American convention of listing the month first).

change in the broader society. Once your local efforts are coordinated and become part of the national internal power struggle, how can you avoid 'dictation' from outside the locality, and from the movement's leaders now having to operate on a regional, state and national level. Isn't some form of bureaucracy in the sense of formal organisation necessary to do anything effective in tackling the entrenched bureaucratic forces? The history of organised labour in Western European countries perhaps offers some interesting parallels worth noting.

Do the poor really have a sufficient community of interest to make your c.o. approach viable? You tend to imply geographically local effort, but what about the many poor who are not concentrated in particular localities which can be 'organised'? Isn't your use of 'c.o.' a very limited concept. Others see it more broadly, just as others use the social services approach more broadly. You are of course perfectly entitled to choose your own definitions for the purpose of clear exposition. I think, however, your identification of c.o. with essentially local grass roots action *against* the powers that be by the 'have nots' is prescribing particular limited kinds of activity for c.o. practitioners.

Other student assignments tackled: unemployed youth in South-East Asia, poverty problems and guaranteed annual income proposals, incentives in the economy and in the guaranteed minimum income, the social welfare problem of the racial character of the metropolitan community, racial discrimination in housing in Ann Arbor, inadequate medical care for lower-income groups in the United States, and income insecurity as a social problem.

On 5 May after the end of the winter term, I wrote to my parents:

The teaching commitment in the three courses amounted to a full-time job, not half-time, but I learnt a great deal and am not sorry it worked out as it did. I will, however, organise a lighter teaching load in the Fall term. The joint teaching with Roger Lind and with Phil Booth was particularly fruitful. I learnt via the student grapevine that students in my classes, especially the joint classes on Comparative Social Welfare and on Social Policy, thought my point of view refreshing!⁶⁷

Roger Lind

Roger Lind had graduated from the School's doctoral program in 1963.⁶⁸ He was a member of the Society of Friends (a Quaker) and twice in the course of the Winter Term, he asked me to take the class so that he could go to Washington to participate in the protests against the Vietnam War. He was fairly quiet by disposition, was well-spoken and had a patrician-type appearance. I learned from others that he and his wife had lost a daughter from a tropical disease contracted when Roger was on a U.N. assignment in one of the African countries. They had been devastated, but recent birth of another child seemed to have assisted them. I got to know Roger well. In my letter of 5 May, I reported to my parents that Roger was taking leave of absence from

⁶⁷ Letter, John Lawrence to parents, 5/5/67.

⁶⁸ In 1962, the School produced its first doctoral graduates. Phillip Fellin and Rosemary Sarri were two of the first four. In 1963, Roger Lind was 1 of 6. There were 2 a year in 1965, and 1966; 3 in 1977; 5 in 1968; 4 in 1969; and 13 in 1970. See footnote 42.

the end of May until at least the end of the year for a U.N. appointment – in the social development division of the Department of Economic and Social Affairs. He would be preparing two of the key background papers on national social welfare systems for a U.N. conference to be held in 1968, to which social welfare ministers had been invited. Already about 50 countries had accepted the invitation. Fortunately for me, Roger would be dividing his time between Ann Arbor and New York, so I would continue to see quite a bit of him. The S.W. 897 seminar together, and numerous discussions we had had were very relevant to his new responsibilities, and he was keen for us to continue our dialogue together.⁶⁹ It was not all work, however. The occasional squash game with him was most enjoyable. I had become fully accustomed to the US solid ball and slightly heavier racquet.⁷⁰

The Autumn Term – Teaching and Other Responsibilities

In the Fall term, my only teaching was full responsibility for one of three sections of S.W. 502, a course which had been redesigned and renamed under the new curriculum. Two other faculty activities, however, more than made up for the rest of my half-time appointment in this term – developing a teaching paper for the social services faculty and chairing a study group to make curriculum proposals on social philosophy and professional ethics to the faculty's curriculum committee. I was being treated as if I was a full-time member of the faculty, and again found the over-all experience very fruitful. In a report to the Fulbright organisation at the end of the year, I stated I had derived great benefit from discussion with a number of faculty interested in social policy questions, and commented that such faculty were rare in Australia.⁷¹

S.W. 502 Social Welfare Policy and Services I – Section 3: Program Issues

The general objective of S.W. 502 was to equip students with a framework and method for studying, assessing and understanding welfare programs, policies and the forces which shaped the provision of services. Section 1 adopted a developmental approach, analysing the evolution of American social welfare. Section 2 employed a comparative approach. Section 3, which I had earlier proposed and developed for the social services faculty, focused upon program issues. Each section used materials drawn from a number of program areas,

69 My work archives contains my detailed critical comments (conceptual and substantive) on a draft of one of the papers, before it went to a meeting of the preparatory committee for the conference. The purpose of the conference was to examine the role of social welfare programs in national development and to identify the elements of social welfare functions common to all nations. Delegates were asked to draw up principles for social welfare programs, both national and international; to recommend ways to promote the training of workers for social welfare programs; and to recommend actions that could improve UN social welfare programs. 96 governments were represented by participant or observer delegations at the conference in September 1968. It was 'a landmark in international cooperation'. Dorothy Lally, 'International Social Welfare Services', *Encyclopedia of Social Work*, 16th issue, Vol.1, 1971, pp. 676–686.

70 Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 5/5/67.

71 There were about 15 members of the social services faculty committee.

the materials being primarily chosen to demonstrate the usefulness of the method of analysis. Class assignments gave students the opportunity to apply the method. I was pleased that I had no problem attracting students to section 3. All but two of the 27 students were master's students.

Section 3: Program Issues

Social welfare programs are supposedly set up and conducted for the benefit of clients or recipients of the resulting services. This course examines factors which determine who are the intended beneficiaries and with respect to what, who are the actual beneficiaries, and who might be the beneficiaries. In other words, the focus is on problems of service distribution and delivery – on the extent, the nature and outcomes of service transactions which take place. The frame of reference is the national society of the United States and its component parts.

Course Outline

I structured the course in this way:

- A. (3 sessions)
 1. Concepts of 'social welfare', 'social services', 'social work'. Typologies of social welfare institutions or agencies.
 2. The dimensions of the social welfare system and sub-systems in the U.S., including the size and the different bases of specialization.
 3. Other closely related institutions and activities.
- B. To understand service distribution and delivery characteristics and problems, social welfare policy and services will be studied from the following perspectives:
 4. Goals (2 sessions)
 - characteristics: explicit, implicit; formal, informal; general, detailed; historic, current
 - intended and unintended consequences
 - revision processes
 - broad cultural, economic and political influences
 - set by whom? Participant groups in policy-making. Their roles, values, knowledge, power.

What constitutes justifiable social welfare policy? according to whose values? Within what community context? Evaluated in terms of feasibility? evaluated in terms of results? adherence to democratic processes? accountability systems?

5. Clients (2 sessions)
 - their problems, defined by whom? the etiology of the problems
 - client recruitment for agency programs
 - the nature of their participation in services
 - the exchange in the service transaction
 - their geographic location and mobility
 - socio-economic, ethnic, and other characteristics
6. Social welfare resources (2 sessions)
 - financial: the strengths and weakness of different financing methods

- social welfare personnel: variety (different professionals, specialization within a profession, administrative, clinical and volunteer personnel, client groups), quantity, quality, deployment, cost
 - knowledge and technology: the social sciences, social work technology
7. Social welfare auspices (2 sessions)
- cultural, political, economic and organisational determinants
 - voluntary auspices
 - governmental roles and governmental structure, federal, state and local
 - government and voluntary associations
 - mixed auspices
8. (3 sessions)
- An evaluation of actual and suggested ways of coping with service distribution and delivery problems taking into account factors and issues discussed in B 4-7.

In a written assignment students were asked to analyse a selected social welfare program (usually that of their field work agency) using the perspectives discussed in the course, and were expected 'to show imagination, insight and judgment' in discussing ways the service could be improved.

For each part of the course, specific required reading from the texts⁷² and from other material held in the Reserve of the Social Work Library was designated, and additional readings were listed.

In my work archives are two other documents of material which I put together and distributed to the students. One contained various concepts and definitions of social welfare etc, and typologies or models of social welfare institutions or agencies. The other, 'Goals in Social Welfare: Their Logic, Values, and Determinants', provided 30 pages of selected material on goals in social welfare, roughly grouped according to whether it discussed goals at societal, community, agency, or professional levels. I also provided a detailed index to the numbered paragraphs in this and other relevant items on the reading list.

In October, Syd Bernard wrote to Wayne Vasey, dean of the George Warren Brown School of Social Work at Washington University, informing him about the program issues course I had proposed and developed and its place in the curriculum. Vasey would be teaching the course in the winter of 1968 as a member of the School's social welfare policy and services faculty. Syd sent him my course outline, telling him he was free to retain or change it. 'We expect that you will have considerable opportunity to shape and develop the course as you see fit.'⁷³ The Michigan School was very pleased he was coming. He had experience in local, state, and federal welfare administration, as well as teaching

72 *Encyclopedia of Social Work*, NASW, 1965; Nathan Cohen (ed.), *Social Work and Social Problems*, 1964; Wilensky and Lebeaux, *Industrial Society and Social Welfare*, 1965 edition; and U.S. Department of Health, Education, and Welfare, *State Data and State Rankings in Health, Education and Welfare*, Washington, U.S. Government Printing Office, 1965.

73 Letter, Sydney E. Bernard to Wayne Vasey, 24/10/67. Syd was acting chairman of the Social Welfare Policy and Services faculty at the time until Pat Rabinovitz returned in January. Pat was a very experienced teacher whom I got to know in the social services faculty meetings (as they were then called) in the Winter Term. She passed on to me a number of very substantial books on American public welfare administration for my professional library.

in a school of social work. While at Rutgers University, he wrote a well-known book about the roles of the levels of government in the administration of welfare services, stressing the importance of leadership in the administration of programs.⁷⁴ I met him shortly before I left Ann Arbor, and he commented, I think favourably, that my course outline and teaching materials reflected that I was not from the United States.

A Teaching Paper – A Social Transaction Model for Analysing ‘Social Welfare’

The social services faculty had invited me to prepare a teaching paper on concepts and definitions of social welfare which could be used in a variety of the School’s social service courses. The idea of developing teaching papers came from Syd Bernard, and he suggested they might sometimes be useful contributions to knowledge in the area. After producing the two documents of other people’s writing on social welfare concepts and goals, I wrote a substantive article of my own entitled ‘A Social Transaction Model for the Analysis of Social Welfare’. The paper drew favourable comment from Michigan colleagues and on the urging of Paul Glasser, who was a member of the editorial board of *Social Work*, I submitted it to that journal. It was not accepted for publication there, but was subsequently published by the *Australian Journal of Social Issues*.

The paper proposed an analytic model for examining what are called social welfare activities. It drew attention to a full range of considerations yielded by systematic analysis, and exposed the current perspectives which often were limited and biased. ‘Vigorously interpreted, the argument tries to clear away some of the cant and muddle in existing descriptions, and directs attention to important components in social welfare activities which tend to be neglected or ignored.’ It was suggested that only an analysis more detailed than usually occurred would determine whether or not activities which claimed to be social welfare activities could substantiate their claim. At the same time, many activities like mutual-aid and certain profit-making enterprises, which were usually not considered social welfare activities, might well be included. The analysis pointed to value choices and conflicts which were inherent in social welfare activities, but which stayed concealed in usual descriptions of social welfare. The current discussion of service delivery in social welfare saw ‘commodities’ as ‘delivered’ to consumers. The transactional model saw the ‘commodities’ as products of interactive processes between the consumer and producer. The service was not an inert entity, but a product of interaction. Social welfare activity was seen as a particular form of social transaction. Each transaction involved a production unit, a product, a product consumer, and transaction outcomes. Using the model assisted in the clarification of various activities described in social welfare terms, and also in analysing the content and variation of the terminology itself. It made apparent just how ambiguous the terminology tended to be and why it was so difficult to achieve any sort of rigour and consistency in these matters.

74 Wayne Vasey, *Government and Social Welfare: Roles of Federal, State, and Local Governments in Administering Welfare Services*, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, New York, 1958, re-printed 1963.

The paper concluded with reference to one important usage of ‘social welfare’, not essentially connected with particular social transactions – where what is being referred to is the state of the society or societal well-being. Here the focus was on existing social conditions described as objectively as possible but then assessed against some set of values, norms or standards – the dominant culture’s, the government’s, a profession’s, the researcher’s. There were many possibilities. The current discussion in the United States of social indicators and of a national advisory body on social policy was centrally concerned with a coherent attempt to assess periodically the social condition of society. It could lead to a clarification of extant values, to improved social statistics, and to more rational social policy. It would not, however, eliminate social policy issues in a pluralistic society, although it was likely to make social policy discussions better informed.

What social welfare transactions ought to be entered into by the society’s members is an essential part of the social policy debate. Unless such transactions are evaluated in their fullness from consumer as well as producer viewpoints, and also in terms of outcomes, they may in fact be abusing the democratic humanitarian values they supposedly support.⁷⁵

Examining a Doctoral Candidate

In September, I was invited by Henry Meyer to be a member of a preliminary examinations committee in the social welfare policy area to examine a doctoral student, Lawrence Gary. Larry Gary, an African/American, had been one of our better students in S.W.897. He had successfully completed his prelims in political science, and in addition had been doing independent reading under the direction of Roger Lind and had consulted others on sources. Roger Lind was to be the chairman of the examinations committee and we were given a full outline of the area of study required for the examination. It included ‘theoretical and analytical frameworks for assessing the development, implementation and alteration of policy positions’. Emphasis was on ‘current and recent past, but historical perspective was also necessary regarding any given issue’. The student was expected to demonstrate knowledge about and understanding of the major subject areas outlined. He was to be ‘well-versed in the pattern, direction, history and critical views on American social welfare policy approaches’. Seven policy areas were specified – income security, medical care, poverty, family and child welfare services, housing, leisure time, and environmental pollution (air, water, etc.). Roger Lind invited the other members of the committee (Booth, Lawrence and Meyer) to propose possible questions for the examination. I suggested three, all of which were used:

1. Describe several conceptions of what constitutes social policy. Discuss the implications of each as delineating a field of study and also an area of decision making by various individuals and groups (lay, professional,

⁷⁵ *The Australian Journal of Social Issues*, Vol. 3, No. 4, October 1968, pp. 51–72. I acknowledged the helpful comments of Sydney Bernard, Philip Booth, Paul Glasser, Roger Lind, Henry Meyer, and other Michigan faculty members, and also of Spencer Colliver.

- administrative, political, social). Which is your preferred conception, and why?
2. With both historical and comparative perspectives, discuss whether 'the reluctant welfare state' (see H. Wilensky, 'New Introduction', in Harold L. Wilensky and Charles H. Lebeaux, *Industrial Society and Social Welfare*, New York: the Free Press, 1965, paperback edition) is an accurate characterization of the United States. What have been, and are, the main roots of reluctance – political, constitutional, social, cultural, and economic?
 3. What are the main strategies, old and new, currently employed in the United States to combat poverty? What major alternative strategies have been suggested? Discuss in detail one of these suggestions in terms of (a) its feasibility, and (b) its likely effects.⁷⁶

The written and oral examinations took place in November. The candidate passed and he went on to graduate in 1970. I very much appreciated this particular experience. I knew and had high regard for each of my fellow examiners, my contribution was welcome and respected, and the candidate showed he had the capacity to operate at the level that serious social policy study required.

AN UNEXPECTED DIRECT INVOLVEMENT IN THE CURRICULUM REVISION

The curriculum revision that was under-way⁷⁷ reflected:

- The rapidly expanding and changing scope of the health and welfare services.
- A response to new challenges, tasks and opportunities for the social work profession, dissatisfaction with a heavy concentration upon traditional social treatment roles; recognition of the changing nature of professional roles, positions and careers particularly towards social welfare policy and administration.
- A desire to incorporate new knowledge, especially in the social and behavioural sciences, which was relevant for professional roles. This was, however, to be achieved by a wider range of choice available to the student and increased differentiation between groups of students and specializations.
- An attempt by social work educators to keep abreast with rapid social change.
- The usefulness of the periodic accreditation requirement of the Council on Social Work Education. The necessary self-study could induce a general curriculum revision after a period of piecemeal change in courses and sequences.

The total educational program now comprised eight major content areas or categories within which courses were offered. This replaced the tripartite categories of social services, human growth and behaviour, practice methods

⁷⁶ In the examination paper, the first was required, the second was one of two alternatives also required, and the third was one amongst four others, two of which were to be answered. In the event, the candidate tackled my questions 1 and 3.

⁷⁷ See p.293, footnote 51.

and field instruction. The eight new categories were:

- Human behaviour and social environment
- Knowledge from associated professions (legal, medical, etc.)
- Social welfare policy and services
- Social philosophy
- Practice methods
- Research
- Professional ethics
- Practice skill training (field instruction and campus practicum)

A substantially broader and richer series of course offerings would be available under the new curriculum.

By the fall term of 1967, in most of the eight areas, revised or new courses had been developed and were beginning to be implemented, but as yet work had not been done on possible courses in social philosophy and professional ethics. The widely-distributed curriculum document of October 1966 had stated:

The provision of systematic study in social philosophy is distinguished from the introduction in a wide range of courses of issues bearing on values, goals and the like. At least one course in this area will permit more rigorous inquiry into fundamental questions pertaining to the theory of the "welfare state", the assessment of social goals and professional values, etc.

As in the area of social philosophy, a systematic course in ethics pertaining to professional practice is desired. This does not preclude consideration of such matters in a wide range of other courses, but will permit students to develop more intensive understanding than possible when ethical issues are diffused throughout the curriculum without specific attention anywhere. Topics to be included in such teaching are analysis of the norms and values characteristic of social work and related professions, examination of the prescriptions and proscriptions which shape professional activity, and study of the ethical implications of alternative courses of action.

Chairing a Study Group on Social Philosophy and Professional Ethics

In August 1967, the curriculum committee asked its chairman, Bob Vinter, to appoint a faculty study group to develop proposals in these two areas. Sydney Bernard, Clarice Freud, and I were appointed, with me as chairman, and we were asked to report to the committee by the beginning of December. To have such a small group with an outsider as its chairman was a sad reflection of the relative neglect of these areas amongst American social work educators. I wrote to my parents at the end of September:

This is quite a task, but it is making me think through and systematize a lot of material which should be helpful for use at home. This area or areas is I think the only one in which the School is not very well equipped in relevant faculty.⁷⁸

⁷⁸ Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 29/9/67.

We worked extremely well as a group. It was invaluable having Clarice as a member. She was a full professor and a very long-standing member of the faculty.⁷⁹ In late October, when she thought she might be unavoidably delayed for our group meeting to consider a report I had drafted, she wrote a note asking me to spare her a few minutes at another time. 'Your report is tremendous! I am filled with admiration', she wrote. Clarice again sent me a note on 15 December. She would be in hospital with a back problem when the group were to meet Dean Fauri on 19 December. 'Sorry to miss the meeting, but more sorry not to see you to say how much I've enjoyed, and profited from working with you. I wish you were a permanent member of our faculty. My warm good wishes to you.'

On 22 November we reported to the curriculum committee.

The social work profession, like other established professions, claims to stand for something, essential to the well-being of the general society. Social workers claim to be more than mere technicians operating within given goals. They claim the right to have influence in setting social goals, and in varying degrees all their professional roles demand that they make policy and actually set social goals. Any citizen has a right to influence social goals, but performing as a member of a recognised profession he⁸⁰ no longer operates in just a personal context. To be a member of the profession and receive the trust and benefits derived from membership, he must operate within its norms. Professional education is crucial in orienting the future practitioner to these norms, and indicating how to change the norms in a responsible fashion. Such learning need not and should not be left to haphazard and uneven assimilation. If it is, there will continue to be the confusion which prevails in the profession around value questions. There is a body of substantial learning available to be adapted to the purposes of a social work curriculum.

The key to the Social Philosophy and Professional Ethics section of the curriculum lies in the discussion of the bases of human actions affecting other people and especially of actions relating to the social rules, norms or prescriptions, which men follow or are urged to follow. The subject area is the quest for acceptable or reasonable bases, justifications, or 'good reasons', for human action vis à vis other human beings and human institutions.

Attempts have been made to justify action prescriptions completely in factual or descriptive or (in recent times) social science terms. Philosophical analysis indicates that this is logically impossible, although the facts in any case are of crucial importance. Recent moral philosophy had been largely concerned not with making moral prescriptions or proclaiming social principles as such, but with philosophical analysis. The most potent modern tool in such analysis is centrally concerned with the meaning and logic of ethical language.

The emergence of the social sciences has raised a series of questions vitally relevant to social philosophy – the extent to which social science is 'value free'; the social and moral accountability of experts; what are technical questions in social relations?; what kinds of prescriptions is the professional entitled to make?; within

79 She was, in fact, related to Sigmund Freud, but pronounced her name 'Frood' to avoid people making the connection!

80 Again, this sexist convention was still operating at the time!

what moral, legal or religious limits does social research operate?

The Study Group considers at least three courses should be offered in the Social Philosophy and Professional Ethic area of the curriculum. The first two should be required for all students for they are seen as necessary for responsible professional functioning, irrespective of setting or method. The three recommended courses are Social Philosophy, The Ethics of Professional Behavior, and Contemporary Social Philosophies and Social Welfare. The first would provide a basic framework for the other two.

We then set down the objectives, the course domain, teaching materials, teaching method, and faculty required for each of the proposed courses. In Social Philosophy, the objectives would be:

To achieve beginning familiarity with, and skill development through, the analysis of major justification systems (legal, moral, etc) and social principles found in contemporary society.

Readings could be drawn from recent literature in philosophy, political theory, sociology and jurisprudence, in addition to social welfare. No single American text was available in this area, but there was the British text of Benn and Peters. Students could discuss in seminar groups selected public and social welfare issues from the perspective of the normative analysis of the lectures. The teaching of the course would require a person with professional training in philosophy and a special interest in public and social welfare issues – with seminar assistance from interested social work faculty, or philosophy or social work doctoral students.

In The Ethics of Professional Behavior, the objectives would be:

To achieve understanding of the value components in professional situations, and to acquire ability to make morally justifiable professional decisions as an individual practitioner, and as a member of an organised profession.

Social Philosophy or its equivalent would be a pre-requisite for this course. The course domain would be: A – A critical discussion of the value positions of the professions, including social work; and B – The value choices implicit and explicit in the relationships of the individual practitioner to other individuals, to collectivities, to the State, and to extra-State individuals and institutions (e.g. foreign professionals and U.N. agencies). The value choices implicit and explicit in the relationships of the organised professions to the same wide range of others (e.g. its members, clients and non-clients, other professions, extra-State individuals and institutions). Modes of justification – conventional, legal, religious and moral – actually used in such relationships. Modes of justification which might be used to make professional action justifiable according to moral, or ethical criteria. As the course progressed, there would be a building up of case material in all of the major relationship areas. The bulk of section B should be taught through analysis of case material in seminar sessions. The case material would come from everyday practice and would not be confined to obvious and dramatic value dilemma situations.

A person with professional training in philosophy and special interest in

public and social welfare issues was recommended for the teaching. In addition, selected specialised faculty could be used as resource persons in different parts of the course according to the relationship situations being examined.

In Contemporary Social Philosophies and Social Welfare, the objectives would be:

Familiarity with the social welfare implications of the major social philosophies in contemporary American society, and beginning competence in making justifiable professional and policy decisions on the issues raised for social welfare by the critics and supporters of the major value positions.

Again, Social Philosophy or its equivalent would be a pre-requisite for the course, which would be an elective particularly recommended for community practice and social welfare administration and policy students.

The course domain would be: A – The implication for social welfare of major institutional social philosophies in contemporary American society. The philosophies to be examined could be chosen from the following societal areas – politics, business and commerce, religion, civil rights, social welfare, research and scholarship; and B – The implications for social welfare of the dialogue between the contemporary apologists of the institutionalised philosophies and the spokesmen for the philosophies of radical dissent. The latter philosophies might include – socialism, the New Left, counter community movements, the Peace movement, the neo-fascist movement, indigenous activism, revolutionary movements. In addition to conventional teaching material, a wide variety of contemporary materials might be used – newspapers, book, documentary and creative films, novels, and journals of opinion. Materials could include: Robin M. Williams, *American Society* (1960); Herbert G. Kelman, *A Time to Speak – On Human Values and Social Research* (1967).⁸¹ Much of the subject matter of section A of the course could be presented as lecture material, but it would need to be supplemented by maximum student participation in discussion periods running concurrently with lectures. The material in section B was conducive to handling in a seminar.

The faculty could combine relevant substantive academic knowledge together with ability to apply it to social welfare. The academic knowledge could be drawn from a variety of disciplines. This could mean co-teaching as a typical arrangement.

At the meeting of the curriculum committee on 22 November, which considered our report, it was agreed that value questions were evident and crucial at all levels of social work professional practice. Dean Vinter reminded the committee that in earlier discussions in the committee and in the governing faculty, it was understood that material on social philosophy and professional ethics would be available in two ways – in all curriculum areas, and in a specific set of courses. The current proposal related only to the second method and did not prejudice efforts to implement the first method. After discussion in the committee on various points, including the possible difficulty of finding

⁸¹ Kelman was professor of psychology and chairman of the doctoral program in social psychology at the University of Michigan. Our group had a lunch meeting with him on 17 November.

suitably qualified faculty, our group submitted a further document for the committee's meeting on 6 December. In it we re-affirmed that at least three substantial content areas related to social philosophy and professional ethics should be taught in the School, but left open the naming of a course or courses in each area. We listed the objectives and recommended major content for each area (based on our initial report), and, as requested, suggested alternative ways to implement teaching in the three areas. At the conclusion of the meeting, the minutes recorded:

Dean Vinter summarised the discussion noting that the course material was seen as desirable and both Dean Fauri and the Search Committee be given copies of the Study Group's reports with an indication that the Committee supported the reports.⁸²

Just before I left Ann Arbor, the study group had a meeting with Dean Fauri about the course proposals. It was evident that the additional faculty needed to implement our proposals would not be quickly forthcoming; I quietly feared that without continuing advocacy our proposals could languish amongst all the other curriculum changes, despite the general agreement that value issues were centrally important.

These various School activities in which I had direct responsibilities provided very productive learning opportunities.

Other Learning Opportunities

Other learning opportunities came from attendance at conferences and meetings of various kinds in the course of the year, and from sitting in on three courses in the Autumn Term – Information and Decision-making, taught by Rosemary Sarri; a seminar on Community Cohesion, Social Change, and Local Welfare Services, run by Jack Rothman; and a course on social welfare legislation and social change, taught by Nelson Cruikshank.

Nelson Cruikshank

Nelson Cruikshank had just retired from being director, Social Services Department, AFL – CIO, the national federation of labor unions. He commuted from Washington each week and had a desk in my office on the day he was at the School. I wrote home at the end of September, 'I am getting to know him pretty well (he is an old friend of Phil Booth's) and am learning a lot about current pressures and attitudes to social security legislation in this country.' I can recall him telling me that his organisation had stopped calling on Eveline Burns to give expert evidence before congressional committees because she no longer supported the idea of social 'insurance'. It was feared conservatives would use this to erode the American social security system, not replace it with a system based on general tax revenue – as we had developed in Australia. Nelson read with interest my paper on what might be called 'social welfare', and said it would make him more thoughtful in future about his use

⁸² Minutes, the University Michigan School of Social Work Curriculum Committee meeting, 6/12/67.

of the term. He came to dinner one evening, and our house-guest Spencer Colliver particularly enjoyed his company.

Spencer Colliver

Although we lived in different capital cities in Australia, from about 1962 Spencer Colliver and I had come to know each other well – both personally and professionally. We participated together in national social welfare and social work conferences, had numerous discussions on professional topics, and occasionally stayed in each others' homes. Twice – in 1964 and 1966 – all of the Colliver family (Spencer, Hazel and their six children), came to stay with us at Balgowlah Heights in Sydney, and I was particularly impressed by Spencer's relationship with his two boys, Ross and Andrew. (Both of them were also to become social workers like their father.)

Spencer was about 10 years older than me. His BA at the University of Melbourne included three years of history, 3 years of philosophy, two years of psychology, and one year of English and of Greek. Spencer also completed the diplomas of education and of social studies at the University of Melbourne. After school teaching for a period, he spent six years as a youth leader, organiser and field officer for a youth organisation. For five years he was superintendent of a large Presbyterian residential institution for children. During this period the home was sold and family group care, foster care, day care and family counselling services were established. In 1966, he had spent the last five years as director of Presbyterian Department of Social Services in Victoria, bringing scattered Presbyterian social services under a central department, whose head was directly responsible to the Church Assembly. Associated with him in this work was Alison Player (later Mathew), who was one of the most respected social caseworkers in the country and who had become the federal president of the AASW. Spencer was an elder in the Presbyterian church. He was an experienced administrative head of a complex coordinated church social service program. Len Tierney, head of the Social Studies Department at the University, used Spencer as a part-time lecturer in social welfare administration to final-year students. He was chairman of the Victorian Government family welfare advisory committee, an executive member of VCOSS and the Children's Welfare Association, a member of other community and professional committees, and of the Board of Social Studies at the University of Melbourne.

When I was invited by ACOSS to give a major plenary session paper on 'Organisational issues: co-ordination, planning, community participation and financing for social welfare' at its fourth national conference, Spencer Colliver was invited to provide prepared comments after my paper.⁸³ He highlighted two problems – paucity of factual material or even informed opinion on social welfare issues in Australia, and quality of the key person in organisation, the organiser-administrator.

People need special preparation to tackle the organizational issues ... Schools

83 R. J. Lawrence (ed), *Community Service: Citizens and Social Welfare Organizations*, Melbourne, F. W. Cheshire, 1966, pp. 29–50, 51–8.

of Social Work must move thoroughly and quickly – for this is urgent – into the training of the researcher, administrator, and the community organizer. ... Once this can be set in motion, the social work profession will begin to attract male matriculants whom I suspect would find greater vocational attraction and satisfaction in this than case-work. Obviously, much of the training in administration will be post-graduate. ...

Shortly before leaving for Ann Arbor, in November 1966, I wrote to Spencer Colliver congratulating him on the award of a Churchill Fellowship, one of the 10 awarded in Victoria in just the second year of the award. Fellows were chosen from all walks of life, were expected to be innovative and to be leaders or potential leaders. The Collivers were thrilled by the award, although very understandably in a close-knit family, Hazel was somewhat ambivalent at the prospect of Spencer being away for a long period. The fellowship grant covered a period of six months overseas. It was left to the recipients to organise their program. Spencer had proposed to focus on five areas of social welfare – social welfare administration, community organisation, volunteer services, councils for co-ordinating social welfare, and at the practice level programs related to services for aged people, residential and treatment services for delinquent adolescents, family counselling and related non-residential facilities, residential care for children (foster care, family group care), and legislation related to any of these. When he wrote on 20 November, his program was still fluid. Decisions had to be made about their future. A teaching position at the University was not likely at present – Len Tierney was overseas, and university finances were restricted. Spencer was enquiring about admission to the Toronto School of Social Work at the end of September 1967, and was hoping to spend 2 months in the UK first. He wondered if I could get him invited to Ann Arbor, at least for a visit, if he was located in Toronto, and wanted any suggestions on UK possibilities.⁸⁴ Before I left Sydney, I agreed to write to him immediately after consultation with my colleagues at Michigan about US possibilities.

In a letter on 16 January 1967, he had the application forms for an MSW degree at Toronto and had been told only that they would look at his request to undertake it in one academic year. The Churchill Trust did not mind him being away longer, but would not increase the grant. Hazel and he were prepared for the extra cost, personal and financial, if he could gain the extra qualification, but two letters, one from Len Tierney the other from a colleague now in Toronto, had raised doubts about the wisdom of going to Toronto. He could finish up wasting a first-class opportunity on second class teaching.

I do feel the need for some solid basic course work with competent teachers. After 10 years of rush I want to absorb some good material and work under the discipline of guided reading, etc!

I discussed Spencer's situation with Rosemary Sarri soon after my arrival in the Michigan School of Social Work, and wrote to him on 16 January a letter which he said provided 'some light in the gloom surrounding my

84 Letter, Spencer Colliver to John Lawrence, 20/11/66.

future planning for overseas experience.' Rosemary considered the Michigan school compared more than favourably with Western Reserve, Berkeley and Chicago, in its social welfare administration teaching and related areas, and given Spencer Colliver's academic background and experience, the school could well admit him into course-work for the master's degree in eight months. Rosemary Sarri played a central role in the teaching of social welfare administration, and was engaged in major research with federal government money on corrections. She was clearly one of the outstanding members of an impressive faculty. (She took over from Henry Meyer as head of the school's doctoral program in social work and social science in 1970.)

In his letter of 26 January, Spencer said he had received a letter from Rosemary Sarri with application forms. He was waiting for other material from the school and for Len Tierney's opinion from New York, before making up his mind. Fees were going to be a problem and he was looking for further financial assistance.⁸⁵ On 26 March, Spencer had decided against Toronto. (John Morgan was leaving there to become dean at Pennsylvanian University's school.) Chicago was out because they would not accept him at the second year of the master's. He thanked me for providing a reference requested by Rosemary Sarri as a representative of the Michigan school's admissions committee. He was busy assembling all the information and references she had requested, and was working out a program now he had received the school's handbook. He accepted with appreciation our offer to have him live with us up in the attic of our home in Olivia Avenue in his first term, but on the understanding that if we had second thoughts we would say so. Hazel and he had decided to go into business – a food shop – at the end of April. It would be in Hazel's name and run by her. The family would live in a dwelling attached to the shop. Financially, something had to be done and done quickly. They had had excellent advice and help from friends. Hazel would be well settled by the time Spencer left in August. Friends had offered help of all kinds and he felt happy about the situation.⁸⁶

I was impressed by the quality of the Sarri letter requesting a reference:

We are interested in obtaining information that will aid us in arriving at an intelligent decision regarding this application, and also in planning the most appropriate educational program if the applicant becomes a student. Individuals who are selected must be able to fulfil the intellectual requirements of graduate school, and must possess personal qualifications considered essential to the professional practice of social work. The latter include sensitivity and responsiveness in interpersonal relationships, concern for the needs of others, adaptability, good judgment, creativity, integrity, and leadership potential.

... We would appreciate as clear an estimate as your knowledge of this applicant permits and shall consider the information confidential.⁸⁷

85 Letter, Spencer Colliver to John Lawrence, 26/1/67.

86 Letter, Spencer Colliver to John Lawrence, 26/3/67.

87 Letter, Rosemary C. Sarri to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 15/3/67. Guides were provided on what kind of information would be useful.

In my response, I indicated there was a strong possibility Spencer Colliver would take up an academic appointment teaching social welfare administration on his return to Australia.

Mr Colliver has already amply demonstrated leadership ability. His integrity is unquestionable, to my knowledge his judgment is good, and there is no doubt about his concern for others. In professional social work conferences, he has not as yet been a vocal participant, mainly I think because he has felt a relative newcomer compared with many who are vocal. He was, however, invited to give a plenary session paper at the 1967 national social work conference.

The fairly strict Presbyterian background from which Mr Colliver comes is sometimes apparent in his personal attitudes. He appears to have a firm religious faith but I have not observed it as being intrusive in his professional work.

After an extended period of high-pressure executive responsibility, Mr Colliver is in fact seeking opportunity for intensive reading and study in areas in which he already has some familiarity. I doubt that he would have difficulty in adjusting to a student role, though obviously his choice of an appropriate field work placement and supervisor may need special consideration.⁸⁸

When Spencer wrote on 17 May, he had received formal acceptance at Michigan from Mrs Sarri. 'The shop', a delicatessen and sandwich bar in Glenferrie Road, Hawthorn, was going well. Having the shop, he could now move away from the Presbyterian Church more quickly if necessary. (They had had a house provided by the church.) He had, however, accepted their financial assistance to cover the University of Michigan fees (\$1,100) plus some living expenses. He had applied for a fee concession and was looking for ways to reduce his indebtedness. His arrival in Ann Arbor would be on 24 August. Our attic sounded delightfully ivory-towerish; but he hoped it would be adequately heated.⁸⁹

In late September 1967, I reported to my parents that Spencer had settled in very well, both at home and at work. He obviously was missing his family, but had been sustained by a regular flow of letters, together with a recent phone call for his birthday. The faculty had organised an excellent program for him. His field work consisted of working as a research assistant in a fascinating study of the operations of the numerous poverty programs in Detroit. The study was headed by Bob Vinter and Rosemary Sarri, two 'really high-powered' people. Spencer would learn an enormous amount, as he had already realised, if he could keep up. The rest of his time, in course-work, had also worked out pretty well and he could scarcely hope for a better use of his time.⁹⁰

Hazel Colliver was very grateful that Spencer could live with us during his first term at Ann Arbor. She wrote, 'with all her gratitude', in May 1968, 'He was mighty lonely after you left but the Kriebel family befriended him and helped ease the ache for home and loved ones'.⁹¹ Spencer wrote in March 1968,

88 Letter, R. J. Lawrence to Mrs Rosemary C. Sarri, 17/3/67.

89 Letter, Spencer Colliver to John Lawrence, 17/5/67.

90 Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 29/9/67.

91 Letter, Hazel Colliver to John and Trish Lawrence, 28/5/68.

'I miss the opportunity for a talk and some genuine rough and tumble family life which we had in Olivia.'

Many people ask if I have heard from you and if you are settling back into Australian life – Roger, Syd, Henry Meyer, Rosemary (who has had her baby – a girl 8lb – never missed a lecture because the mid-term break came shortly after the baby was born), Bob Vinter, Jack Rothman – and so on.

He wondered if my books had arrived safely and where had I built my new library? I would need a research assistant to catalogue them. It was rumoured that Vinter and Sarri were negotiating a big research deal with Washington for a permanent research section obviating the problems of a series of specific projects. The Presidential election campaigns were on. Riots were brewing, and the negro and white communities of Detroit were arming themselves. 'I will probably only just get out in time'.⁹² Shortly before leaving Ann Arbor in June 1968, Spencer told us a number of people including Dr David French from the Brandeis faculty had encouraged him to apply to Brandeis for the 2-year doctoral program for 1969. French had indicated the level of financial support available and said he was the type of student they would like in the program. Spencer was making a 2-day stop there on the way home, but there would be 'enormous problems' getting the family there for two years. Spencer had the highest grade point average and had been recommended for the alumnus prize at Michigan, but it could not be awarded because he had not been there for two years. He was, however, elected to the alpha beta kappa national honor society for excellence in the classroom.⁹³

Spencer's two boys had been old enough to appreciate his success in his studies and had viewed his results which had been posted home with pride. Hazel had found the first year in the business difficult, but faced the next year with more confidence. Basically she liked the work or would never have stood up to the tremendous physical demands. Hazel was flying to Perth on 21 June to meet Spencer and was hoping they could visit the farm where he had spent his early years. His re-union with his children in Melbourne about a week later was carefully planned.⁹⁴

I was delighted on many counts that Spencer had made the most of this precious opportunity overseas. It had called for considerable sacrifice and discipline – not only from him personally but from all of his immediate family, particularly Hazel. As will be recounted, it was to be amply rewarded professionally. Although we did not know it when we were in Ann Arbor together, he and I were to become close colleagues for a period before he was appointed to the most senior social work appointment in Australia – heading the Social Welfare Division of the Commonwealth Department of Social Security.

Visitors in Ann Arbor

On 7 August 1967, Jenny Caldwell wrote asking if she and Diane Wright

92 Letter, Spencer Colliver to John and Trish Lawrence, 19/3/68.

93 Letter, Spencer Colliver to John and Trish Lawrence, undated (June 1968?).

94 Letter, Hazel Colliver to John and Trish Lawrence, 28/5/68.

could visit us on their way to Cincinnati where they would be doing nine and half months of field work in different agencies. They were former social work students from the University of Sydney, now doing their master's degree at Smith College in Northampton, Massachusetts. The course was extremely stimulating and they were impressed by the quality of the teaching, particularly in casework. They were finding the complexity of the social welfare structure overwhelming. The problem of poverty was the one that had had the greatest impact on their thinking to date.

The whole concept of "the poor" and the prevailing attitudes towards anti-poverty programmes are quite disturbing. It's hard not to react with anger when human rights which we accept as basic, are so constantly questioned. ...We are dying to hear your impressions of "the Great Society" - ours are not yet formulated.⁹⁵

We had Jenny and Diane to stay 5-9 September. They were both intelligent and very good 'exports', and we were sorry to see them leave. In their joint letter of thanks, they said by the time they left us,⁹⁶ they felt so much part of the family it was almost like leaving home again. They had found an apartment within walking distance of both of their agencies, shops and the University. The area was about 90% negro. Most of the families seemed comparatively well off, but there were riots there earlier in the summer. They hoped to get involved in some of the neighbourhood community activities to see first-hand issues concerning the local people. 'We have sought out the library and have made a start on that reading list - it will keep us going from now till next June without any trouble at all. We may have to write for renewed stimulation from time to time.'⁹⁷ I, of course, was not to know it at the time but both of these impressive young professional colleagues were to become social work educators with whom I would be directly associated back in Australia.

Another social work visitor from Sydney was Ruth Cleary, who stayed a week-end with us in October. She wrote in February when she heard from Mollie Booth that I had hepatitis. She and Gladys Cook had been thinking of us in January when the harsh weather bulletins came in. Trish would have had to fight the elements to get to visit me! Ruth had had an enjoyable week-end in Boston with Margaret Grutzner and an earlier exciting weekend with her in New York, which had included getting into a performance of Lucia de Lammermoor with Joan Sutherland. Ruth was doing two courses in the master's degree in social work at the University of Connecticut in Hartford and working in a placement at The Institute for Living, a (quite famous!) psychiatric hospital, but her plans were uncertain after May.⁹⁸

My work colleague Margaret Grutzner, who was on sabbatical leave in Boston, wrote to us a late welcome to America on 31 January, hoping we were coping with the reported bad weather and that the settling in process had been relatively uncomplicated. 'There are many differences and many irritating

95 Letter, Jenny Caldwell to Dr Lawrence, 7/8/67.

96 Trish, me, our three children, Spencer and Pongo, the dog we were minding.

97 Letter, Jenny Caldwell & Diane Wright to John & Trish Lawrence, 16/9/67.

98 Letter, Ruth Cleary to John Lawrence, 22/2/67.

quirks in the culture but I think it a fascinating and stimulating country nevertheless'. 'I hear tell of magnificent farewell parties and I'm sure you will be missed in the Department of Social Work, John, by Mary in particular.' 'Plenty of work here but interesting – am not sure how it can be applied on the home front but it is useful for a long-term project.' Margaret was expecting Ruth Cleary for the week-end. Ruth seemed to be getting a great deal out of her work and was getting good grades.⁹⁹

We invited Ruth Cleary to visit us if that fitted into her plans. On 25 August, she checked if we could have her to stay on the week-end 13–15 October. She was leaving her work at the Institute of Living on 29 September, and was doing some touring, including Expo in Montreal, before embarking from New York for England on the 'United States'. The week-end went well. Ruth subsequently wrote from the ship, 'I think in the short time we managed more than a fair interchange of news and thoughts, and I only hope that having three extra to the family all at the same time was not too exhausting. I enjoyed the children's company so much too.'¹⁰⁰ She wrote again from London. She had been accepted for a course at the Tavistock, but this could not be finalised until she had settled on a job. She had just had a most enjoyable week-end in the depths of Sussex with Helen Rees, who was well and thinking of another Australian visit in 1968.¹⁰¹

Mary Berry

Trish's sister, Mary Berry, was staying with us, as well as Spencer Colliver, when Ruth Cleary visited. Mary, with the assistance of her mother had run their pedigree goat stud and dairy¹⁰² until 1962. In 1963, she had returned to school teaching – at St Peter's Girl's School, and 1964–66 at St Alban's School. She had then decided to travel overseas starting with an animal safari in East Africa in November 1966. From Nairobi in Kenya she flew to Salisbury, visited more game and the Victoria Falls, flew to Johannesburg, and then to Cape Town where she stayed for a couple of weeks. From 2 January, she flew north to Johannesburg, Nairobi, and Addis Ababa in Ethiopia and arrived in Cairo on 15 January.

On 7 March 1967, Mary wrote to Trish from London.¹⁰³ Her tour trip across the north of Africa had been very interesting – particularly UAR (as Egypt was being called) and Morocco, and the numerous Roman ruins scattered along the coast, especially Leptis Magna (in Lybia). French was spoken in Tunisia, Algeria and Morocco, which helped her communication with people. She and a friend, Janet Bulling, were just about to spend a couple of months motoring on the continent – in France, Spain, Portugal, Italy, and Greece, and then going north to Scandinavia. When Mary wrote to Trish from Greece

99 Letter, Margaret Grutzner to Trish and John Lawrence, 31/1/67.

100 Letter, Ruth Cleary to Trish and John Lawrence, 24/10/67.

101 Letter, Ruth Cleary to John Lawrence, 10/11/67.

102 See C. Berry, 'The Anglo-Nubian Importations to South Australia', *The British Goat Society's Year Book 1956*, p. 14.

103 Letter, Mary Berry to Trish Lawrence, 7/3/67.

on 12 April,¹⁰⁴ she had booked on a camping trip in Canada and the U.S. with a free-lance photographer Rupert Oliver and his wife who were taking a small group on the trip. In late June, they would fly to New York, go north to Montreal by land-rover, and then across Canada to Calgary and the Rocky Mountains. From Yellowstone National Park they would go across the north of the U.S. to New York in about mid-September. Mary hoped to see us all later in the year.

Her letter on 2 June was again from London.¹⁰⁵ She and Janet had had a lovely time on the continent and went as far north as the Arctic Circle in Lapland. She was now going to meet up with her small touring group in New York on 29 June. Since she had to have a bare minimum of luggage, she asked if she could send a suitcase to us from there.¹⁰⁶ Mary next wrote on September 9 – from San Francisco. She had left the others resting in Yellowstone National Park, and had gone hitchhiking ‘as there seemed a lot to see’. George MacKenzie had given her a lift which had extended to the Grand Canyon, Bryce Canyon, Los Angeles, and San Francisco, and she would soon be heading to Lansing in Michigan, where George was due to begin work.

In the event, Mary’s stay with us in Ann Arbor became extended partly because she was laid low by a nasty viral infection. During this time, she made enquiries about speech therapy courses, both back in Australia and in Michigan, and we were all excited when she was admitted as a BSc student at Western Michigan University in Kalamazoo. On 8 November, she wrote from East Lansing thanking us for having her to stay and ‘for all the help in so many ways. ... It is very lonely without you all. I miss all the chat.’¹⁰⁷ She was now lodging with her friends, the Vander Bunes, who had offered her board and a room in return for helping with their children and house. It was the only kind of thing she could do without a work permit, Trish explained to her parents.¹⁰⁸

Mary went on to graduate from Western Michigan University in 1970 with a bachelor of science, honors college (*magna cum laude*), and a master of arts degree in 1971, on a graduate college fellowship. 1972–74, she was a PhD student and a teaching assistant at University of Wisconsin, Madison. She returned home to Adelaide with her son Jason, born in April 1973. In 1979, she began as a speech pathologist in private practice, and in 1984 was appointed a speech pathologist in the Education Department of South Australia. Jason had a particularly close relationship with his grandfather Dean Berry until Dean died in 1986. Although we did not live in Adelaide, over the years we have kept in regular contact with Mary and Jason. Both have had to cope with long-term ill-health, and we have tried to be as supportive as we can. Mary asked me to be Jason’s godfather, and Trish and I are two of the people entrusted with special responsibility to help Jason, in the event of her death.

104 Letter, Mary Berry to Trish Lawrence, 12/4/67.

105 Letter, Mary Berry to Trish Lawrence, 2/6/67.

106 In fact, it went to our friends the Bernards because we were away when it was sent.

107 Letter, Mary Berry to Trish and John Lawrence, 8/11/67.

108 Letter, Trish Lawrence to her parents, 22/10/67.

CONFERENCES AND OTHER MEETINGS

One of the great benefits of being at the University of Michigan, especially in its sesquicentennial year, was having access to a rich array of conferences and other meetings, to which prominent speakers were invited.

Conferences¹⁰⁹

'Meeting Social Welfare Manpower Needs' (18 May)

The morning session concentrated on 'new theoretical and methodological developments in social work practice and training relevant to manpower utilization and needs'. The afternoon session considered proposals for changes in agency practices for 'the more efficient and effective utilisation of staff'. Speakers and commentators included Milton Wittman (NIMH in Washington), David Fanshel (Columbia University), and Arnulf Pins (executive director, CSWE, New York).

Wittman had spent a year in the United Kingdom, which had 'a highly categorical approach' in its social services. The Seebohm Committee report was planning to unify local social work services as a step towards comprehensive service. The university-based training was slow to grow. In 1962, the central government had set up a Central Council of Training in Social Work based on colleges of advanced education with two-year certificate courses, a result of the Younghusband Report in the 1950s. Fanshel commented that the English experience was interesting to watch. 'Social work does not carry its own weight as it does here.' In the U.S., schools were building their base on the university campus, and he mentioned the contribution of non-social work academics. Pins discussed the serious shortage of social workers to meet the increasing demand for their services – 'what do you call a crisis when it gets worse'. There was a need to increase the production but at the same time change the product. Things were changing rapidly. Ability was needed in treatment, prevention, higher social functioning, social administration, social policy, research, casework, group work. Work was needed with all age groups; with all socio-economic groups. Even if there were no manpower shortage, less and different education, than the MSW, was required for different levels of staff. Roles needed to be clarified.

'Breaking the Poverty Cycle: Overcoming Barriers to Equal Opportunity' (25–26 August)

This was a special event to commemorate the University Sesquicentennial. Speakers and discussants included Arthur Ross (commissioner of labor statistics, US Department of Labor), Sar Levitan (professor of economics, George Washington University), Wilbur Cohen (under-secretary, US Department of Health, Education and Welfare), and James Dumpson (Dean, Fordham University and former commissioner of public welfare, New York City).

¹⁰⁹ In my work archives are extensive notes I took on various conference addresses.

The opening paper by Ross was on 'True Black Power'. He argued that the term 'black power' had been pre-empted by adventurers and demagogues. True black power was needed to help reconstruct Negro family and community life. Urban Negro masses and lower-income whites were struggling over limited opportunities for good jobs, schools, neighborhoods, and recreational facilities. They would have to be immensely expanded and great changes in social priorities would have to be made. Effective organisation and leadership would be needed to present the demands of the Negroes and press for them over the years. True black power would be needed to provide leadership roles for many of the intelligent, aggressive young Negroes presently obtaining an advanced education or enrolled in military service. No settlement of the racial conflict could succeed unless those young people were involved. Levitan argued that the creation of jobs was the most immediate and pressing requirement of the poor. He briefly reviewed and assessed federally-subsidised manpower programs. They were experimental and had serious flaws. They fell far short of the commitment to eradicate poverty. At least half of existing poverty could be eliminated by making jobs available to the poor. The domestic war on poverty had been forced to take increasingly second place to involvement in Southeast Asia.

In his introduction of Cohen, Dean Fauri described him as one of the most objective and dedicated public servants in the country. He had had a major influence on HEW legislation. 'No-one knows more about U.S. social welfare.' Cohen said it was 'a period of stress, strain and anxiety in the country'. He was glad he was on leave from the University of Michigan, and had somewhere to come back to. Despite the unprecedented prosperity (96% of the labor force at work, record numbers in education, etc), about 30 million lived in poverty. This paradox troubled the American conscience and there was a commitment to abolish poverty. A remarkable transformation of social thought had occurred since the 1950s. The emphasis on equality, opportunity and justice for the individual was new.

Cohen mentioned programs which had provided exciting new opportunities, and other new initiatives under President Johnson. The momentum had not slackened, although some of the methods might be seen as conservative later. Short-term and long-range goals were necessary. Some people had to be helped to take advantage of opportunities. The present focus was the Negro poor in city ghettos, but poverty was not just a color problem. White poor outnumbered Negro poor even in cities. The biggest program to relieve the poor was social security. It was imperative to improve social security and social assistance programs. There was wide variation in state to state assistance standards. Improvement of programs of education and training and of medical care were essential in the war on poverty. More radical thinking was needed about medical service patterns. By 1970, the proportion of the population in poverty should have fallen to 10%. In the following decade we could eliminate poverty, but there must be a new, unified approach to income support and rehabilitation. During the discussion following his paper, Cohen spoke of 'the supreme importance of non-segregated education', the need for a national standard in public assistance, and a stress on national citizenship.

James Dumpson, the African American dean of the School of Social Service at Fordham University, commented on a paper by a businessman Virgil Martin which argued for a negative income tax, and on Cohen's paper. He agreed with Cohen's objectives, and most of his propositions. I was impressed by Dumpson, and later invited him to Australia in connection with an international seminar in Brisbane on social aspects of rehabilitation.

'Voices of Civilization' (1–6 October)

This program of 33 public lectures, panel discussions, and demonstrations, by 'world intellectual leaders' chosen from names nominated by the faculty of the University, was a high-point of the sesquicentennial celebrations. Below is some indication of the nature and content of the ones I attended:

- Gunnar Myrdal's public lecture on 'The American Racial Problem'. Myrdal was a Swedish social scientist and Nobel-laureate economist. He described his book, *An American Dilemma: the Negro Problem and Modern Democracy*, 1944, as the first and last scholarly work he had done on the problem.¹¹⁰ Fundamentally the problem was what it was. Social relations did not change rapidly. His book was right on two points – the era of almost complete stagnation was reaching a close, and it was fundamentally a *moral* dilemma. At some point on a slowly rising curve, it was to be expected that Negroes would stand up and demand progress. 'The revolution of rising expectations' was the relevant concept. The Negroes were only one-tenth of the population, but many whites were on their side. Rebellion highlighted the moral dilemma. Ideals were important social facts especially when embedded in their institutions, but this did not mean that they were sovereign, that they really ruled the outcome.

Negroes were only about a quarter of the under-class in the U.S. – Indians, most Puerto Ricans, Mexicans, Asians, some of the eastern Europeans, many poor whites. The gap between the underclass and the rest was widening. Within the underclass was great heterogeneity, lack of active participation, and continual depletion of leaders. The future would depend on how other groups in the underclass would react to the Negro rebellion. There was great inertia in the social system. There was no 'natural' alliance among the underclass. The trade union movement was numerically weak.

In a democracy, all disadvantaged groups should press for justice, but pressure would not amount to much if it was dissipated among several underclass groups. 'We must find a way for helping them to keep together'. The Negro program must be integrated in the general reform program. A war on poverty involved rebuilding almost all inner cities, changing cities, the taxation system, local government, costing trillions of dollars – a fact never faced by the U.S. people and politicians. The tragic escalation of the Vietnam war made needed reform almost impossible. After Little Rock, the U.S. was seen in foreign countries as a dynamic nation that reformed itself,

110 This was a 5-year study funded by The Carnegie Foundation. It was widely read and was seen as very influential in how racial problems were viewed in the United States.

not like South Africa. But that period was over. The publicity of the riots and the Vietnam war had undermined the moral position of the country. The war was taking funds away, and a powerful white country was seen as trying to dominate a small colored nation. The entire political situation had now changed. It was a scandal that the Negro rebellion came as a surprise. Available knowledge had not been used for social engineering. Research was now ruled by politics.

- Dr M. G. Candau, a public lecture on 'A World Perspective on Health'. He was director-general of WHO. In the last 20 years, the situation had improved in developed countries, but not in developing countries where health services were not keeping up with population increases, partly because of the brain drain. Training facilities were snowballing in Latin America. Teaching in African schools patterned on institutions in Europe was not relevant to the problems of Africa. The role of WHO in population matters had proved controversial. Very few countries had family planning policies. Family planning was now seen as a political problem. Turning this into a technical problem was not easy with the shortage of technical personnel. 'We have just a few years to find a rational solution'. The spread of communicable diseases was a major technical problem. WHO was responsible to 128 member governments, but it was stupid that China was not a member. 'Our interest is in people'.
- Paul Samuelson, a public lecture on 'Some Modern Problems of Economics'. It was the 100th year of publication of Karl Marx's 'Das Kapital', and the 50th anniversary of the USSR. In the history of ideas the important thing was what attention was given to his idea, not whether he was right. About a third of the world now followed him, although as a prophet he was mostly wrong. The biggest things in our time were unforeseen. The great growth of Japan, Germany and the common market went well beyond prediction. The performance of the mixed economy was the biggest thing in his lifetime. It had not appeared in the Schumpeter's long-term vision of capitalism, socialism and democracy. What had changed the situation in mixed economies was what governments could do to control economies, but there were still problems of fine-tuning. Economics was a soft science.
- Symposium on 'Social Enfranchisement of Minorities and Ethnic Groups' – Raymond Firth (a New Zealand ethnologist, professor of social anthropology at LSE), Gunnar Myrdal and Theodosius Dobzhansky (zoology professor, Columbia University):

D – Race was what minorities were supposed to be but were not. The plasticity of human beings. Human 'breeds' differed from other groups in their ability to profit from education. The variation in human groups was the main point, not variation in the mean. Equality was a sociological, or religious, concept. Biologically, every individual was unique and not repeatable.

M – A racial group was not a matter of race, but a matter of racial beliefs. Beliefs were opportunistic stereotypes, sometimes contradictory and always wrong. Race was a young notion – only about 200 years. Social scientists had done far too little to expose beliefs. They were all wrong.

F – Racial thinking was fallacious. The notion of minority was a relative one. The minority of US citizens in the UK was not seen as a minority. There were over-privileged minorities. Concerned here with under-privileged minorities. Some religious minorities and gypsies feared being enfranchised. Mass minorities should not obscure the minor minorities. Minorities searched for control to preserve their identity. Sometimes minorities were split by political divisions.

M – Chinese minorities in Asian countries were often worse off than under colonial rule when their rights were protected. He was sceptical about classifications; they lead to general theories. The nationalist movement among Negroes could give them self-respect, but at the political level there was no possibility of it working. Martin Luther King, his friend whom he venerated, wanted all the underclass to work together.

F – A minority group had the choice of retaining its minority characteristics or give them up and get a place in the sun. In the long run, the moral instrument was best and get the majority to act. Equality was important.

D – Marriage was a sociological as well as biological phenomenon. From a biological view-point, intermarriage was neither advantageous or a disadvantage.

M – The economic factor was not fundamental; no factor was basic.

D – The survival of the fittest was a nineteenth century concept, which now could not be recognised.

F – Problems have not been created just by discussion. A notion of the democratic process was needed. Study was objective. Two types of knowledge were needed – of the dentist and of the patient.¹¹¹

M – The U.S. had changed in the last 25 years. It was now trying to change a lot of things by legislation. You cannot change things rapidly.

- ‘US Foreign Policy’ was discussed in a lively exchange between Dean Acheson (former U.S. secretary of state), and Edwin Reischauer (former American ambassador to Japan, now professor at Harvard).
- Paul Hoffman, talked about what was required to bring about ‘Peace in Your Time’. He had been administrator of the Marshall Plan in post-war Europe and of the UN Development Program. He spoke of the need for ‘a monumental shift in human attitudes’ towards war.
- Jean Piaget (child psychologist and head of the Institut Jean Jacques Rousseau in Switzerland) told us about his and other experimental work with children on memory, and discussed the relationship between memory and intelligence. Memory was inconsistent, vague and fluid unless it was based on intellectual schema.

June 14–17, I attended the Fulbright mid-west Conference on Higher Education, held in Ann Arbor. The opening address by Kenneth Boulding, ‘The University as an Agent in the World of Super-Culture’, was typically

111 Not an apt metaphor in the context of a democratic process!

thoughtful.¹¹² The University of Michigan was now a world university, not a state university. It was part of a subversive world system. The preservation of the richness of locality, variety etc was, however, a major problem. Modernisation was not the same as westernisation or Americanisation. The humanities were special, peculiar, local. Culture existed only in people. There was an enormous loss, each generation. As we know more, the problem of transmission is the greater. There was a radical need for new learning methods. Super-culture destroyed folk-culture if folk-culture was weak. It was disastrous if the university became divorced from the folk-culture. Super-culture was beginning to develop a world identity. The function of universalists was to maintain creative tension between super-culture and folk culture. Larger and smaller loyalties had to be reconciled. The ethical principles of super-culture were faith and hope, but not much charity.

In my report to the Fulbright organisation at the end of the year, I described the conference as a very worthwhile experience.

Until then, I had no real sense of being a participant in an international educational program. Every scholar should be strongly urged to attend one such conference and participate actively. The quality of the speakers and the cross-discipline and cross-cultural nature of the discussion make it an important vehicle for Fulbright objectives.

OTHER LEARNING OCCASIONS

Faculty Research Meetings

- Tony Tripodi, ‘Cognitive complexity’. (4 April).
- Paul Glasser, ‘The development of a values scale for use in the Philippines’. (18 September)
- Irwin Epstein reported on a study of the political behaviour of about 1,000 members of the National Association of Social Workers. (9 October)
- Eugene Litwak, ‘Different primary group structures and their functions: kin, neighbours and friends’. (2 November)
- John Tropman, ‘Community planning organisations’. (14 December)

Social Work and Social Science Colloquia (for doctoral students and others interested)

- A public administration seminar on Gilbert Steiner’s *Social Insecurity: The Politics of Welfare*, 1966. (23 March) The political scientist Robert Friedman thought the political analysis weaker than the welfare analysis; while Phil Booth and Syd Bernard thought the opposite.
- Saul Pilnick, ‘New approaches to the treatment of hardcore juvenile

112 He was a professor of economics at the University of Michigan, but in fact for him economics, sociology and the other social sciences were aspects of a single social science which studied the social system. According to biographer David Latzko, his writings were so rich and varied that they defied generalisation. ‘Yet, the same purpose eventually came to drive all his research: to understand society in its totality.’ Boulding (1910–93) was born in England and read PPE at Oxford.

- delinquents'. (29 March) The speaker was director of an educational-ly-based group rehabilitation program in Newark, New Jersey.
- Mayer Zald, 'The Power and Functions of Boards of Directors' (25 October) Zald was a sociologist who had edited *Social Welfare Institutions* and written extensively on formal organisations. His paper was concerned with 'the political economy of organisations'; with understanding how organisations were changed and controlled.
 - Stanley Milgram in 'The Small World Problem', reported on a communication project at Harvard.¹¹³ (27 October) This analysed a person's contacts in a period of time in terms of a number of variables, and found discrepancy between intuition and fact on a number of links made.
 - 'End Poverty – Can We? How?' (13 December) Alvin Schorr discussed six issues in developing income maintenance programs (categorical or generalised approaches, income-test programs which degraded recipients, closing the gap between the poor and non-poor or establishing a minimum, worker incentives, efficiency of anti-poverty programs, and understanding the income development of American families – at what point does money matter most?) Raymond Munz considered various negative income tax schemes that could establish a poverty threshold. Harvey Brager gave figures on the size of the poverty problem and reacted to both papers – categorical programs were not really at issue, income testing was necessary in a time of budget constraint, there were difficulties in weekly or monthly payments in schemes discussed by Munz, a children's allowance might replace the existing tax exemption.

Public lectures at the University

- Dr Thomas Szasz, a public lecture in the Rackham Theatre. (March 1967) Szasz had published *The Myth of Mental Illness* in 1960. He was a psychiatrist and academic sharply critical of the moral and scientific foundations of psychiatry, and of the social control aims of modern medicine.
- Dr David Starke Murray, 'The British National Health Service: its current status and prospects'. (27 September) The speaker was a pathologist and medical administrator on a world tour for WHO. He was closely associated with the inception of the NHS in Britain and was a past-president of the socialist medical association... Although there were acute criticisms of the NHS, there was now general acceptance of the principle that the state should provide medical care. Changes were too slow, however, and it was time for another revision. Hospitals, largely a legacy of the 19th century, absorbed 65% of NHS expenditure, health centres were needed, medical and para-medical training was being challenged, and so on. The medical profession

113 Milgram was the social psychologist whose experimental work on obedience to authority was so controversial.

was usually right-wing, was divided in many ways, and looked for compromises, but it was part of the general acceptance of the NHS. Migration, on balance, had not affected the system much, although there was some concern over quality. Britain exported about one-third of its doctors overseas. GPs were a little less than half all practicing doctors. 70% were now working in group practice, many in health centres.

- Dorothy Wedderburn, ‘Issues on Aging in Great Britain’. (4 December) The lecturer, a co-author of *Old People in Three Industrial Societies* (U.S, U.K, and Denmark), compared and contrasted the situation for old people in the U.S. and the U.K. There was much more inequality in the U.S. although its people were much more positively oriented to retirement there than in the U.K., and there were the same sorts of problem groups – the elderly widows, and to a lesser extent single women, and the very old.

Other meetings attended

- Dr Gerald Caplan, ‘The prevention of mental disorders by crisis intervention’. (9 June) A meeting of the association of clinical and research studies at Ypsilanti State Hospital.
- An informal seminar with Dr William Neenan, being considered for a joint appointment with the economics department. (18 October) Considerable discussion of the conceptual, theoretical and practical problems of cost-benefit analysis, which had become popular since 1965 under President Johnson. Mainly benefit studies but what of the costs? Opportunity costs. Benefits to others. Indirect benefits. Housewife’s productivity. Non-market productivity. Difficulties and limitations of money measures.
- Dr Wilma Donohue and a colleague discussed the Detroit Area Study. (16 December) Donohue was pioneer of gerontology.
- Meetings of the Huron Valley Chapter of NASW (March) Report on the recent NASW conference in Washington Wilbur Cohen on major social policy programs.¹¹⁴

An Unexpected Invitation

On 30 November, I gave a two-hour presentation and discussion in the Department of Urban and Regional Planning at the University of Toronto. Our town planning friends Pam and John Hitchcock had moved with their family to Toronto, where John now had an academic appointment in this department. John wrote that in their discussions in the department, they had been ‘trying to come to grips with some notion of an overall planning process, and then trying to establish where urban and regional planning fits into this.’ They wanted to inform students about what was going on in other planning arenas. Hence my

¹¹⁴ ‘Fluent, rather satisfied, captive of the system?’ is the way I briefly recorded my impression of Cohen after this meeting.

invitation. My initial response to the department took this form:

I am happy to share with you and your colleagues my impression of what seems to be going on in the School here in relationship to social policy and planning. Don't expect anything too precisely formulated because social work too is in a ferment about its actual, proper and potential roles. The discussion, of course, cannot avoid getting caught up with value questions as well as technical ones, and these I think need to be tackled directly. I have chaired a faculty study committee to make curriculum recommendations in the area of social philosophy and professional ethics, so have had to do some reasoned hard thinking on topics, rather neglected in professional schools, which I suspect are very relevant to your concern. My own social policy concern, as you may remember from the book I am planning, is very broad, and is vitally interested in justification and coordination questions. I am not just interested in social work's place in the sun.¹¹⁵

John thought that both my notions concerning 'the big picture' and about what social work was up to would be very useful. I suggested a couple of articles from *Encyclopedia of Social Work*, for distribution as background reading for my presentation. In the presentation, I dealt with the new social work curriculum at Michigan, the gap in the area of social philosophy and professional ethics and our recommendations to fill it, the subject of social administration in Britain, social planning and physical planning, some of the forces and problems that were roadblocks to 'The Great Society', criticisms of established agencies and approaches, some trends and developments in planning (greater governmental activity in local social planning; greater external influence on local community planning; new and multiple centres of planning; new forms and structures for social planning; more emphasis on social policy and social change; increased neighbourhood and grass roots planning and action; changes within community welfare councils); and finally, some core issue areas for community planning in the 1960s – Is the local community a viable entity for community planning? What should be the relationship between governmental and voluntary agencies? What is the place of citizen participation? What should be the emerging role of the community welfare council? While in Toronto, I also discussed social work education with the faculty members of the Toronto School of Social Work.

As well as having my airfares paid and staying with the Hitchcock family in Toronto, I received a cheque for \$100 for my efforts – from Professor Dakin, the chairman of the department. They had 'very much enjoyed' my brief stay and hoped for a return visit sometime.¹¹⁶ John Hitchcock also wrote a note: 'Well it was great fun, and we are very glad you took the plunge in the face of your imminent departure. I gather from subsequent remarks of students that they felt your line of discussion was most interesting, and represented a kind of input they were not now getting. ... Many thanks again.'

115 Letter, John Lawrence to John Hitchcock, 8/11/67.

116 Letter, Professor A. J. Dakin to Professor J. Lawrence, 5/12/67.

ACOSS

In February 1967, Hope Clayton, the executive officer of ACOSS, sent me the 'warm thanks' of the ACOSS executive for my work as editor of the 4th conference proceedings. The publisher (F. W. Cheshire) had praised the way the material had been edited and had indicated an interest in proceedings of future ACOSS conferences.¹¹⁷ Before I left Sydney, it had been suggested that it would be helpful for me to discuss informally with the secretary-general of ICSW various ACOSS concerns, if and when I was in New York. In a very full letter on 8 June, Hope Clayton referred to 'the difficulty of getting a real feeling of involvement by the national committees in the work of ICSW.'¹¹⁸ Should the regional office of ICSW invite participation of an Australian in a program without prior consultation with the national committee? Regional seminars of the ICSW should be planned in consultation with the regional offices of both the IFSW and the IASSW. There seemed much better liaison at the international level between these bodies, than at the regional level. Channels of communication and relationships with other international bodies, especially the IFSW and the IASSW 'with whom we are closely associated', needed to be clarified at the regional level. Executive officers or official representatives of national committees should meet at the time of the international conferences. This would build up relationships between national committees, both at regional and international level.¹¹⁹ On 8 June, Hope Clayton wrote to the executive officer of ICSW in New York, telling her of my year of teaching and research at the University of Michigan:

Dr Lawrence is one of Australia's most distinguished social workers and he has been closely associated with many of the programmes of the Council. He edited the Proceedings of our Fourth National Conference and was also responsible for preparing the material on the ICSW Terminology Project a couple of years ago. He is particularly interested in the co-ordination of social welfare services and we thought it would be very valuable for this Council if he were to have some discussion with you on international and Regional relationships in the social welfare field.

I called on the ICSW office in New York in July when we were in the middle of our summer touring trip. For an hour and a half, I discussed with Miss Lilian Espy and Miss Margaret Adams the various points in Hope Clayton's letter. Miss Espy was the part-time acting executive officer of ICSW, appointed after the sudden death of Ruth Williams in March. Margaret Adams, formerly an executive officer of the IFSW, and now director of the NASW department of professional standards, was quite active and helpful in the discussion. Both considered Hope had raised important issues and assured me they were very much in the minds of at least some of the key people. They were very appreciative of the chance to have these matters aired in this informal way. We agreed the ICSW needed hard-thinking and clear policies on the relationships between

117 Letter, H. Clayton to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 6/2/67.

118 One of the motivations for setting up ACOSS had been that it would be able to serve as an Australian national committee for the ICSW.

119 Letter, Hope Clayton to Dr R. J. Lawrence, 8/6/67.

national committees, regional offices and the New York office. I found it a pleasant and fruitful experience, although it was evident that Miss Espy had pretty much a holding brief until a new secretary-general was appointed.¹²⁰ Margaret Adams subsequently sent to me some promised research material and wrote, 'I enjoyed our meeting and appreciated your helpful comments re ICSW'.

George Rabinoff and Len Tierney

I first met George Rabinoff in 1962 when he was in Australia on a Fulbright fellowship from the United States, helping to develop community organisation teaching in the School of Social Work at the University of Queensland. Later that year, he was a consultant for the Australian National Red Cross and the Jewish Welfare and Relief Society in Melbourne. Born in 1893, George had had extensive social work experience in community organisation, research, administration, and education, since receiving his certificate of graduation from the New York School in 1914. He had been a leader in the Jewish communal service and had served as president of the National Conference of Jewish Communal Service. In the ten years prior to his 'retirement' in 1961, he was deputy director of the staff of the National Social Welfare Assembly, a body with general social welfare objectives like ACOSS. On his return to the United States in 1963, George was appointed social planning consultant to the New York Housing Authority.¹²¹

George and I kept in touch. He sent me a 'get well' card in April 1967, after he heard from Len Tierney I had been ill. Len and his family had come to New York in the Fall, but were living across the river (in New Jersey) and since neither family had a car, they had not seen much of them. Len was doing his thesis (for his DSW at Columbia University) on housing and had been at the office several times for data.¹²² Les Halliwell (University of Queensland) had just sent George a copy of his master's thesis on Rockhampton. George and Jenny (his wife) hoped we would be coming through New York before returning home. After further correspondence, the Lawrences, the Tierneys, and the Rabinoffs met up for lunch when we were staying with the Jeffries on our summer touring. I welcomed Len's letter of 29 June, although I did not receive it until after our luncheon meeting.

Glad to know you have found things stimulating. Even when I was here last time I found I could not go along with a lot of things – even granting a different culture, but there is a touch of professional confidence and maturity here which we lack at home. And then of course there is the manpower aspect. I have always felt that I have been spread too thinly at home and almost apart from yourself have lacked intellectual stimulation from colleagues. Being spread out *and* lacking stimulation is a bad combination. Here there are a number of people who have devoted the whole of their professional lives to one area – it makes a difference.

120 Letter, John Lawrence to Hope Clayton, 3/8/67.

121 See Maurice Bernstein, 'George W. Rabinoff 1893–1970', *Journal of Community Service*, Summer 1970, pp. 351–3 – available on the internet.

122 Len's DSW thesis was 'Excluded Families', a study of a group of families who had lived in emergency housing at Camp Pell, 1946–56.

Unlike yourself I have read very widely with no duties (that is awkwardly put). I sat in a seminar in the Institute of Urban Environment and did quite a lot of reading in this area in the most magnificent of all of the Columbia libraries – Avery which is claimed to be without equal in its area. Have had a heavy programme with the core being centred around organizational theory. Have had Theodore Caplow as my tutor. He is a fine scholar more in the English mould – not as well known as some, but has some elegant research to his credit and several fine books. Took another seminar with Amitai Etzioni, one with Conrad Arensburg, one with William Goode. Spent some time with Chester Rubin who wrote the Model Cities Bill. Do not know whether you know any of these people but all are eminent and justly so. Simon Slavin chairman of the Community Organisation sequence, was a pleasant surprise. He has written little, if anything, and I had not heard of him, but very able in his field.

C.U.S.S.W not what it was – not that they lack some outstanding talent – with Dr Kahn, Dr Slavin and Dr Burns teaching the doctoral programme along with Dr Ohlin, but the school seems unsettled. The dean resigned in mid-semester to take a dean-ship at the University of Hawaii. I suspect this has been the area of difficulty. No doubt things will pick up. Columbia has a \$200 million appeal under way at the moment and a nice chunk is to be allocated for a new building for the school, which enjoys good standing with the main University authorities.

The level of doctoral students is quite high. Most are in the 35–45 year age group, which was comfort. Looking forward to seeing you.¹²³

My Research Project

It will be recalled that originally I had in mind spending most of my sabbatical year in North America examining the way in which other places had tackled providing basic data on the social welfare of their societies. To lay the foundation for the development of social administration (or social policy) as an academic subject in Australia, I had in mind: 1. A systematic account of basic historical and contemporary data on social administration in Australia; 2. An Australian social welfare index; and 3. A collection of annotated documents especially relevant to Australian social administration.¹²⁴ My teaching and other responsibilities at the University of Michigan prevented this being my main focus. However, by June I had decided to plan in detail a book on Australian social welfare (social conditions and policies), organised in a coherent framework, with multiple authors if I could find them. 'It's a tall order, but something like it is I think badly needed, and ACOSS could well be interested in supporting the idea', I wrote to my parents.¹²⁵ (I had hoped I might have spent a year's work on the project with research assistance in 1966 before coming to America, but my application for research assistance from the ARGC had been turned down.)

In her letter on 8 June, Hope Clayton said she was very interested in my suggestion of an encyclopedia or handbook on Australian social welfare. The

123 Letter, Len Tierney to John, Trish and family, 29/6/67.

124 See p. 282.

125 Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 1/6/67.

possibility of a similar project had arisen from discussion with Max Wryell, director of planning of the Department of Social Services 'in connection with the need for resource material both for the use of ACOSS and International Conferences of the ICSW, and also as material for the Australian community generally and for Australian representatives overseas. The idea was in line with your suggestion that the handbook is a descriptive statement of where we are in Australia at present. This, as you say, would be a much more practical task than a book on Australian social policy, but it might be a useful point from which the other book could be tackled.' Mr Wryell thought his department would be pleased to cooperate, but finance would probably have to be found elsewhere. Hope Clayton thought the project might be a fundamental task for ACOSS and that the Council should be prepared to put some money into it. They both thought it would need to be tackled first on a State basis. Subsequently she had learned that Les Halliwell at the University of Queensland was editing a book, 'Social welfare in Queensland', to be published by the Queensland University Press.

In my letter to Hope Clayton on 3 August, I wrote:

With regard to the Australian Encyclopedia or Handbook, I have already spent a lot of time on a conceptual framework, using international comparisons to help sort out what might and what might not be included. The idea at present is a considerably modified version of the American Social Work Encyclopedia. Unlike that work, it would not have a specifically social work orientation; it would pay more attention to broad social conditions; it would hopefully be more systematic and therefore more useful; and perhaps contributions would be grouped instead of being arranged alphabetically. The focus would be on what is known about contemporary social conditions, (to some extent across the society, not just in the 'welfare' segment), and the part played by social policies and administrative structures to maintain or change these.

I'm convinced we badly need in Australia very much more up-to-date reliable description and analysis of our current social conditions and social welfare systems and policies; and that with a large-scale inter-disciplinary and inter-professional effort we can get something far more useful for social policy discussion than, for example, the Davies and Encel book. A periodic general survey of the kind I am envisaging could have an integrating and coordinating, as well as informative influence. Part of the job would be to summarise and make much more widely available what is going on in the different specialised segments of the society.

While an accurate, full national catalogue or directory of welfare provision is, of course, useful and needed for certain important purposes, this, as you can see, is not what I have in mind. I think the attempt should be made to view Australian social conditions and policies in their full societal context, not being bound by what is conventionally called social welfare. As I see it, many of the contributors to the book would not be engaged in the traditionally defined social welfare field. They would, however, need to have access to data in social welfare agencies.

Any contributor who comes to grips with the policy assumptions, community values, policy effects, and distribution questions will remain uncontroversial only if his or her work is sterile. I would hope that ACOSS, the State Councils of Social

Service, the specialised coordinating agencies, individual agencies, and various professional groups are mature enough to welcome responsible discussion of their scope and functions. How to gain the full cooperation of those involved in the social welfare sector of the community without jeopardising the nature of the project is a thorny question.

The habits of mind of social scientists, not of direct participants in social work and policy-making and policy administration would be necessary to the project's success. If ACOSS and its member agencies had sufficient conviction about the long-term contribution such a project could make to the Australian society and also trusted the ability and integrity of the contributors, some kind of ACOSS sponsorship would seem to be very appropriate. This could take the form of financial assistance, but perhaps more importantly it could mean for contributors ready access to affiliated agencies in the various states. Other possibly interested sponsors could be the Australian Social Science Research Council or the Nuffield Foundation.

In June, Hope Clayton had asked me for comments on how I might see myself as working with ACOSS for a production of a book. I replied that it was impossible to suggest the best working arrangements until I had had a chance to discuss the feasibility of my conception of the project with some of the potential contributors and others back in Australia. Enlisting the interest and disciplined energies of first-rate contributors would be vital to the project's success. Finally, I commented that a series of independent state books could not build up a national picture unless the material was comparable. A common national framework would provide the best chance to achieve maximum comparability. I said my letter was 'a preliminary feeler' to see if ACOSS might be interested in being involved in some way with the project as I envisaged it.

I should emphasise that I don't anticipate quick results. It involves a major, sustained intellectual and administrative effort, no doubt fraught with frustrations and any outcome is likely to fall short of expectations. But I think the attempt could and should be made, and I'm willing to try to organise it.¹²⁶

When Tom Brennan wrote to me on 16 June, he said he was interested in my notion and plans for 'The Australian Statistical Account (to give it another title)'. The Scottish Statistical Account was an 'account of the state of the people'. David Marsh's bringing up to date Carr-Saunders' original 'Conditions of the people of England and Wales' would be a better model. He did not know who might be persuaded to pay for the preparation but perhaps SSRC or ACOSS might help. On 12 September, he suggested I apply for a University Research Grant for fairly modest assistance if the outline of my proposed book was sufficiently advanced.¹²⁷ I applied for financial assistance of \$450, for travelling and other expenses connected with my proposal which I described in these terms:

¹²⁶ Letter, John Lawrence to Hope Clayton, 3/8/67.

¹²⁷ Letter, Tom Brennan to John Lawrence, 16/6/67.

A Handbook on Contemporary Australian Social Conditions and Social Policies

... Within a common conceptual framework, contributors from many disciplines will focus on what is known about social conditions, and the part played by social policies in maintaining or changing these conditions.

I told Tom I did not think organising a research assistant in relation to the project was practical at this stage, but would be a strong possibility in a year's time. 'The longer I stay, the busier I become.' I then mentioned teaching the new analytic issues course in social welfare policy, the teaching paper I was asked to develop by the social services faculty group, and chairing the faculty study group for curriculum recommendations in the social philosophy and professional ethics area. 'Although at the moment I'm not working on The Project, much of what I'm doing certainly has a bearing on it.' 'I recently spoke with Kenneth Boulding on The Project and he was particularly interested and enthusiastic'.¹²⁸

In 1968, back in Sydney I used the financial assistance to visit interstate and in Canberra some of the potential contributors to test the feasibility of tackling the national project. It soon became apparent, however, that I would not be able to find enough relevant contributors to make the project worthwhile at that stage of Australia's development. I had spent a lot of time thinking about what kind of knowledge was needed for an adequate understanding of Australian social conditions and social policies, and had become well aware of the extent of our collective ignorance when trying to teach in the area. As has been apparent in this account, I was aware that what I was aspiring to for the nation was 'a tall order', and that its fulfilment would take time. It was now obvious, however, that what I could achieve personally was severely limited. Progress in knowledge development depended on many other initiatives as well as my own. When the Whitlam government took office in 1973 with the slogan 'It's time', it was forced to set up a flurry of commissions and enquiries to collect data necessary to support its social reform initiatives. This exposed how ill-equipped Australians were to make effective and efficient social policies based on adequate knowledge as well as justifiable values. Perhaps more than anything else what was required was many scholars who identified social policy as their main teaching and research interest. The most obvious way in which this might occur would be for social policy to develop as an academic discipline in its own right as had happened in Britain.

In my own case, before the end of 1968, I had left the University of Sydney and was no longer holding an academic appointment in social administration, although I was engaged in social policy teaching in a school of social work which I now headed. My central interest in social policy has remained undiminished, but as will be explained in the next volume it has had to be balanced with other social work responsibilities. From my pioneering social administration appointment, the teaching in social policy and administration developed at the University of Sydney under successive appointments of Tony Vinson, Michael Horsburgh and eventually Bettina Cass, who was appointed to a chair of social policy.

128 Letter, John Lawrence to Tom Brennan, 20/9/67.

Speaking Assignments for 1968

In early June 1967, I received correspondence from Tom Brennan about a plenary session paper to the next ACOSS national conference.¹²⁹ It was to be in Brisbane on 19–24 May, 1968. The theme of the conference was ‘The Welfare of Ethnic Minorities’, including the problems of immigrants and aboriginal Australians. The convenor of the program planning committee, Duncan Timms from the Department of Anthropology and Sociology at the University of Queensland, had written to Tom, asking him to help. Tom would be away on sabbatical leave but said the section he was asked to try and deal with ‘should be exactly in the line of interest of John Lawrence’. It was the ‘Responsibility’ section – the role of governments and other bodies for the welfare of ethnic minorities. Each plenary session was to be followed by concurrent sessions devoted to particular aspects of the topic. I wrote to Dr Timms saying I was very interested in the topic and would be willing to tackle a plenary session paper, and also provide a framework for discussion of the topic. However, I could not at a distance organise speakers for particular aspects of the topic – and I had given a plenary session paper at the last ACOSS conference.¹³⁰

Another significant speaking engagement for 1968 came from Neville Meaney, a joint organiser of a conference of the Australian and New Zealand American Studies Association which was being held in Sydney, August 26–30, 1968. He said they had not had a paper on the social or social welfare area before, and it would be ‘a good thing’ if I were to present a paper of general interest in this area, if my work in the USA made this possible. I replied that it would pin me down and force me to systematise a lot of US data and impressions, and suggested a number of possible titles. Whatever the title, the discussion could be concerned with current perspectives on US social problems and ways of dealing with them. If he thought it advisable I could narrow it down to a particular problem area, the obvious one being poverty.¹³¹ In the event, my chosen title was ‘The Great Society: rhetoric or reality?’

A Memorable Summer Camping Trip

We decided to spend from 20 June to 31 July 1967 on a camping trip seeing places of interest and visiting friends. This was made feasible by our very reliable and spacious station wagon; by Fred and Gai Cox, who very generously lent us all of their excellent camping equipment; and by the warm hospitality of Pam and John Hitchcock in Chapel Hill, Rob Laurie in Washington, Elisabeth and Graham Jeffries at Larchmont near New York, and Guido and Ann Calabresi near New Haven. We had known the Laurie family in Sydney for many years and Rob was now a young Australian diplomat living in embassy accommodation in Washington. Each of the other couples now had children, and our children could enjoy their company when we visited. The Jeffries children and

129 Letter, Tom Brennan to John Lawrence, 29/5/67.

130 Letter, John Lawrence to D. W. N. Timms, 6/6/67.

131 Letter, Neville Meaney to John Lawrence, 17/6/67. Letter, John Lawrence to Neville Meaney, 3/8/67. I knew Neville from the University of Adelaide, where he was a history student. He was now teaching in the History Department at the University of Sydney, and had spent time in the USA.

ours were of almost identical age and gender. We were disappointed when we found out that Jack Love and his family were not moving to Baltimore until mid-August so we would miss them. I also unsuccessfully tried to contact Ivan Feltham in Toronto.

By the beginning of June, all the bookings I had made with various campgrounds along the way had been confirmed. The travel services section of the Automobile Club of Michigan provided us with information about campgrounds, general maps, and excellent strip maps with notes on places of interest, once we had decided on our route. In the first few days, we drove south to the Great Smoky Mountains National Park, on the boundary of Tennessee and North Carolina – almost 500 miles. Our route took us through Toledo, Lima, Dayton and Cincinnati in Ohio, through Lexington ('the horse capital of the world'), and Corbin (Cumberland Falls were nearby) in Kentucky, and on to Knoxville in Tennessee, just an hour's drive from the Smoky Mountains, where we spent 22 to 25 June. The National Park was more than 800 square miles of the southern Appalachian Mountains – an area of chestnut, black cherry and spruce forests, waterfalls and mountain streams, and many native flowers and wild life, including bears. The children were excited when we fished for and caught trout near the campground, not however from a mountain stream but from a fish farm! Our route to Ashville along the Blue Ridge Drive in North Carolina provided exceptional mountain scenery. On the way from there to Chapel Hill, a distance of 238 miles, we camped overnight at Tanglewood, a campground near the village of Clemmons, before going through Winston-Salem to Chapel Hill, where we stayed with the Hitchcock family 27 to 30 June. John had almost completed his doctoral studies in town planning at the University of North Carolina.

From Chapel Hill, we headed north-east through nearby Durham (which housed Duke University) to Richmond in Virginia – 168 miles. Richmond was the capital of the confederate states of America during the Civil War. The area had numerous war memorials, and the confederate flag was widely flown despite controversy over its symbolism. From Richmond we headed 55 miles west to visit Williamsburg and stay in a campsite at Jamestown Beach. Jamestown had been the site of the first permanent English settlement in North America in 1607, and was capital of the colony of Virginia 1616 to 1699. Williamsburg took over as capital in 1699, and in turn Richmond took over in 1780, during the American Revolutionary War. The colonial section of Williamsburg was neglected as the modern town was built around it. In the 1920s, colonial Williamsburg began to be re-created and restored and a living museum was established, owned and operated by a foundation initially endowed by the Rockefeller family. Trish's father had told us about Colonial Williamsburg. It contained about 500 buildings; 88 of the buildings were original. The reconstructions included the governor's palace, the capital building, shops, taverns and open-air markets, the grounds and gardens. This remarkable museum had become a very popular tourist attraction.

Returning to Richmond, we headed west to Shenandoah National Park, where we joined the Skyline Drive which ran 105 miles north along the crest of the Blue Ridge Mountains. Half-way along we camped overnight at Big

Meadow on 3 July. We arrived to stay with Rob Laurie in Washington late on 4 July and watched a spectacular fireworks display with him that evening. In Washington, we spent almost a whole day in the Smithsonian Air and Space Museum. The children were particularly interested in the exhibits from recent space travel. I had a productive visit to Ida Merriam, the assistant commissioner for research, Social Security Administration, the Department of Health, Education and Welfare. After three days in Washington, we headed for the Jeffries who lived in Larchmont about 18 miles north of midtown Manhattan, New York – a total distance of about 234 miles. We passed through Baltimore and Wilmington, and saw a little of Philadelphia along the way. Our week with the Graham and Elizabeth Jeffries and their three children went much too quickly. We did not see as much as we could have, but it was hard to get off with all the children. Graham and Elizabeth were good friends from Oxford days and we had not seen them for 11 years. They gave Trish and me a fun day in Manhattan without the children. Another day Trish shopped successfully with Elizabeth for dresses at summer sales, and I visited the ICSW office in New York.¹³² Larchmont was an affluent village on the shore of Long Island Sound, where Graham sailed a small yacht. Appointed a senior research fellow at Cornell University Medical College in 1960, he was now an associate professor and in 1966, he had become a member of the American Gastroenterology Association. Just two years later, the family moved to Hershey, Pennsylvania, when Graham was appointed professor and chairman of the Department of Medicine at the Hershey Medical Centre of the Pennsylvania State University College of Medicine.

On 16 July we drove about 65 miles along the coast to New Haven, Connecticut, to visit Guido and Anne Calabresi and their three children. We had kept in touch with Guido since knowing him at Magdalen, and had looked forward to seeing him and meeting Anne whom he had married in 1961. Guido had been appointed a full professor at Yale University in 1962, at the age of 29, the youngest in the history of Yale Law School. He was to become dean of the Law School in 1985, and in 1994 was nominated by President Clinton to be a judge of the U.S. Court of Appeals for the Second Circuit in New York. They lived on a farm on the outskirts of New Haven. Our children were delighted by the place and we thoroughly enjoyed chatting with Guido and Anne. Anne's mother helped her to provide us with a memorable dinner to mark the occasion. We could well have stayed longer than just one day. Guido, true to his name, gave us an excellent guided tour through Yale.

After a 103-mile drive north-east from New Haven on 17 July, we arrived at Providence, Rhode Island, one of the first cities to be established in the U.S.. We camped on Cape Cod, Massachusetts, 17–19 July – at East Brewster about half way along the Cape in the Nickerson State Park, about 90 miles from Providence. Cape Cod was a popular holiday place for people from New York and Boston, but it was not as attractive as we had anticipated it might be. In Boston, we had lunch at Durgin-Park an historic restaurant near the waterfront and opposite the Faneuil Hall Market which dated from the 1740s. At nearby

132 See pp. 333–4.

Cambridge, Massachusetts, we visited Harvard University, established in 1636, the oldest institution of higher learning in the U.S.. On 20 July, we drove north through Portsmouth (New Hampshire) to Portland (Maine) – 109 miles, and camped at Old Orchard Beach. Through Augusta and Bangor, we drove 190 miles to the Black Woods Campground in Acadia National Park in Maine on Mount Desert Island, where we stayed for three days in what I described to my parents as ‘the most pleasant campground we experienced’. The children especially enjoyed roasting marshmallows skewered on sticks over the campfire. The whole area was full of interest, although it was shrouded in fog almost all the time we were there – mountains, an ocean shoreline, woodlands, lakes, a profusion of wildlife, a network of carriage trails built with Rockefeller money, Rockefeller and Ford ‘cottages’ in northeast harbour and large yachts in the harbour. The park rangers were excellent guides to it all. I commented to my parents after we returned to Ann Arbor:

In general, the National Parks are one of the most impressive U.S. institutions. The contrast between these and the many decaying urban areas we saw was very marked. We were appalled by housing conditions in the inner city areas of many of the cities we visited. These, of course, are the areas housing Negroes and other minority groups, and they are very understandably the riot areas. The moderate Negro leadership which was dominant in the early 1960s has lost out to radicals who preach violence, black power and separation. This is largely because many of the gains of the earlier non-violent civil rights movement have proved illusory due to ingrained white attitudes and the community’s power structure being in white hands. Significantly Negro leaders are calling the current violent episodes rebellion not riots. It’s a very painful way of achieve social reforms, but many argue it’s the only language that the comfortable white community responds to. There’s obviously a lot to talk about when we return.¹³³

Trish wrote to my parents on 23 July, ‘The riots have extended to Detroit this morning – it’s a shocking situation and I don’t see how it will be solved. We drove through the slums of New York – they are awful.’¹³⁴

On 24 July, we drove from Acadia National Park in Maine to Quebec City in Canada – 281 miles. Quebec was a walled city. It was the centre for French efforts to colonise Canada, but had been occupied by the British after General Wolfe’s forces had scaled the heights of Abraham in 1759. When we were there, French President Charles de Gaulle visited Montreal and made huge banner headlines with his ‘Viva le Quebec libre!’, said to be a watershed moment for the Quebec sovereignty movement. The only real problem we had during our trip was indifferent weather. We had a lot of rain and the worst experience was a terrific, prolonged thunder storm while we were camped at Quebec. That night two people were killed by lightning. At 1am I jumped out of my sleeping bag as thunder and lightning were almost instantaneous, not knowing whether to hold steady the metal struts of the tent which were in danger of collapsing or whether to leave them well alone because of the

133 Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 1/8/67.

134 Letter, Trish Lawrence to Lawrence parents, 23/7/67.

closeness of the lightning. I left them alone and retreated to my soggy sleeping bag. The next day we took a room in the old part of the city and fortunately had sun and wind to dry out everything. The children enjoyed the changing of the guard at the citadel, and were intrigued by their goat mascot.

Expo 67, Montreal

From Quebec we drove, on 26 July, 156 miles south-west beside the St Lawrence River to Montreal, a large island in the river. It was the largest city of Canada with about two-thirds of its citizens of French origin. Montreal was host to the 1967 International and Universal Exposition, a world fair with 62 nations participating. Expo 67 which ran from April 27 to October 29 was Canada's main celebration during its centennial year. (Originally it was to have been in Moscow celebrating the 50th anniversary of the Russian Revolution.) Arriving at our campground by lunchtime, we immediately caught the recently-built metro to the exhibition mainly located on two islands in the middle of the St Lawrence River opposite the city. 'Man and his world' was the theme. The children enjoyed the first day so much that we did not get back to the campground until 10.30pm. We had managed to see the pavilion of photography and industrial design with an exhibition on the theme; Habitat 67, an area of 158 housing units of different sizes using concrete modular construction units in a series of rising set-back terraces, to a height of twelve stories; Labyrinth, an elaborate 5-storied building with three chambers designed for the showing a multi-faceted film on the essential story of man;¹³⁵ the Australian pavilion with its novel feature of 'talking chairs'; and the USA pavilion, a huge transparent geodesic 'bubble', 20 stories high (the mini-rail went through it). The next day, we arrived when the gates opened and hurried to the Russian pavilion and got in at 10 when the building opened, and were lucky enough to get into an interesting film on space travel (there were only 35 seats). During the day, the wait to get into the Russian and Czechoslovakian pavilions was up to 5 hours! In the afternoon, we saw some of the smaller pavilions and also the large French pavilion. In the evening we viewed the Montreal city centre of modern buildings and plazas and were impressed. On our final day, 28 July, we again went early, this time to see the Czechoslovakian pavilion and got in at 10.30am. Its exhibition of glass, jewellery, laces, and films was outstanding. We gave up mid-afternoon too tired to see more.

On 29 July, we drove south-west alongside the St Lawrence River and then beside Lake Ontario to Toronto, 325 miles. In the mid-afternoon, we drove around Toronto and decided to press on a further 80 miles to Niagra Falls, which we saw in attractive late afternoon light. We were going to set up camp in a site on the lake, but decided to drive the 247 miles through to Ann Arbor that night, because David was not feeling well. At the border between Canada and the United States, we passed through the underwater Detroit-Windsor tunnel. We discovered there was a curfew because of the riots in Detroit, but the border officials let us through because we were obviously what we said we

135 We had to wait two hours to get in, but it was worth it.

were – a family who had been camping, with a sick child on board. The only other vehicle on the streets of Detroit was a van delivering newspapers in the early hours of the morning. It was eerie – very quiet, the smell of smoke, and evidence of riot damage. On 1 August, I wrote to my parents that we had arrived home safely and were well established in our ‘new’ house, 1306 Olivia Avenue, in Ann Arbor. David had quickly recovered from the throat virus which he most likely had picked up in the milling crowds of Expo. Generally, we had stayed very healthy during the trip. I was much less tired than I had been in the period before I left, I supposed because of the after-effects of the hepatitis. We had travelled 4,192 miles in the car, and I had driven almost all of the time with Trish acting as a most efficient map reader. ‘The last six weeks have been the most interesting and eventful which we have spent as a family’, I wrote to my parents.¹³⁶

On 4 August, we received a very appreciative note from Gay and Fred Cox, thanking us for our monetary gift for them to buy something special at Expo 67, and for the beautiful condition in which all the camping equipment was returned. ‘You are rare; and generous to a fault possibly, and a very delightful family to know. We look forward to seeing you on our return.’

Ed and Vivian Thomas

One of the other faculty families with whom we became very friendly was Ed and Vivian Thomas and their two daughters Lisa and Lindy, but unfortunately they left for England on 26 August. They had entertained us a number of times at their home, Trish and Vivian had gone to University functions together, and I had played squash with Ed. We had them to a farewell dinner on Saturday, 20 August. Vivian’s letter to Trish on 20 October said they were well settled in Yorkshire. They had visited Bolton Abbey, had spent a week in Scotland, and were going to Cambridge and London for brief visits.

Although Ed was an outstanding scholar, he seemed strangely apprehensive about his sabbatical at the University of Bradford and kept plying me with questions about social work in Britain even though I told him I had not been concentrating on social work when I was in Britain more than ten years earlier. On 30 May, I had an extended discussion with him about behavioural science for social workers. He had just edited a book on this, which was actually a Michigan collection of papers,¹³⁷ and it showed local bias in content – sociology and social psychology, but little political science and economics. Another more definitive book was on the stocks. Behaviourist papers were the new thing. Psychoanalysis was a great side-tracking for social work. Ed had been raised in all this stuff. He had the zeal of a missionary, but had limited goals. The behaviourist development deals only with technology. I commented that behavioural science may be another diversion from societal policy questions, as had been psychoanalysis. Ed thought not, though it was a valid query. It was not his concern, anyway. He agreed that no amount of descriptive technical expertise

¹³⁶ Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 1/8/67.

¹³⁷ See p. 295.

could jump the final logical step of a prescription. Only some prescriptions were ethical. Ed wanted to talk about this. Ed thought that at last they were beginning to get somewhere – addressing behavioural changing questions and issues, but it did not cover everything. I suggested ‘rational’ decision-making would, by its logic.¹³⁸

Religious Activities

During our time at Ann Arbor we attended St Andrew’s Episcopal Church and some of its activities, and sent the children to its church (Sunday) school. The school provided a sequential program of learning for 9 classes of children divided by age. It was under the supervision of the rector Gordon Jones and a parishioner, and was taught by volunteers from the parish. On Sunday, 30 April, the Borenzweigs invited the whole family to a Jewish Seder, a celebration of the Jewish Passover, with readings, songs and feasting. Ruth in particular joined in the dancing with tremendous verve. On 4 May, we went to a surprise party for Howard Cohn who had just received his MSc degree. His daughter Joanne was a friend of Ruth’s.¹³⁹ Most of the guests were Jewish. Many of the Jewish people were ‘cultural Jews’, who identified with the historical heritage of the Jews but not necessarily with Jewish religious faith. Church-going was a common feature amongst the Christian population of the various denominations, but it was difficult to know how much of this reflected social convention rather than religious conviction.

Tom and Jeanette Powell and their children were one of the families that we spent time with in Ann Arbor. Tom was a faculty member teaching psychiatric social work, and I occasionally played squash with him. When Jeanette Powell wrote to us in May 1968, she had been busy tackling a paper on Catholic education for a seminar and was involved in Ecumenism – as a delegate from her church to the United Church Women Board in Ann Arbor. ‘Other church women know so little and entertain such myths about us Catholics – and we keep ourselves isolated from the general Christian community. My job is one of communication – in both directions – to the group and back to our church’.¹⁴⁰

Leaving Ann Arbor

On 9 December we entertained about 35 people to say goodbye. It was difficult to limit the numbers and had to keep it to those to whom we owed hospitality. The evening stretched into the early hours of the morning. Tom and Judy Croxton wrote us a very warm letter after coming to our ‘fun party’, and said ‘please try to come back here’. ‘I don’t know of anyone that’s made more impact on people in such a short time than the Lawrences’.¹⁴¹ When I wrote to my parents on 18 December, I had sent on all of my books – in four boxes, the

138 I kept notes of this discussion.

139 She and her mother wrote to us on 25/1/68, telling us their news. We also received letters from Ruth Abell (28/3/68 & 16/4/68), and Jeanette Powell (14/5/68) telling us their family news and expressing regret at our absence in Ann Arbor.

140 Letter, Jeanette Powell to Trish, John & family, 14 May, 1968.

141 Letter, Judy and Tom Croxton to John and Trish Lawrence, 11/12/67.

lot weighing 736 lbs. They were a significant addition to my growing personal library. We had just found a buyer for our car, Roy Gaunt, who had been so helpful early in our stay. He would pay us when he sold his existing car. Our car was still in excellent condition, but having a gear shift was a disincentive to some potential buyers. Fred Cox had very kindly offered to sell it for us if we did not have a sale before we left. 'Saying goodbye to people whom you have got to know well and some of whom you may not see again is an unhappy business. I will now be glad when it is over. ... I won't forget much of this year for a long time'.¹⁴²

On 20 December, I wrote a memorandum to all of the faculty, telling them we were leaving for home the next day, 'after a thoroughly stimulating and enjoyable sabbatical year. It has not been possible to say goodbye and thank you to each of you personally. Please accept through this note our warm gratitude and our hope that we shall see many of you again – perhaps in our country', and I provided my contact details in Sydney. Roger Lind gave me a parting gift of cuff-links in the shape of Michigan State, and Rosemary and Rom Sarri a book of sketches of Michigan. Rosemary's note with the gift said: 'We've really enjoyed knowing you and are sorry the year went so fast. I hope you'll come back and visit us soon again. Perhaps then your boys and our daughter will enjoy talking together!' One of the ways Rosemary had contributed to our Ann Arbor experience was inviting us to the huge University of Michigan Stadium (it held 100,001) to watch the football with her. Whenever U of M scored, she and the whole Stadium sprang to their feet and belted out the University song. The U of M's marching band which performed at the matches was incredibly skilful sometimes even playing on the run. I still have a memory of the U of M song imprinted from the two matches we attended.

A Report to the Fulbright Foundation

Because I was the recipient of a senior travel award from the Australian-American Education Foundation (Fulbright), I was asked various questions at the end of my experience in the United States. In my responses, I described the rich learning experience I had had, despite not being able to concentrate most of my time on my planned research. I positively evaluated my teaching experiences, especially the joint ones, and the great benefit I had derived from discussion with a number of faculty interested in social policy questions. Such faculty were rare in Australia. My direct involvement in two aspects of the School's impressive curriculum revision had been unexpected, but very worthwhile from my point of view. Now back in Australia, I would be recruiting contributors for my planned volume on Australian social conditions and social policies; I would be using new teaching materials in my lectures and seminars at the University of Sydney; and I would be giving a paper on American social policy at a conference in August 1968. Asked to comment on my impressions of American society, I wrote:

1967 has obviously been a particularly troubled period for American society, both

¹⁴² Letter, John Lawrence to his parents, 18/12/67.

internally and externally, and despite attempts of countless Americans it appears that many situations will worsen before they improve. I was already quite familiar with American social welfare and sociological literature. Reading the major newspapers and journals of opinion, as well as actually living here have brought home to me the troubled and complicated nature of the contemporary American scene. I leave more pessimistic for this country and its friends (which includes most of us in Australia) than when I arrived, partly as a result of a closer look at social policy-making in this country that this year has afforded me.

For those with whom I have associated both personally and professionally, I have received nothing but very friendly and helpful cooperation. In fact, the experience of the whole family has been a very positive one.

To other questions, I responded:

I did not deliberately seek formal opportunities to interpret Australian society to Americans, but throughout the year numerous opportunities arose particularly among other faculty members and students. Many faculty have expressed a desire to visit Australia and I shall certainly assist them in any way I can.

We now have many American friends. The Ann Arbor community provides the overseas visitor with many opportunities to make social as well as professional contacts. Experience of local political activity was of particular interest.¹⁴³

The Trip Home

Originally we had considered driving across the United States to the west coast, seeing more of the country on the way, but decided instead to cover the 2,350 miles by train. Thursday 21 December, our day of departure, was wet and wintry. Our train to Chicago was late, and instead of one-and-a-half hours to spare we only had 5 minutes to catch 'the California Zephyr' at 2.30pm. In making the transfer from train to train, we could not find a porter or a porter's trolley, so had to load all of us up. This way we could just make it. We were in the train for 3 days and 2 nights, arriving at Oakland, near San Francisco, at 7pm on Saturday, 23 December, 4 hours late. We were re-routed between Denver and Salt Lake because of a derailment and consequently missed what was apparently spectacular mountain scenery, but we did come along the Feather River Canyon, which made the journey worthwhile.

Herman met us at the Oakland station, and took us to a motel near their home. Herman and Judy Borenzweig and family had shifted from Ann Arbor to Berkeley in the summer and had invited us to spend Christmas with them. Apart from sleeping at the motel, we spent the rest of our time with them and saw quite a bit of San Francisco – Fisherman's wharf; the cable cars; a park with a Japanese garden and restaurant and a notable aquarium but indifferent art gallery; the Haight Ashberry district which housed most of the many hippies of San Francisco; the Chinese quarter; the Muir Woods of the huge Californian redwoods. In the evening of 26 December, we went to a party in

143 Fred Cox invited me to come and see local politics in action on 24 May at the election of party officers for the coming year for the Ann Arbor City Democratic Party. The Vietnam situation was causing major disruptions in the Party, even at the grass-roots level.

a home on the Berkeley hills with a magnificent view over the harbour. The Berkeley campus, one of the biggest, best and most troubled in the country, had a wonderful setting. (Our daughter Ruth was to do her doctorate there many years later.) On 27 December, we drove a hire car (a 1968 Dodge Dart with power steering) down the coast road to Santa Barbara. The weather was perfect and we thoroughly enjoyed the fine scenery. The strong Spanish influence on the architecture in the area made it especially interesting. In Santa Barbara, we stayed a night with Sally Gane and her sister. They lived in a beautiful position on cliffs overlooking beach and ocean. (Sally had been in Sydney on a Fulbright in 1964.¹⁴⁴ She wrote me a letter of welcome when I arrived in Ann Arbor and urged us to visit her in Santa Barbara when we were making an exit in a year's time.)

From 28 December to 2 January, we stayed with Malcolm and Lorraine Stinson at Pasadena on the outskirts of Los Angeles. I had spent time with Malcolm showing him something of Sydney when he was on his way to an assignment in India. It was shortly before we left for the USA, and he was very positive about the Michigan School of Social Work. He had been appointed dean of the School of Social Work at the University of Southern California in 1959. His work in the 1950s as director of the St Paul Family Centred Project, designed to develop social work methods for dealing with 'hard to reach' poverty families, was widely known. In the evening of Friday, 29 December, the Stinsons took us to a party for Arlien Johnson at Helen Wright's house. These two women were now quite elderly but were among 'the greats' of the U.S. social work profession, and it was a privilege being able to meet them.¹⁴⁵

Malcolm and Lorraine were extraordinarily friendly and generous during our stay. Their teen-age daughter Marian accompanied us to Disneyland, Marineland, Berkeley Hills and the Hollywood area, the Music Centre, and so on. On Monday 1 January, we all went to the magnificent 79th Tournament of Roses parade. It took two hours to pass any one spot and was a continuous flow of beauty and colour – human as well as floral. In the afternoon, Trish and I went to the Rose Bowl, to watch the final of the 'Big Ten' college football competition. Indiana and the University of Southern California were playing. As a dean at the latter, Malcolm could get us tickets which were very precious. Although the game was not a thriller, the whole event was great fun. Over 100,000 were present. It was a spectacular last day in the United States. The next morning, with Malcolm we looked at the parade floats in a park at the foot of the nearby mountains, and in the afternoon embarked on the *Chusan* for our journey home, the first experience for our children of travelling by sea.

144 She was attached to Professor Blackburn's unit at the Royal Prince Alfred Hospital. Experienced in teaching the social components of medicine to medical students, she met regularly with a group of medical social workers doing this in the various teaching hospitals.

145 Helen Wright (1891–1969) was the first president of the council on social work education. Following the Abbotts, she was dean of the School of Social Service Administration at the University of Chicago, 1941–57, and continued their tradition of policy reform. On her retirement from the deanship, she helped develop a school of social work in India, and then lived in Pasadena conducting research and teaching part-time at the University of Southern California. Arlien Johnson (1894–1988) was also a social reformer and educator, locally, nationally and internationally. See 'NASW Social Work Pioneers, NASW Foundation National Programs', on the internet.

The SS *Chusan* was a British ocean liner and cruise ship built for the P & O in 1950, and refitted in 1960. In 1968, it had 455 first class passengers, 517 second class passengers, and 517 crew. Its last voyage was in 1973. Our ship first went north to San Francisco (3 January) and Vancouver (6 January), before crossing the Pacific, calling at Honolulu (11 January), Suva in Fiji (19 January), and Nuku-Alofa in Tonga (20 January). We arrived at Auckland in New Zealand (23 January), and home at last in Sydney (26 January). On 10 January, I reported to my parents the ship was helping to make the transition back to our Australian life easier. Already Ann Arbor and all its people seemed a long way away. There were only 17 children in the first class playing room. Most of our fellow passengers were older people seeking relief from the winter in the UK or US. Quite a lot were congenial and the odd one was still active enough to play deck games. Bill Bailey, a lawyer from Canberra who knew George Sutcliffe, was my regular quoit tennis opponent. Each of the children experienced some sea-sickness in unsettled weather after Vancouver. In Vancouver, we had a very pleasant day with Meg and Richard Wilson and their children.¹⁴⁶ They met us at about 9am, we returned to their home which had fine views of the harbour and of the nearby mountains, went for a drive in impressive scenery, returned for lunch, and were back on the ship for the sailing at 4pm. In Honolulu, we were again fortunate to spend the day with someone with local knowledge. Stan Kim from the Michigan faculty had arranged for his brother to show us round. He was a lawyer who had graduated at the University of Michigan and had a young family of three children.

During the voyage, we got to know Glen and Cyril Burdon-Jones and their children, and showed them round in Sydney before they moved to Townsville. Cyril came from Wales and had been appointed to a chair of marine biology in the University College. When Cyril wrote in mid-February 1968, they were well settled in Townsville, despite buckets of rain. He asked us to keep in touch.¹⁴⁷

Reflecting on 'The Great Society'

Preparing my paper on 'The Great Society: Rhetoric or Reality?' to the conference of the Australian and New Zealand American Studies Association in August 1968, forced me to reflect generally on social policy in that country. It was described by Professor Norman Harper of the University of Melbourne, who edited the book made from the proceedings, as 'a re-evaluation of the Great Society'.

President Johnson had referred to 'The Great Society' as 'a place where men are more concerned with the quality of their goals than with the quantity of their goods'. The concept appeared to incorporate two major aspects – all Americans should see themselves essentially as members of a large, interdependent national society; and the society is 'great' to the extent that it met its moral obligations to all its members, not just the powerful, the privileged, the

146 Meg was originally Meg Hamilton, Sheila Lawrence's older sister. She had visited us when we were living in Oxford.

147 Letter, C. Burdon-Jones to Patricia and John Lawrence, 16/2/68.

lucky, and the gifted. I quoted Wilbur Cohen, Gunnar Myrdal, and Sargent Shriver.

As a political slogan, the concept had its uses, especially in a society not averse to overstatement. But the issues of social security and social development for individuals in a modern industrial society were persisting ones which remained long after particular slogans were worn out. The so-called 'total war on poverty' under the Economic Opportunity Act of 1964 in fact was largely directed to the problems of youth in large urban ghettos. At the time, 43% of the poor lived in rural areas, only 29% were in urban slums, and 70% were white.

Although the United States is often not identified as such, the Great Society debate is much the same as the welfare state debate of other industrial countries. A welfare state is seen to exist when there are government-protected minimum standards of income, employment, health, education, and housing for every citizen assured him as a political right, not as a charity. Without fairly massive developments in these directions it is doubtful if the western liberal capitalist countries would have survived. Although social welfare measures are an integral part of the social systems of these societies, they still tend to be viewed in an anachronistic ways – with attitudes that may have been relevant to earlier simpler societies, but which cause unnecessary misery and hardship in the modern, urbanised, industrial society.

The welfare state concept only made sense as a dynamic concept. In fact, many public services favoured the more affluent members of society and not the disadvantaged ones. Running parallel with publicly provided measures was a vast array of private welfare measures connected with employment. Titmuss had first highlighted this development in Britain, but even in the United States where private welfare expenditures, including those on fringe benefits, were most extensive, they only amounted to about one-sixth of the annual public welfare expenditure.

In his 'The New Industrial State', Galbraith had demonstrated that 'the conventional wisdom' with its traditional American values of economic individualism, private property, the free market, voluntarism, and minimum government, lagged badly in its understanding of the facts of modern industrial life. The great business corporations now accounted for two-thirds of industrial life in the United States. The industrial system required a highly developed educational system. From education could come emancipation from the goals of the industrial system.

The quality of life of *people* – all people – matters. This does not mean establishing identical life experiences for everyone. It does mean paying regard to the inevitable 'states of dependency' in a modern industrial society and making collective arrangements to deal with these in a just and humane way. ... There is now more knowledge of the cultural causes of dependencies ... The specialisation of modern society needs large-scale organised social welfare provision, and the size of the task demands that government takes the main, if not the sole responsibility. But modern social welfare bureaucracies must have their technocrats, usually professionals or semi-professionals of many different kinds, which means that these

people are in a strategic position to impose their own value preferences on the shape and direction of their organisation's work. The vested interests of existing large-scale structures and of different professions involved in the administration of their services complicate considerably social policy discussions.

In Britain, a subject-area called 'social administration' provided university courses for increasing numbers of social service technocrats. This was essentially a multi-disciplinary area with the social services as its core concern but which now ranged widely into a concern with social problems and all policies and collective strategies to deal with them. There was no analogous development in the United States, where generally the social policy discussion and the analysis of social provision had been comparatively weak. Much of the current social policy discussion was coming from a variety of social science disciplines, but no university departments were centrally concerned with the study and teaching of social policy and its administration. Schools of social work were now developing 'the social welfare policy and services' part of their curricula, but this was a more specialised and limited development than the British one, and naturally was directly related to the professional roles of qualified social workers.

The American social work profession was currently in a state of considerable ferment and change.

It has been accused – of being politically naïve, of running away from its primary obligations to the most needy sections of the society, of chasing status and technical skills, of becoming bureaucratised, of supporting the status quo and pandering to the existing power structure, of emphasising psychological rather than social, political, and economic factors in human behaviour, of neglecting public welfare because the private welfare sector provided a proper professional climate, of not giving leadership on major social issues like poverty and race relations, of having a status hierarchy amongst practitioners in different fields, of concentrating on interpersonal helping especially through social casework rather than trying to shape the society and actual services generally available, of underplaying the role of conflict and power in human affairs. On each of these scores, counter tendencies are now apparent, and heroic efforts are being made to increase dramatically the over-all numbers of qualified personnel. A major problem, however, is that it will take time to change the negative images of workers, especially in public welfare where still only a small fraction of the personnel called social workers hold a professional qualification. ...

A major re-organisation in 1967 within the federal Department of Health, Education and Welfare had been generally welcomed by the social welfare technocrats. This brought together in a new agency, the Social and Rehabilitation Service, the various services that dealt with special groups – the aged, the mentally and physically handicapped, and families, particularly children – and it separated the administration of public assistance *payments* from other services.

Perhaps an important factor in keeping social welfare services in the United States fragmented and not served by technocrats with a common social welfare preparation for their task is that there is a tendency to exclude from the welfare category any service, no matter how identified with welfare it may have been in

origin, which becomes highly developed, widespread in its incidence among the population, and professionally staffed by persons other than social workers. This, according to Wilensky and Lebeaux, seems consistent with the residual conception of social welfare and its view of the welfare services as 'emergency, secondary, peripheral to the main show'. ...

However, even in the United States, this was a viewpoint which was fighting a losing battle against the social and economic circumstances of a modern industrial society.

Gunnar Myrdal had suggested that the United States' lag in social welfare effort came mainly from the great variety of competing minority groups. A wider civic virtue could not fully develop when ties to minority groups were strong. Racial, ethnic, and religious conflict were able to influence public policy as much as they did because of the extraordinary number of overlapping and interlocking political arenas provided by the very decentralised American system of government. The political obstacles to social reform were formidable. In their recent book assessing the early community action programs that gave rise to their incorporation as a novel feature in the O.E.O poverty programs, Peter Marris and Martin Rein commented:

Leadership is ... at the mercy of a coalition of congressional support which can rarely be contrived except in an overriding national emergency. The faith in divided powers inhibits government at every level, setting executive against legislature, states against nation, city against country – elaborating overlapping, partial jurisdictions in an almost obsessive distaste for effective government.

Did the existing range of interrelated social problems – poverty, racial discrimination, the inner city areas, unemployed youth and older workers, the aged, the role of adolescents, crime and delinquency, physical violence – constitute 'an overriding national emergency'? Some had noted a polarization of attitudes on social questions.

One way to cut through the complexities of trying to achieve effective political action was to appeal to judicial decision to achieve social reforms. This was an odd way out for a democratic society, and in any case the Supreme Court could be and had been a major impediment to social change.

Recent work by Rein and Miller had clarified six federal intervention strategies to combat poverty – the amenities approach, investment in human capital, transfers, rehabilitation of people, participation, and aggregate and selective economic measures. Each policy choice had to reconcile rationality, political feasibility, and value preferences. They made different assumptions about the nature of the problem and had different objectives. It was naïve to assume that a community of interest prevailed among contending individuals, groups, and goals on most issues.

Lindblom had seen 'disjointed incrementalism' as a reasonable strategy for formulating policy in a pluralist complex society like the United States. Unless, however, there was greater movement to more centralised and comprehensive planning, it was difficult to see The Great Society Concept being other than empty rhetoric.

As Galbraith has demonstrated, this kind of planning is now typical in the society organized as an industrial system. In a sense, this is a form of concealed social planning. If the national, humanitarian social values of the Great Society were made explicit, were strongly held in most sections of the society, and had powerful planning outlets, they could achieve a basic planning status and not just be adjuncts of the industrial system.

The American stress on 'individualism' and 'freedom', the tradition of pragmatism and dislike of 'ideology', the talk of 'equality of opportunity' but not of actual conditions – all these divert attention away from what the society is 'for'. Many of the better educated younger generation see social ideals which are selfish and materialistic, which are concealed by ancient rhetoric. A striking cultural feature of the poverty debate is how little attention is given to the vast personal wealth of many people supposedly living in the same society as the poor. From a social development viewpoint, economic growth and productivity are not now key issues; the main issue lies in the distribution of the fruits of the industrial system.

... if change has to wait for organized pressure to be brought to bear on relevant authorities, many disadvantaged, fragmented groups will never have their interests recognized. In addition, if power rather than reasoned argument is appealed to, countervailing power will often be brought to bear.

The Great Society ideal, like the welfare state ideal, depends for its implementation on widespread identification with it on the part of all major sections of the society. Does the industrial society dehumanize people to the extent that they cannot agree that at least minimum living standards should be guaranteed for every person in their society? ... The nation's enormous material wealth makes achievement of the Great Society a possibility, but ... its heterogeneity and complex governmental system continue to keep the ideal out of reach.

Finally, I observed:

Perhaps a sense of overriding national crisis will come if the summer destruction in the inner areas of the cities extends to the suburbs. And perhaps, then, Great Society values will predominate in policy choices and fund allocations. But there is no guarantee. The alternative prospect of the comfortable classes using power of the state to hold the deprived and underprivileged permanently at bay rather than incorporate them into their society is a dismal, but not impossible prospect. It seems that the United States is still to tackle some of the fundamental human and moral problems of a modern industrial society.¹⁴⁸

This paper drew directly on my experience in the USA in 1967. Two other substantial papers, which I delivered to Australian audiences in May 1968, gave some indication of where I had reached in my social policy and social work thinking after the sabbatical year.

148 R. J. Lawrence, 'The Great Society: Rhetoric or Reality?', in Norman Harper (ed), *American Studies Down Under: 2, Pacific Circle2*, University of Queensland Press, St Lucia, 1972, pp. 152–166.

THE ACOSS PAPER ON RESPONSIBILITY FOR THE WELFARE OF ETHNIC MINORITIES¹⁴⁹

This paper gave me the opportunity first to argue for greater theoretical understanding as a basis for discussion of welfare intervention, whatever the welfare concern might be. I insisted that my topic called for an understanding of the various social systems in which each of us has membership in the course of our lives, and the cultural norms and values they exemplified. 'The topic demands that we become alive to the kind of society we live in – its structure, its rules for living, and its value patterns.' As each person moved through the life-cycle, the person's behaviour was shaped by and the person in turn shaped, the various and often successive social systems in which they participated. The history or social career of a 'person' could not be told without reference to the many social systems in which they participated. I sketched briefly some of the many possibilities and noted the large extent to which modern humans led their lives in contact with formal organisations of one kind or another. They had been the vehicle for major human achievements, but the specialisation and division of labour they exemplified brought their own problems of fragmentation, competition for attention and resources, and discontinuities and conflicts in the experience of the individual person in contact with them.

Social work effort which focused upon the life experience of the individual in its various social aspects was, therefore, very much concerned with trying to make individuals' experience of their social environment less discontinuous, as they moved through the various stages of the life cycle and participated in the wide variety of social systems necessary to achieve their objectives and satisfy their values. The traditional and still dominant social work method of working with individuals on an individual or group basis, helping them to redefine and adjust to their social situations, added up to a conservative policy accepting as given the nature of the social systems within which the clients had to live.

Any set of social arrangements is of more benefit to some social groups than to others. It can be argued that the real beneficiaries of much of the existing social welfare effort are those who gain most from the existing social systems. To talk clinical language, or the language of 'service', or of 'helping', or of 'social pathology' are common modern devices which conceal or gloss over genuine conflicts of interest, and also disproportions of power, status and influence. It is, I think, high time we recognised the political component implicit in social welfare activity. Such activity always represents a particular allocation of values and interests amongst the participants, the 'politically strong' participants having their values dominant. Social systems take the form they do at least partly because people with power and influence can keep them that way. This is not done necessarily with evil or selfish intent, but in this case the motivation is irrelevant to the effects.

The social work methods of community organisation, social action and planning, and social administration, all of which are directly concerned with the change or maintenance of social systems, are still grossly under-represented in social work

149 R. J. Lawrence, 'Responsibility for the welfare of ethnic minorities', in Harold Throssell (ed.), *Ethnic Minorities in Australia*, ACOSS, Sydney, pp. 47–56. See p. 339.

education and practice – although there are signs of change. These methods are likely to involve social work practitioners in a full range of social systems at the level of the organisation of systems themselves, for example, setting up a new agency, changing legislation, establishing new policies. They are also likely to bring social workers into conflict with those who have vested interests in maintaining existing social arrangements. Social work's humanitarian, liberal, democratic philosophy demands that it try to redress the balance whenever it sees existing social systems as biased towards the interests of only limited sections of the community. This is particularly the case when such systems claim support in the name of the public interest.

Having made these orienting comments about welfare intervention, I then focused upon the welfare of individuals who were seen by themselves and by others as being members of an ethnic minority – because of their national origin, cultural patterns, or physical appearance, or some combination of these. I argued that the notion of responsibility needed to be seen in the full context of the social systems within which these people lived their lives. I briefly charted various aspects of systems relevant for ethnic minorities and the factors which helped or hindered them receiving full moral consideration as members of the general community. Within the systems there were always people with prescribed roles or responsibilities who might be held responsible for what they did as system members. It made no sense, however, to ascribe responsibilities not matched by the resources necessary to carry them out.

DETERMINING AND DEVELOPING THE SCOPE OF SOCIAL WORK IN THE AUSTRALIAN COMMONWEALTH DEPARTMENT OF SOCIAL SERVICES

The paper I prepared on this topic forced me to set down in the context of a specific very important social agency, many of my thoughts on social work practice, present and future – and remember this was the agency that had provided me with my first substantial employment experience. The occasion was the conference of departmental senior social workers held in Canberra, May 13–15, 1968.¹⁵⁰ The attendance of Mr L. B. Hamilton, the director-general of the department, and of Max Wryell and other senior officers to hear my paper, gave it particular significance, and it gave me a chance to get to know them. I can recall Alison Edwards, one of my former social work colleagues in Adelaide, saying in appreciation that clearly I was able to operate at their level. What I was saying, of course, needed to be especially understood by the department's senior administrators. An essential part of the paper was an appendix of 80 'historical snippets', which related to my subject. I was subsequently thanked by the Department for my 'magnificent paper'!

The paper commenced with observations about the social significance of national income security programs.

150 I took the opportunity to see Ray and Jennie Greet while I was in Canberra, and phoned various other friends.

... The governmental social or income security system for civilians is a major feature on the social, economic, and political scene of every industrial country. No other program directly affects the social functioning of so many people. ... low income provided through inadequate social security systems is now seen as a major cause for the continuation of poverty in affluent societies.

The principle of ensuring individual well-being still applied in mass social service measures.

In the still large public assistance sector in the United States, the massive attempt to make income security conditional on receipt of a casework service has seemed to relate aid very directly to individual need. In many places the consequences appear to have been little short of disastrous – impossibly large caseloads, untrained caseworkers, rapid staff turnover, low morale, large-scale client hostility to welfare departments now being expressed openly in client organisations and publications, the continued emphasis on individual personality defects rather than defects of the social structure in explaining economic dependency, negative community images of the social worker, seemingly hopeless staff situations with respect to qualified social workers, the concentration of qualified social workers in private social welfare agencies, the resort to measures outside the traditional public welfare sector in the War on Poverty.

Current public assistance developments like – federal and state financing of public welfare workers to train in schools of social work, the use of group work techniques, the employment of community planning experts to take the initiative in coordinating the work of all agencies relevant for the needs of the public welfare client – represent vigorous social work action. This cannot substitute, however, for adequate provision of income, employment, housing, education, and recreation which require social policy changes still politically unacceptable. Experiments in some of the state public welfare systems with the separation of a casework service from the administration of financial benefit bear a resemblance to the Australian conception of the place of a social casework service in a social security system.

Besides the concern for the welfare of individuals and their families first acted on by religious and charitable pioneers, and later by the state under pressure from political parties, there were a host of other factors contributing to the existence of modern social services. In Britain, Donnison had mentioned six other strands in the story of the social services – providing an environment required for industrial progress, defending the nation against economic and military rivals, the rising aspirations of ordinary people, using social welfare as a means of promoting and sustaining industrial growth itself, and endeavouring to prevent or contain disruption of the social order.

While, then, an ostensive reason for the income security system may be in terms of the individual recipients' welfare, and this is in general accord with the values of professional social work, the system may in fact be fulfilling a wide variety of other purposes which may or may not be in accord with social work values.

The historical snippets in the appendix to the paper provided glimpses of the changing dimensions of the social work service in the CDSS, and its

changing organisational and societal context. They also gave glimpses of the careers, vision and viewpoints of the various persons who had occupied political, administrative, or professional roles of key importance in the development of the social work service.

Periodic interlocking charts of the main external and internal relationships of the social work section of the department would be a useful analytic device to give systematic attention to all the various social networks in which it became enmeshed – to see how these were changing, what was occurring in them, the extent to which they related to the section's objectives, the informal as well as the formal patterns, and so on.¹⁵¹

Understanding of a full range of social relationships and of the social systems within which they operate is supposedly at the heart of the social worker's expertise. In fact, until very recently most qualified social workers in this country have had extremely limited knowledge of large-scale organisation. ... Social workers, because of their claimed knowledge of the social structure and social processes, should be experts on feasibility questions relating to social policy changes. They will know a lot about the likely effects on a particular client or group of clients they have studied, but when they become involved in large-scale organisation and broad political and social processes, they tend to be ill-equipped.

Those responsible for social work education have been slow to provide opportunities for social work administrators, let alone social welfare administrators. State government social welfare programs are beginning to be administered by people with a social work qualification. This is likely to mean a firmer identification with social welfare values, because it is bolstered by the administrator's social welfare education and his relationships with his professional peers. Whether this new breed of social welfare administrator who is also a social work professional has yet special technical competence is another question. In some of the American schools of social work, social welfare administration is now recognised as a distinctive and crucially important area of professional social work practice. No Commonwealth Government social welfare program is yet administered by people with a social work qualification. One wonders what might have happened if the earlier administrative cadetship scheme had been pursued,¹⁵² and also if career opportunities for male social workers in particular had been opened from the social work section of the Department of Social Services to other sections of the Department.

Within the Commonwealth public service, social workers had become identified with a specialised social casework service. They had been used as consultants by administrative staff because of their knowledge of social welfare resources, but there was little evidence of them being influential social policy and administrative consultants. The growing size of the profession was beginning to make possible a greater degree of division of labour. On paper the Australian social worker had often claimed to be a Jack of all methods. In

151 Rosemary Sarri's classes at U of M had introduced me to this idea.

152 The Board of Social Studies at the University of Sydney reported in 1952 that the Commonwealth Public Service Board had a cadet enrolled. 'It is intended that the Social Studies course should be an essential part of the training of potential higher executives of the Commonwealth Public Service.'

fact, he usually had only some mastery of one – social casework.

Social work objectives may be attained by using any one of the following methods – social casework, social group work, community organisation, social policy formation, administrative management, research, and teaching people to use these methods. At present Australian schools of social work are filling out their curricula to cover these diverse methods. Is each qualified social worker expected to operate with equal competence in relation to each of these methods? I think we need to do some basic re-thinking about professional education and this must be coupled with the structuring of present and future social work jobs in social welfare agencies. Again, organisational knowledge, acumen and skill are crucial in this task.

I have just returned from a thoroughly stimulating year spent in the University of Michigan school of social work. The school, under skilled administrative leadership, has just accomplished a large-scale curriculum revision to make its work more relevant for the contemporary and anticipated circumstances of social welfare programs. ...

The rationale behind the revision was that social work professionals intervened in social processes and social structure at different levels – the interpersonal, the organisational and administrative, the community, and the societal. The tasks at these different levels of intervention, while they may be inter-related, were distinctive, and called for specially tailored educational preparation. This made a lot of sense, as long as the common value positions which were meant to underpin all professional performance received explicit consideration and were built into the educational preparation and the actual practice of the social practitioner at whatever level of intervention he was operating.

Although it was recognised the task was difficult, there had been recent emphasis on the importance of clarifying professional and organizational objectives in social welfare. This was very relevant for defining and justifying not only the scope of the social work section of the Department of Social Services but of the Department itself. Both were due for a thorough-going examination and not just by those with vested interests in the outcome. After a considerable period of piece-meal development, our national social security system was ripe for a social policy assessment in terms of current conditions. As a large-scale, eligibility-determining and money-paying administration, the Department appeared to be efficient, but it was not providing leadership on social issues.

The Department's research activities have fallen far short of the initial hopes, partly perhaps because of the grossly understaffed condition of the social work section of the Department. Perhaps anyway some of the original expectations were unrealistic for social workers in the past have had limited expertise in research techniques. Is it too much to hope that the social services department might build up a vigorous social welfare research section which would be widely known and respected for its publications throughout the community?...

Professionalism could become a fetish or merely a device to secure and

preserve unwarranted privilege, but professional attitudes could provide a necessary counter-balance to narrow bureaucratic attitudes. Bureaucratic organisation was imperative in large-scale operations. Professionalism, with its individual service ethic and the alternative employment opportunities it offered tempered bureaucratic excesses. In so far as professional values coincided with the social welfare objectives of a social security program, goal displacement was less likely to occur when professionals became researchers and administrators in social security programs.

In addition to considerable extension of social work participation in the Department's work in administrative and research roles, there was the possibility of extending existing social work roles to include group work and community organisation. The small and changing social work staff had made it impossible to build up any kind of substantial social work service in connection with the nation's social security system. The figure of 50 employed social workers was achieved by the section in 1967, after many years with only a fraction of this number. This was the precise number Dorothy Sumner considered a 'beginning minimum' of social workers needed for the Department 20 years ago and the Department had expanded greatly since then. Her figure did not take into consideration the potential cases in departmental sections then relatively untapped. Neither did she emphasise, as I was now doing, the possibility of other than casework functions being performed by social workers.

If we are to have meaningful social welfare systems in this country, which reflect important social values and which are related to contemporary rather than past social problems, they must be strongly influenced by people with training in these matters. The social work profession has here a central responsibility, although of course not a sole one. With the schools of social work producing much larger numbers of qualified workers, many of them with considerable ability, and with a fuller initial education behind them than their predecessors, the profession and social work agencies could be entering a new era for their work. We still, however, pay scant regard to the need for social work manpower studies, and I wonder about the staying power of these new personnel, especially, of course, women.

A paper by Hansen and Carter was helpful for an evaluation of a social work or a social welfare program. They stressed the need for freedom to ask questions not bound by the traditional and accepted, Galbraith's 'conventional wisdom'.

Once the program goals have been clarified, methods and procedures need specifying and a choice made among alternative systems for goal achievement. ... The job of systems design is to use resources in an optimum manner.

The authors mentioned problems that restricted freedom of choice in program and systems design – working with limited resources (especially manpower of a calibre that can examine needs, define goals, design and evaluate alternative systems, and administer programs); the consequences of alternative choices were often uncertain; and the consequences of certain actions were presumed to be known when in fact they were not ('the most subtle kind of bias often stems from warranted pride in past accomplishments or from "professional" philosophies and convictions). I briefly referred to various other

comments by Hansen and Carter on assumptions and principles involved in planning and the need to become aware of unanticipated consequences of program practices. There was growing interest in 'cost-benefit' analysis in the United States, but its application in social welfare programs was often extremely difficult. Notions of risk, side-effects, and the nature of costs and benefits needed close analysis in this approach. Carefully handled, it seemed a fruitful device for guiding program and procedural choices.

In conclusion, I stated:

I am conscious that academics tend in their writing if not in their actions to stress rationality, and that much of this paper can be seen as a bid for closer analysis and more rational organisation of services. I see increased rationality essentially as an instrumental objective, as a means of achieving in some sense a better society through more effective and efficient social welfare policies and programs. ...

The cost of increased rationality may be considerable, but the gains in terms of knowing better what we are doing and why we are doing it, and what we are likely to achieve are persuasive. Social work and social welfare programs intervene directly in people's lives. For those of us who care about and place a high value on the well-being of every individual in society, this is both the strength and the danger of such programs.¹⁵³

SOCIAL WORK PRACTICE, PRESENT AND FUTURE

I introduced a re-presentation of this paper at a subsequent meeting of the NSW branch of the AASW, with a quotation from President Lincoln's inaugural address – 'Let us disenthral ourselves. The dogmas of the quiet past are inadequate to the stormy present.'

This was my mood as I returned earlier this year from a year's study leave in the United States. I realised that the relative tranquillity of Australian society, compared with the profound disturbances in the one in which I had just lived and worked, could easily seduce me back into complacency – especially if my social work colleagues did not share a sense of urgency to re-think and re-structure our efforts. Since my return, however, there has been some evidence of general social unrest and at least some awareness in the local social work profession that all is not well in its service to Australian society.

After presenting the paper, I discussed further some of its main points relating to the nature of professional social work practice and its organisation.

Notice in the paper, the emphasis I have placed on *objectives*, the *rationale* for them, on *planning* to reach objectives, and on *evaluation* in terms of them. There is also stress on *balanced development* of the profession and the place of *specialisation*.

153 R. J. Lawrence, 'Basic Considerations in Determining and Developing the Scope of Social Work Services in a Statutory Agency, such as the Commonwealth Department of Social Services', and 'Appendix: Historical Snippets Relating to the Scope of Social Work Services in Australia's Social Security Program'. These are available in 'Papers presented at Meetings of the New South Wales Branch of the Australian Association of Social Workers, 1968–69'.

The social welfare agent, whether a person or an organisation, is in fact specialised along five dimensions – locality, client groups, nature of the benefit to the client, method of helping, and auspice. Since we are all specialised, the specialisation discussion gets down to the degree and nature of specialisation; how specialised tasks, individual and agency, are coordinated with each other; and the need for *expertise* to be developed within a specialised constellation.

Perhaps because of clinical models, the notion of ‘professional practice’ usually implies that you have to be working directly with specific clients. If, on the other hand, you start from social welfare objectives, many justifiable professional actions will not involve direct contact with specific clients. I would argue that it is more helpful to start from professionally justifiable objectives and then classify as professional practice any action taken to further these objectives. If we are really concerned about individual welfare in the modern industrial society, the practice of the social work profession is thoroughly unbalanced if it concentrates only upon inter-personal methods of improving individual welfare. In fact, such a focus may defeat broader social welfare objectives, and it is on this score that the American social work profession is at present engaged in a major re-think.

Where a university-trained person is doing work with a social welfare purpose which can be done by a person without such training, this is inefficient and often ineffective as well. We still need to be far clearer about which tasks require the conceptual framework and professional skills of the professional person, properly called.

On ‘balance’ questions, I had so far aimed primarily at balance in social work methods. Starting again from social welfare objectives, we also needed balance with respect to cover by locality, client groups, nature of the benefit to the client, and auspice. The schools of social work, social welfare agencies employing social workers, the AASW, and the individual social worker all had responsibilities for addressing these ‘balance’ questions. Social welfare ‘progress’ occurred only to the extent that individuals assumed responsibilities in an organised, i.e. rational fashion.

Each social worker should ask himself or herself:

- What specialised role do I play with respect to –
 - social work education?
 - social welfare agencies?
 - the professional association?
- What is the rationale for each of my roles?
- How effective am I in each of these roles?
- How does what I do intermesh with what others do – to achieve social welfare objectives?
- Do I recognise a need to be disciplined, to stay within my role, and yet not be a captive of it?
- Do I respect other social work practitioners and fully recognise the need for their roles in the broad social welfare scene?
- Do I respect the roles of others working toward common ends?
- Do I emphasise and perhaps exaggerate my own expertise and yet work in a situation which debars me from becoming truly expert?

- Have I the courage of my own convictions that may be hurtful to some, but on balance are justified?
- Do I recognise that as a member of a profession I am granted certain privileges? How do I contribute to the collective status of the profession? Is the status a justifiable one in terms of social welfare values?

Finally, I observed that major difficulties in agreeing upon and arriving at social welfare goals arose from the different knowledge, experience, values and skills of the various generations.

All of us need to be conscious of this and to organise against its negative aspects, through refresher courses, reading, making jobs manageable, intermingling in joint tasks, and so on. Respectful attitudes across generations, combined with a focus upon social welfare objectives can help to keep the profession basically integrated.

The times are out of tune for those who want a quiet, customary, professional life; they are in tune for those who enjoy stimulus and challenge.

The AASW meeting at which I provided all of this material was especially to welcome recent graduates. I had chosen to talk about the total collective professional enterprise of which they had now become a part, rather than concentrate only on them. The impact of my year at Michigan was obvious.

Since joining the University of Sydney in 1961, my own career had two obvious strands – a broad continuing concern for the social work profession, and a keen developing awareness of the need for social welfare or social policy to be studied in its own right and not just to service the needs of the social work profession. As explained, I had intended to use my sabbatical primarily to concentrate on the second strand, but in fact both strands received considerable stimulus.

I found on my return to Sydney at the beginning of 1968 that Australia's first chair of social work was being advertised at the University of New South Wales, and I was expected to apply. At the same time, it soon became obvious that my project to stimulate Australian social policy research and scholarship was premature. One option was to stay put at the University of Sydney in the academic appointment in social administration, building on what I had already developed there and trying in the longer term to develop the subject in that context. I had certainly enjoyed my time in the Department of Social Work at the University of Sydney and in particular working with Tom Brennan and Mary McLelland, and earlier Norma Parker and Kate Ogilvie. Staying would have been the safe, secure option, but I chose otherwise.

The rest of my story, told in the following volumes, starts with my appointment as Professor of Social Work at the University of New South Wales. The first strand of my career, a broad continuing concern for the social work profession was now centre-stage in my working life, and this was reinforced when I was elected federal president of the AASW in 1968 for a couple of years. My social policy strand continued with the design and some teaching of social welfare subjects in the UNSW BSW curriculum, and later in the social policy and social planning subjects in the postgraduate curriculum. It received a major boost in 1980, with the establishment at UNSW of the Social

Welfare Research Centre (later the Social Policy Research Centre), directly funded by the Commonwealth Government through the Department of Social Security. My central involvement in the establishment of this national centre, and its development over subsequent years until I finally retired in 1996, was a substantial continuing commitment central to developing social policy as a subject in Australia.

A fitting way to conclude this chapter is with quotation from a letter I wrote in July 1968 to Fedele Fauri, the dean of the University of Michigan School of Social Work:

Since my return I have found last year's experience continuously beneficial in tackling tasks here, and have had opportunities to share much of it with Australian colleagues, here and interstate. I am certain that it will prove even more helpful in undertaking my new responsibilities as head of school.

Enclosed is a letter which includes a few details about this new appointment. I would be most grateful if you could have this circulated amongst all relevant faculty members.

... Trish and I are grateful for 1967. As was obvious, we felt very much at home.¹⁵⁴

154 Letter, John Lawrence to Fedele Fauri, 23/7/67. I congratulated him on his recent receipt of the Distinguished Service Award from the Council on Social Work Education.



David pulling Ruth in sled, Shadford Road, Ann Arbor, January 1967



Peter, David, Ruth – Burns Park School



Our home, 1508 Shadford Road, Ann Arbor, January-June, 1967



David, snow rabbit, Ruth, Peter – backyard, 1508 Shadford Road



David and Peter – Henry Ford Car Museum, Dearborn



University of Michigan Graduation, Michigan Stadium, 29 April 1967



Cohn and Lawrence families on a picnic



Camping in Summer – Smoky Mountains, June 1967



Stream in Smoky Mountains



Early pioneering homestead



Shower in a mountain stream



Peter in the stocks, Colonial Williamsburg



Millinery, Colonial Williamsburg



Rotunda, Jefferson's University of Virginia



Blue Ridge Mountains



Smithsonian Air and Space Museum, Washington DC



Peter, David, Ruth, & Trish - White House, Washington DC



Capitol Building, Washington



Jeffries and Lawrence families - Larchmont, New York



New York skyline, Staten Island Ferry



Brooklyn Bridge, New York



David, Trish, Guido Calabresi - Yale



Trish and our children, Anne & Guido Calabresi and their children - their farm near New Haven



Peter, Ruth, David - sailing ship, Mystic Seaport Museum, coastal life, New England



Ranger, Acadia National Park, Mount Desert Island, Maine



Ruth with orchid, Acadia National Park



Changing of the Guard with Regimental mascot, Quebec City, Canada



USA Pavilion



Habitat



Russian Pavilion



Stained Glass, Czechoslovakian Pavilion



Niagra Falls



Peter on bike, 1306 Olivia Avenue - our home August-December, 1967



David with school-mates from Burns Park School



Spencer Colliver outside U of M School of Social Work



Origins, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor



Plaque commemorating Kennedy's idea of Peace Corps, October 1960



Lakeside - Diane Wright and Jenny Caldwell



Football Stadium (100,001 spectators)



Lake Michigan Shore-line



Colours of autumn in Michigan



U of M Marching Band in action



Halloween - Peter (white gloves) and Ruth (pink dress)



1306 Olivia Avenue under snow



Bob Vinter (Associate Dean)



Fedele Fauri (Dean)



Phil and Mary Booth, with Ruth



Roger Lind



Ruth and Syd Bernard



Rosemary Sarri



Tom Powell and Nelson Cruikshank



John Riley and Phill Fellin



Mountains - train to San Francisco



Feather River Canyon



Alcatraz Island, San Francisco Bay



Fisherman's Wharf, San Francisco



Coast road, San Francisco to Los Angeles



Sally Gane's sister and Sally Gane - their garden overlooking the Pacific, Santa Barbara



Marion Stinson, Ruth, Peter, David, Trish – entrance, Disney Land



Disneyland Parade



Malcolm and Lorraine Stinson, Ruth, David, Trish, Peter, 2 other house guests, and Marion S – Stinson home, Pasadena



University of Southern California Float



Tournament of Roses, Pasadena



Rose Bowl final, USC v Indiana, January 1968



Floats the next morning



Golden Gate, San Francisco



Chusan at Vancouver, Canada



With Stan Kim's brother - Honolulu



Peter in crossing equator 'ceremony', Chusan



Dancing, Suva, Fiji

Index

A Cumulative Index for the autobiography is at the end of Volume 6 and is also available on-line.

A

Abbotsleigh Church of England School for Girls, 196, 201
Acheson, D., 328
Ackers family, 121–2
Adams, J., 265
Adams, M., 333, 334
Adams family, 190
American Society (Williams), 314
An American Dilemma: the Negro Problem and Modern Democracy (Myrdal), 326
Anderson, D., 59, 61, 73, 75, 78, 87–8, 117
Anderson, J., 64, 83, 101, 113, 158, 204
Anderson, Jean, 159
Anderson, R., 59, 117, 128
Apex Club, 215–18, 263
Archbishop Holgate's Grammar School, York, 196, 199, 201
Archdale, B., 201, 233
Association of Teachers in Schools of Social Work (ATSSW), 264
Atkinson, C., 18
Atkinson, Mr, 16, 18
Australia (Hancock), 58
Australian Association of Social Workers (AASW)
conferences
 'Social Work Education' (1957), 21–8
 'The Association and Social Work' (1961), 240–1
 federal council (1959, 1964–66), 165, 239–40
Australian Council of Churches, 256
Australian Council of Social Service (ACOSS)
 ICSW terminology project, 208–11

 'The Welfare of Ethnic Minorities' conference (1968), 339

The Australian Journal of Social Issues (ACOSS), 250–1

Australian National University (ANU), 48–50

B

Baker, A., 16
Baker, R., 149
Balgowlah Heights Public School, 192, 193, 199
Barker College, 196, 202–3
Bates, N., 138
Battle, B., 87, 98, 112, 226, 231, 232
Baxter, P., 235
Beckett, J., 89
Benn, S., 205, 212, 301, 313
Bennett, D., 9, 198
Bennett, E., 198
Bennett, I., 71
Bennett, J., 35
Bernard, S., 290, 296–7, 307, 308, 311, 329
Berry, Dean (father-in-law), 38, 60, 61, 73, 323
Berry, Margaret 'Margie' (Trish's aunt), 11, 77, 270
Berry, Mary (sister-in-law), 322–3
Bethune, D., 46, 88, 109, 134, 136, 138, 144, 145
Blackburn, D., 40
Blackburn, R., 266
Blake, N., 35, 120, 166
Bland, F. A., 68, 83, 95, 108, 117, 152
Blewett, N., 266

- Boase, T. S. R., 13, 14, 35, 78, 175, 176
 Boehm, W., 237, 238
 Booth, M., 71, 112, 231, 232, 321
 Booth, P., 290, 292, 296, 299–300, 304, 309, 315, 329
 Borenzweig family, 347
 Borrie, W. D. 'Mick', 30, 33, 50, 53–4, 55, 58, 60, 62, 82, 83, 87, 128, 180, 181
 Boulding, K., 328, 338
 Brager, B., 330
 Brennan, H., 231, 232
 Brennan, T., 113, 131–2, 134, 165, 171–2, 174, 178, 204, 211, 215, 216, 228, 229, 230, 231, 235, 250, 251, 287, 337, 338, 339, 362
 Brennan family, 231
 Brett, J., 102, 106, 108, 144
 Briggs, A., 164, 170
 Brown, C., 157
 Brown, C. 'Monty', 232
 Brown, D., 67
 Brown, E., 181–2
 Brown, L., 154
 Brown, M., 33, 58, 64–5, 66, 67, 70, 71, 82, 84, 85, 86–7, 99, 105, 112–13, 158, 165, 176, 235
 Brown, R., 29, 46, 136, 150, 154, 155–6, 204
 Buckley, H., 20
 Buckley, V., 74
 Bulling, J., 322, 323
 Bunday, C., 238
 Burniston, G., 19
 Burns, E., 283, 315, 335
 Burns Park School, Ann Arbor, 192–3, 290, 291
 Butlin, Mabel (aunt), 45
 Butlin, Rowland 'Unc' (uncle), 45
- C**
 Calabresi, G., 166, 168, 341
 Caldwell, J., 320–1
 Cameron, J., 187
 Cameron, N., 23, 98
 Cameron, R. E., 10, 162, 175
 Canberra, 47–8
 Canberra Social Workers' Group, 74–5
 Candau, M. G., 327
 Caplan, G., 331
 Cardno, J. A., 64, 103, 104, 112, 113
 Carr-Saunders, A., 53, 140, 163, 337
 Cass, B., 338
The Challenge: Is the Church Obsolete? An Australian response to the challenge of modern society (Southall), 256
- Chambers, R., 195, 198, 199
 Cheeseman, Miss, 19, 47
Chusan, SS, 348–9
 Ciopak family, 190
 Clark, B., 139
 Clark, C. M. H., 58
 Clark, H., 139
 Clark, M., 49, 52, 62, 82, 83
 Classen, J., 119
 Clayton, H., 333, 335, 336, 337
 Cleary, R., 321, 322
 Cleland, L., 35
 Cleland, S., 35
 Cliffe, J., 132
 Cockcroft, J., 181
 Coffman, Dr, 115, 116
 Coghlan, T. A., 58
 Cohen, H., 345
 Cohen, N., 282–3, 297, 298, 302
 Cohen, W., 294, 300, 324, 325, 326, 331, 350
 Colliver, H., 316, 317, 318, 319, 320
 Colliver, S., 316–20
 Committee for Post-graduate Study in Social Work, 250, 251
Complex Organisations (Etzioni), 218
 Conlon, A., 113
 Connell, Prof., 194, 233
 Coombe, R. J., 153
 Cooper, J., 161
 Coyle, G., 24fn, 83, 90, 98
 Cranmore, M., 291
 Crawford, R. M., 46, 58, 88, 133, 137, 145, 172fn
 Creswell, J., 100
 Creswell family, 93, 117
 Crisp, K., 24, 98, 143, 155
 Croxton family, 345
 Cruikshank, N., 315–16
 Cuban Missile Crisis (1962), 191–2
 Cuddihy, G., 20
 Cummins, Miss, 106
 Cuthbert, G., 101, 103, 108, 109
 Cuthbertson, G., 20
- D**
 Dakin, Prof., 332
 Danby, W., 104–5
 Davidson, E., 24, 70–1, 99, 103
 Davies, A. F., 336
 Davies, D., 16
 Davies, S., 95, 103
 Davis, D., 104
 Davoren, J., 229, 230
 Dawe, K., 23

- Dawson, Prof., 109
 'The Development of Professional Social Work in Australia' (Lawrence), 179–80
 Dick, P., 39, 129
 Dickinson, C. J., 265
Directory of Social Agencies in South Australia (SACOSS), 20
 Dixon, O., 144
 Dobson, H., 59, 96, 111
 Dobzhansky, T., 327
 Doig, A., 265
 Doig, R., 198, 200
 Donnison, D., 229, 261, 283, 301, 356
 Donohue, W., 331
 Dow, B., 46
 Downing, R. J., 140
 Drummond, D., 68, 101, 108, 110
 Dumpson, J., 324, 326
 Duncan, W. G. K., 128, 151–2, 157, 158
 Dunk, W., 130
- E**
 Eckhart, Miss, 157
 economic rationalism, 253
 Edgeloe, Mr, 150
 Edwards, A., 15, 355
 Einspinner, P., 239
 Elkin, Prof., 84, 112, 158
 Emery, K., 82
 England, S., 95–6
The Equipment of the Social Worker (Macadam), 128
 Esch, F., 232
 Espy, L., 333, 334
Establishing Medical Social Work in Victoria (O'Brien and Turner), 181
 Evans, B., 153, 160
 Evatt, C., 114
 Evers, M., 74, 75, 78, 89, 90, 97, 118, 131
 Expo 67, Montreal, 343–4
- F**
 Family Welfare Bureau, Adelaide, 14–15
 Fanshel, D., 324
 Fauri, F., 286, 287–8, 289, 294, 296, 312, 315, 325, 363
 Feltham, I., 119
 Feltham, J., 35
 Ferguson, F., 68, 111, 130, 150
 Fidler, Miss, 101, 107, 115
 Finlayson, C., 109
 Firth, R., 327
 Fitzpatrick, A. 'Fitzie', 95, 101, 103, 107–8, 111–12, 115–17, 146, 152, 157, 169
 Fitzpatrick, B., 58
 Foehrenbach, A. J., 284, 285, 286
 Forbes, J., 11, 12
Formal Organisations: a Comparative Approach (Blau and Scott), 218
 Forsyth, G., 104
 Forsyth, M., 14, 15, 36, 39
The Foundations of Social Casework (Brennan and Parker eds.), 235–6
 Fox, G., 195
 Fraser, A., 89
 French, D., 59, 320
 Freud, C., 311, 312
 Friedlander, W., 155, 301
 Fullerton, A., 9, 39
- G**
 Galbraith, J. K., 350, 353, 359
 Gardiner, P., 120
 Gary, L. E., 309
 Gates, R., 229
 Gaunt, R., 289, 346
 Geake, T., 67, 71, 82
 'A General Consideration of Anti-Poverty Policy and the Community Organization Model', 303–4
 Gibb, Prof., 92
 Gibbons, C., 188
 Gibson, B., 46, 88, 135–6, 158
 Gilbert, R., 76
 Giles, O., 239
 Ginsberg, Prof., 157
 Glass, D., 53–4
 Glasser, P., 308, 329
 Glastonbury, A., 20
 Gollan, R. A. 'Bob', 33, 50, 51–2, 57–8, 62, 72, 79, 82, 87, 118, 128, 147, 150, 153, 163, 164, 165, 171, 175, 176, 178, 179
 Gooch, Mrs, 192
 Good, H., 14, 15fn
 Goodman, R. D., 50
 Gordon, Anne (née Berry) (sister-in-law), 11, 77, 271, 272
 Gordon, C., 10, 14, 175
 testimonial, RJL, 175–6
 Gordon, Murray (brother-in-law), 9, 38, 39, 45, 271–2
 Gosbell family, 187, 190
 Govan, E. 'Betty', 64, 65, 68, 87, 99, 101, 103, 107, 108, 112, 114, 116, 145, 146, 158, 282, 283
 Grainger, K., 130
 Gray, E., 36, 121

Gray, K., 233
 'The Great Society: Rhetoric or Reality?'
 (Lawrence), 263, 339, 349–53
 The Great Society' program, 293, 332
 Greet, J., 167
 Greet, R., 59, 75, 121, 167
 Grutzner, M., 131, 227, 231, 232, 321–2
 Gunnew, K., 163

H

Halliwell, L., 334, 336
 Halse Rogers, H., 67–8, 101, 111–12
 Hamilton, L. B., 263, 355
 Hamilton, M., 109
 Hamilton-Smith, E., 238, 239
 Hammer, G., 99, 233
 Hammitt, B., 290
 Hammitt, Prof., 290, 291
 Hancock, W. K., 30, 33, 49, 51, 58, 62, 79,
 82, 90, 91, 118, 128, 164
 Hardy, J., 190
 Harris, C., 159
 Harris, J., 167
 Hartshorn, A., 138
 'Has Australian Social Work a Critical
 Tradition?' (Lawrence), 243–5
 Hauser, R., 113
 Hawke, R. 'Bob', 18
 Hay, L., 136, 138–9
 Hayek, F., 54
 Hayes, F., 69, 70, 96, 109, 227, 239
 Hayman, D., 59, 75
 Hayman, N., 61
 Head, B. and J., 72
Health Care Choices and the Public Purse
 (Sax), 253
 Hearn, W., 74, 85, 106
 Hector, Mrs, 113
 Heffron, R. J., 114
 Henningham, P., 104
 Hicks, R. H., 72, 83, 110, 114, 131
 Hitchcock, J., 331, 332, 339
 Hoban, R., 23, 24, 46, 82, 84, 88, 105, 106,
 109, 111, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 141,
 143, 144, 145, 155–6, 158, 159, 172, 178
 Hobbouse, Prof., 157
 Hodge, I., 109
 Hoey, J., 104, 114
 Hoffman, P., 328
 Hopton, J., 137, 149
 Horne, S., 19
 Horsburgh, M., 338
 Houston, J., 59
 Houston, M., 47

Howard, D., 52
 Howard, J., 52
 Hudson, M., 12
 Hudson, W., 76
 Hudson, Wilf, 12, 34, 39
 Huggett, D., 68
 Hutchinson family, 190
 Huxley, L., 170
 Hyde, A., 46, 152
 Hyde, E., 97, 130
 Hyslop, J., 46, 88, 102, 108, 109, 116, 131,
 134, 135, 144–5, 147, 157, 159, 182

I

Industrial Society and Social Welfare
 (Wilensky and Lebeaux), 310
 International Council of Social Welfare
 (ICSW)
 ACOSS liaison, 333–4
 terminology project, ACOSS/RJL
 contribution, 208–11

J

James, H., 14, 82, 109, 150, 153, 154–5, 158,
 161
 Jefferson, Prof., 158
 Jeffries, E., 119, 168, 339–40
 Jeffries, G., 36, 119, 339–40
 Jensen, P., 204
 Jewett, P., 131, 161, 162
 Johnson, A., 348
 Johnson, L. B., 293, 294, 325, 331, 349
 Jones, T., 10, 190, 194

K

Kark, B., 165
 Karmel, P., 158, 269
 Keary, M., 24
 Kellock, A., 129
 Kelly, E., 23
 Kendall, K., 281, 284, 296
 Kennedy, M., 15
 Kent, B., 129, 161, 162
 Kewley, T., 19, 60, 62, 68, 82, 83, 227
 Kim, S., 298, 349
 Kincaid-Smith, P., 267
 Kister, J., 289–90
 Knapp, Mrs, 289–90
 Kneeshaw, P., 272–3

L

- Langshaw, B., 72, 74, 75, 227, 239
 Langshaw, V., 72, 74, 75
 Laski, H., 51, 157
 Laurie, B., 73, 85, 98, 187
 Laurie, D., 37, 148
 Laurie, J., 74
 Laurie, J. B., 37, 98, 148
 Laurie, R., 73, 74, 339, 341
 Lawrence, Andrew (nephew), 267
 Lawrence, Christopher (nephew), 127, 267
 Lawrence, David (son), 34, 37, 127, 193,
 194–5, 195–6, 198
 Lawrence, James 'Jim' (brother), 9, 39, 127,
 205, 270
 career, 39, 74, 165–6, 264–9
 relationship with RJL, 269
 Lawrence, John
 AASW
 conference organisation (1969), 264
 journal articles, 242–3
 membership records, advice (1959),
 151–2
 program priorities meeting (1959),
 165
 publishing article collections (1962–
 69), 245–50
 registration report, 238
 social work practice, present and
 future, paper (1968), 360–2
 AASW, NSW
 committee work (1961–66), 238, 239
 conference papers (1961–65), 240–5
 federal council delegate (1964–66),
 238, 240
 AASW, SA, secretary (1957), 20–1, 40
 ACOSS
 Australian social policy handbook
 proposal, 336–8
 representative to ICSW (1967), 333–4
 responsibility for ethnic welfare, paper
 (1968), 243–5, 354–5
 Adelaide (1956–58)
 career beginnings, 12–14
 Commonwealth Department of Social
 Security, 15–20
 correspondence, 35–8, 47
 Family Welfare Bureau, 14–15
 job opportunities, 29, 30
 social contacts, 39–40
 advocacy, Manly Council social work
 service (1968), 263
 ATSSW, secretary/treasurer (1967–68),
 264
 Australian Universities Sports
 Association Council, 262
 Canberra, PhD research period (1958–
 61)
 arrival via Melbourne, 45, 47–8
 Bega Flats, Reid, 56
 correspondence, 47, 119–22, 166
 family life, 56–7, 60–1, 77–8, 127
 Forrest Flats, Forrest, 160–1, 169–70
 job searching, 171–5
 Oxford Society dinner (1959), 170
 Snowy Mountains, 76–7
 social life, 59, 61–2, 72–4, 75, 78, 87–8,
 90, 106, 118, 127–8, 130, 161–2
 Melbourne trip, 147–9
 Social Workers' Group, 74–5
 sport, 88–9
 children
 births, 34, 168–9, 191
 education, 192–8, 199–203
 sailing, 198
 Commonwealth Department of Social
 Security, Central Administration,
 Melbourne, 18–19
 conference and seminar addresses and
 papers
 'Citizenship and Community Service'
 (1966), 263
 'The Great Society: Rhetoric or
 Reality?' (1968), 263, 339, 349–53
 'Has Australian Social Work a Critical
 Tradition?' (1963), 243–5
 local welfare organisation (1962),
 242–3
 morality of social work (1961), 240–1
 responsibility for ethnic welfare
 (1968), 243–5, 354–5
 'Satisfying the Needs of Old People in
 Australia' (1965), 258–62
 'Social Norms and Social Change',
 comment (1965), 241–2
 'social planning', University of Toronto
 (1967), 331–3
 social work in CDSS (1968), 263,
 355–60
 social work practice, present and future
 (1968), 360–2
 social workers, employment-
 recruitment (1962), 239
 'Welfare Services and the Local
 Community' (1966), 252
 'Youth looks at age' (1964), 253–6
 Council of Social Service of New South
 Wales, 251–2
 Family Welfare Bureau, Adelaide, 14–15

- honeymoon, 11
 ICSW, terminology project, 208–11
 music, organ, 272–3
 Old People's Welfare Council of NSW, 253
 PhD research (ANU) (1958–61)
 Adelaide research trip, 150–60
 Canberra-based research contacts, 164
 Melbourne research trip, 132–47
 PhD supervisors, 50–6, 60, 165
 professionals contacted for research, 45–7, 63–72, 84–5, 89, 94–117, 128–9, 130–1
 reading, 58–9, 128, 163
 research description, 170–1
 research difficulties, 47
 research scholarship, 29–34, 50
 Sydney research trips, 93–117, 130–2
 thesis completion, 178–82
 thesis work, 57–9, 62–4, 78–87, 88, 90–3, 117–18, 163–4, 165
 Presbyterian Church, Social Services Department, 262
 publications
 'A Social Transaction Model for the Analysis of Social Welfare' (1968), 263, 308–9
 'Has Australian Social Work a Critical Tradition?' (1963), 243–5
 trends in Australian social welfare (1965), 256–8
 references and testimonials, 32, 175–6
 residences
 Bega Flats, Reid, 56
 Castella Street, East Ivanhoe, 132–3
 Dobroyd Road, Balgowlah Heights, 187–91
 East Terrace, Blackwood, 12, 150
 Forrest Flats, Forrest, 160–1, 169–70
 McDonald Street, Harbord, 93–4
 Olivia Avenue, Ann Arbor, 290–1
 Shadford Road, Ann Arbor, 289–90, 292–3
 social network, 34–5, 38
 social work salaries classification (1959), 129–30
 speaking engagements
 NSW Hospitals Commission and The Nurses' Registration Board (1968), 263
 Outward Bound (1965), 262
 Steelworks, Newcastle (1965), 263
 travel
 United States, 339–44, 347–8
 US to Australia (1967), 348–9
 University of Michigan, sabbatical (1967)
 Ann Arbor homes, 288–91, 292–3
 children's school, 192–3, 290, 291
 colleagues, 304–5, 315–16, 344–5
 conferences, 324–9
 correspondence, 334–5
 curriculum revision, 310–11
 ethics and social philosophy study group, 311–15
 examinations committee, 309–10
 faculty research meetings, 329–30
 farewells, 345–6
 Fulbright Foundation, report, 346
 health insurance, 291–2
 meetings, 331
 organising sabbatical, 286–8
 public lectures, 330–1
 religious activities, 345
 research project, 335–8
 teaching, 296–304, 305–8
 teaching paper, 308–9
 travel, 339–44
 visitors, 319–23
 University of Sydney
 application, lectureship, 170–1, 176, 177–8
 sabbatical year (1967), 281–6 see also University of Michigan
 senior lecturer promotion (1967), 264
 social administration lectureship (1961–66, 1968), 203–4, 338
 Apex Project, 215–18
 colleagues, 231–5, 238
 examining and essay topics, 218–26
 newspaper project, 213–15
 organisation theory project, 218
 other teaching, 229–31
 role, 204–5
 Social Theory 11, 211, 212–13, 226–9
 Social Theory and Social Policy, 211–12
 student tribute to RJL, 206–8
 subject terrain, 208–11
 wedding, 9–11
 Wilga Fleming Memorial prize, 243
 work history 1956–57, 13
 Lawrence, Lucy (née Butlin) (mother), 127
 Lawrence, Margaret (Southwood) (sister), 38, 39, 60–1, 118, 127, 270
 career, 269
 Lawrence, Patricia 'Trish' (née Berry) (wife), 2
 births, 34, 168–9, 191
 honeymoon, 11

wedding, 9–11
 Lawrence, Peter (son), 168, 192–3, 196, 199–200
 Lawrence, Richard (nephew), 127, 267
 Lawrence, Robert (father), 127
 Lawrence, Ruth (daughter), 191, 192, 196, 198, 201–3
 Lawrence, Sheila (née Hamilton) (sister-in-law), 2 127, 265, 266
 Lean, S., 14–15
 Lebeaux, C., 237, 301, 310, 352
 Lee, P., 116
 Lewis, J., 21, 263
 Lind, R., 293, 296, 299, 300, 301, 302, 304–5, 309, 346
 Lindblom, 352
 Lindell, Dr, 141
 Linford, A., 283
 Livingstone, A., 133, 137, 138, 146
 Loch, C., 140
 Loquet, C., 239
 Love, J., 119, 131, 168, 340
 Lovell, P., 16, 95, 107, 108, 111, 114, 115
 Lovell, T., 146
 Lovering, J., 169
 Lovibond, S., 137–8, 151, 152
 Lugton, Mrs, 201
 Lupton, J., 68–75, 96, 100, 102, 105, 109, 153, 232
 Lyle, J., 180
 Lyle, V., 180, 190

M

Macadam, E., 58, 128
 MacDonald, B., 9, 37
 Macintyre, A., 102, 106, 107, 108, 109, 144
 Macintyre, S., 51, 52
 Mackay, H., 189
 MacKenzie, G., 323
 MacKenzie, J., 244
 MacKenzie, N., 164–5, 170
 Maclaine, A., 227
 MacLennan, J., 14, 20, 82, 109, 151, 153–4, 158
 Macmillan, D., 97
 Maddison, D., 85, 266, 267
 Male, Dr, 16
 Mangerson, P., 110
 Marks, Miss, 106
 Marris, P., 352
 Marsh, D., 229, 301, 337
 Massey, T. J., 156, 157
 Mathew, A. (née Player), 21, 23, 29, 31, 45, 88, 108, 110, 137, 144–6, 158, 316
 Mathew, H., 30, 31, 45–6, 82, 88, 136, 137, 138
 Matsdorf, H., 231
 Matsdorf, W. 'Bill', 239
 Mayo, H., 40, 109
 McBriar, L., 134
 McCaskill, T. J., 202, 203
 McCredie, H., 262
 McCredie, K., 201
 McFadyen, H., 66, 84, 104
 McGuire, E., 47
 McKell, W., 114
 McKosker, Father, 63
 McLelland, M., 94, 99–106, 112, 151, 171, 188, 228, 231, 232, 235, 251, 253, 264, 362
 McLeod, A. 'Whimpy', 11, 148
 McMahan, J. T., 65
 McPherson, M., 20
 Meaney, N., 339
 Mendelsohn, R., 19, 58, 60, 82
 Mengerson, P., 158
 Menzies, R., 170
 Merton, R., 242
 Meyer, H., 295–6, 309, 318, 320
 Milgram, S., 330
 Mills, M., 230, 238
 Mitchell, W., 95, 153, 157
 Moffit, C., 65
 Moore, D., 162
 'The Morality of Social Policy' (Lawrence), 302–3
 Morgan, G., 89
 Morris, J. N., 144
 Munz, R., 330
 Murphy, B., 162
 Murphy, C. G., 155
 Murphy, D., 162
 Murphy, Miss, 111
 Muscio, Mrs, 101
 Myles, G., 170
 Myrdal, G., 326, 327, 350, 352

N

Nairn, B., 86
 National Population Inquiry, (Borrie Report) (1970–78), 53
 Neenan, W., 331
 Neutze, M., 169
 Newall, P., 233
 Nicholls, R., 74, 85, 94, 104, 149
 Nolan, L., 227, 231, 232
Norma Parker's Record of Service (Lawrence), 66, 235
 Norton, P., 23, 82, 153, 159–60

O

- O'Brien, L., 45, 180
 Oeser, Prof., 133
 O'Farrell, D., 63
 O'Farrell, P., 62–3, 150
 Ogilvie, K., 23, 31, 60, 64, 65, 67, 69, 82,
 87, 94, 95, 96, 97, 99, 100, 101, 103, 105,
 107–9, 109–11, 112, 113, 131, 136, 146,
 157, 158, 173, 231, 232, 362
 monograph, RJL, 233–4
On the Social Frontier of Medicine (Cannon),
 128
 O'Neil, B., 99, 113
 Orton, John, 35, 94, 119
 Orton, Joyce, 94, 119

P

- Paolini, J., 231
 Parham, P., 119
 Parker, B., 82, 83, 87, 128, 163, 164, 165, 178
 Parker, N., 60, 64, 65–8, 70, 71, 72, 82, 84,
 85, 86, 87, 93–4, 103, 104, 105, 110, 112,
 114–15, 131, 144, 146, 157, 165, 173, 231,
 232, 233, 234–5, 250, 264, 265, 283, 287,
 362
 advice to RJL, 174–5
 observations, 94–7, 100–2
 Parker, R. S. 'Bob', 50, 55–6, 82, 83, 87, 128,
 163, 164, 165, 178
 Partridge, Prof., 82, 84, 101, 181
 Paterson, I., 195
 Paton, Prof., 129
 Payne, B., 239
 Payne, J., 109
 Pearce, D., 163
 Peart, L., 74, 85, 104
 Pennny, Dr, 153
 Pentony, P., 92
 Perkins, C., 204
 Perrins, P., 15, 39, 160
 Peters, R. S., 205, 206, 212, 301, 313
 Peyser, D., 138, 236
 Piaget, J., 328
 Pillinger, M., 71
 Pilnick, S., 329
 Pines, S., 95, 153, 156
 Pins, A., 324, 325
 Player, A., 21, 23, 29, 31, 45, 88, 108, 110,
 137, 144–6, 158, 316
 Popper, K., 54
 Porter, B., 11, 167
 Portus, G. V. 'Jerry', 110
 Powell, J. and T., 345
 Prest, D., 195

- Prest family, 195
 Prince, B., 158
 Prince, M., 231, 283
 Professional Officers Association (POA),
 129
Professional Social Work in Australia
 (Lawrence), 181

Q

- Queen Anne Grammar School, York, 196,
 201

R

- Rabinoff, G., 334
 Ramsay, A., 189
 Ramsay, M., 160
 Raymer, V., 31, 163
Re-thinking Social Case Work (Reynold), 83
 Rees, H., 95, 102, 103, 104, 106, 107, 108,
 110, 144, 146–7, 156, 157, 332
 Reeves, P., 169–70
 Rein, M., 352
 Reischauer, E., 328
 Remmy, P., 120
 Rennison, A., 105, 106, 133, 137
 Ringwood, P., 150
 Roberson, J., 146
 Roberts, Father Luke, 20, 158
 Roberts, G., 162–3
 Robertson, Jean, 88, 114, 131, 135, 144, 145,
 158
 Robertson, John, 63
 Robinson, J., 63, 78, 84
 Ross, A., 324, 325
 Rothman, J., 315, 320
 Rowe, A. P., 157, 158
 Rowe, F. H., 17, 18, 19, 82, 110, 134, 143,
 155
 Rubin, C., 335
 Russell, Dr, 34
 Russell, J., 239
 Ryle, G., 40

S

- Saint, E., 96
 Salter, H., 20
 Salter, V., 160
 Sambell, G., 140, 141, 143
 Samuel, H., 162
 Samuelson, P., 327
 Sandford, P. (née Pieterek), 14, 15fn, 20
 Sarri, R., 286, 315, 317, 318, 319, 320, 346

- Sarri, Rom, 346
 'Satisfying the Needs of Old People in Australia' (Lawrence), 258–62
 Sawyer, G., 89
 Sax, S., 227, 252–3
 Schonell, F., 31
 Schorr, A., 330
 Schumpeter, J., 327
 Scott, D., 140, 141fn, 256
 Seale family, 190
 Seymour, Mrs, 201
 Shackwell, Prof., 93, 94
 Sharman, G., 241
 Sharp, G., 133, 134, 136, 137–8, 146
 Shaver, S., 251
 Shaw, A. G. L., 58
 Shaw, J., 159, 160
 Shepherdson, Miss, 19
 Shipp, D., 98
 Shore School, SCEGS, 194, 195, 196–7, 198, 199, 200
 Silvester, J., 37–8
 Singer, G., 233
 Singha, K., 120
 Smart, J., 149, 158
 Smith, A., 288
 Smith, B. A., 180
 Smith, G., 45, 88, 102, 134, 135, 140, 145
 Smith, H., 31, 138
 Smith, K., 69
Social Case-Work in Great Britain (Morris), 59
Social Insecurity: The Politics of Welfare (Steiner), 329
 social policy and economic rationalism, 253
Social Principles and the Democratic State (Benn and Peters), 205
Social Science in the Professional Education of Social Workers (Coyle), 83, 90
Social Security in the British Commonwealth: Great Britain, Canada, Australia, New Zealand (Mendelsohn), 19
Social Services Journal, 17
 social work, histories, 181–2
Social Work and Social Problems (Cohen), 297, 302
Social Work Encyclopedia, 297
 social workers, salary classification (1959), 129–30
 'A Social Transaction Model for the Analysis of Social Welfare' (Lawrence), 263, 308–9
 Sonley, G., 188, 189
 Southwood, Catherine (niece), 269
 Southwood, Dean (brother-in-law), 39, 150, 269, 270
 Southwood, Debbie, 39, 127, 167
 Southwood, Dick, 39, 127, 167
 Southwood, Jennifer (niece), 269
 Spann, R., 19, 31, 33, 34, 69, 99
 Sprague, G., 215, 216
 St Peter's College, 193–4
 Stacey, B., 20
 Stanton, Miss, 20
 Starke Murray, D., 330–1
 Stein, H., 282, 284, 285–6
 Stewart, M., 153, 157, 158
 Stoneman, E., 65
 Stout, A. K., 68, 101, 112–13, 119, 145, 158
 Stout, D., 36, 119
A Strife of Interests (Sax), 253
 Strong, A., 157
 Strong, C. S., 203
 Sumner, D., 135, 359
 Sutcliffe, Beatrice (Aunt Trice), 56
 Sutcliffe, George, 56–7, 61, 83, 106, 129, 130, 134
 Sutcliffe family, 56
 Sutton, H., 107, 111
 Suttor, T., 63, 79
 Swanson, D. C., 46, 69, 70, 109, 112
 Sydney Grammar School, 194–5
 Szaz, T., 330
- T**
 Tankard, P., 239
 Tappan, P., 85, 142, 156
 Taylor, L., 17–18, 19, 24, 40, 46, 47, 59, 82, 96, 98, 100, 102, 114, 130, 131, 134, 135, 137, 139, 143, 146, 155, 159, 253
 Telfer, A., 101, 107, 146
 Telfer, P., 101, 103
 Terrell, D., 118
Theory and Practice of Social Case Work (Hamilton), 128
 Thomas, B., 139–40
 Thomas, E., 344–5
 Thomas, Mr, 72
 Thomas, Prof., 295
 Thomas, V., 344
 Thompson, Mrs, 22
 Throssell, H., 251
 Thwaites, H., 45, 145, 149
 Thwaites, J., 45, 75, 149
 Thwaites, R., 45
 Tierney, L., 29, 140–1, 145, 146, 287, 288, 316, 318, 334–5
 Tilley, Prof., 157
A Time to Speak – On Human Values and Social Research (Kelman), 314

- Timms, D. W. G., 339
 Tite, K., 12, 13–14, 32, 35, 78, 119, 176
 Titmuss, R., 82, 90–1, 147, 164, 173, 180, 181, 229, 236, 301, 350
 Towle, C., 20, 129
Tradition and Change: Hospital Social Work in NSW (Browne), 181–2
 Travers, B. H., 194
 Travers, T., 20
 Tregenza, Jean, 57, 61
 Tregenza, John, 57, 82, 150
 Trethowan, Prof., 119, 132
 Tritton, N. C., 19–20
 Turner, C., 136, 142–3, 181
 Turner, M., 15
- U**
 University of Michigan
 history, 293
 School of Social Work, 284, 291, 293–6, 317, 348, 363
 University of Sydney
 Department of Social Work, 177, 204, 239
 history, 204
 University of Toronto
 Department of Urban and Regional Planning, 331
 School of Social Work, 282, 317, 332
 Urquhart, M., 46, 138, 143–4, 155
- V**
 Vaile, G., 101, 116
 Vasey, W., 307
 Vincent, R., 61, 96
 Vining, S., 79, 82
 Vinson, T., 70, 338
 Vinter, R. ‘Bob’, 287, 288, 295, 299, 300, 311, 314, 315, 319, 320
 Vollugi family, 92–3
- W**
 Wall, G. E. ‘Tim’, 128, 268–9
 Wall, J., 127
 Wall family, 64, 84, 85, 90, 127, 268
 Ward, Elizabeth ‘Beth’, 72, 105, 112, 130, 132, 164–5, 233, 292
 Ward, J., 51
 Warrabee Public School, 195, 196, 199, 201
 Warren, C., 56, 77
 Warren, E., 106–7
 Warringah School, 194
 Washington University
 School of Social Work, 307
 Webb, E., 150
 Webb, L., 55, 58, 82, 84, 87
 Wedderburn, D., 331
 Weldon, T. D. ‘Harry’, 12, 13, 14, 32, 35, 78, 120, 175, 176, 223
 reference, RJL, 32
 ‘Welfare Services and the Local Community’ (Lawrence), 252
 Wells, A., 37
 Wells, E. (née Jacobs), 37
 Western, J., 137
 Wettenhall, R., 169, 170
 Wheaton, A., 12, 14, 18, 23, 69, 94, 95, 98, 106, 109, 110, 113, 116, 145–6, 152, 153, 156–9
 ‘last hurrah’, AASW conference, 1957, 25–8
 White, R., 19
 Wilensky, H., 237, 301, 310, 352
 Wilkes, P., 233
 Williamson, D. M. ‘Greg’, 14, 16
 Wilson, J., 39, 167, 168
 Wilson, L., 9, 39, 167–8
 Winter, E., 72, 136–7
 Wittman, M., 324
 Wojtila, K., 54
Women in Australia (MacKenzie), 164
 Wood, C. T., 110, 114
 Woodroffe, K., 128–9
 Woods, M. T., 103, 109
 Worswick, D., 12, 14, 34, 176
 Wright, D., 320–1
 Wright, H., 348
 Wryell, M., 20, 263, 336, 355
- Y**
 ‘Youth looks at age’ (Lawrence), 253–6
- Z**
 Zald, M., 301, 330
 Zubrzycki, G., 50, 54–5, 164, 165, 178, 179, 181

Returned from Oxford to Adelaide in 1956, the author and Patricia Berry were married, and John worked in the social work field – briefly in a family welfare agency, and then in the social work section of the Commonwealth Department of Social Services. Rapid national experience came as organising secretary of a conference of the Australian Association of Social Workers. A PhD scholarship at the embryonic Australian National University in 1958 enabled him to research the history of professional social work in Australia. In 1961, he was appointed to Australia's first academic appointment in social policy – at the University of Sydney. A sabbatical year in 1967 at the University of Michigan in the USA, was memorable for all of the family. It was at the time of race riots, the Vietnam War, the 'war on poverty', and student protests. A summer tour included Expo '67 in Montreal. After 12 professionally productive years, living in Adelaide, Canberra, and Sydney, the University of New South Wales appointed him in 1968 to the first chair of social work in the country.



John Lawrence has taught social policy for thirty years, taking a special interest in the ethical justification of policy and professional intervention. He is a graduate of the Universities of Adelaide and Oxford, and the Australian National University. Australia's first Professor of Social Work, he headed the School of Social Work at the University of New South Wales for fourteen years, chaired the University's Faculty of Professional Studies, was a member of the University Council, and was directly involved in the development of its Social Policy Research Centre, a national centre directly funded by the Australian Government. A former federal president and life member of the Australian Association of Social Workers, he served on its National Ethics Committee. For eight years, he was an elected member of the Executive Board of the International Association of Schools of Social Work. He has had membership of the governing bodies of community agencies, including a vice-presidency of ACOSS (Australian Council of Social Service). He is a firm advocate of international experience, and has spent almost seven years away from his native Australia, studying, researching, teaching and acting as a consultant in England, the United States, Canada, Thailand and Sweden. This has been assisted by various awards – a Rhodes Scholarship, Fulbright senior awards, the Moses Distinguished Professorship at Hunter College in New York, and a Canadian Commonwealth Fellowship – and university study leave and exchange arrangements. He is a member of the Order of Australia.